





# Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.

CORNELL UNIVERSITY LIBRARY



3 1924 060 183 385







# HEBREW SYNTAX





Introductory Hebrew Grammar

HEBREW SYNTAX

BY

REV. A. B. DAVIDSON, LL.D., D.D.

LATE PROFESSOR OF HEBREW AND OLD TESTAMENT EXEGESIS  
NEW COLLEGE, EDINBURGH

*THIRD EDITION*

EDINBURGH

T. & T. CLARK, 38 GEORGE STREET

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY  
MORRISON AND GIBB LIMITED  
FOR  
T. & T. CLARK, EDINBURGH  
NEW YORK: CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

FIRST EDITION . . . . . 1894  
SECOND EDITION . . . . . 1896  
THIRD EDITION . . . . . 1901  
*Latest Impression* . . . . . 1958

## PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION



THE need after a comparatively short time for a new Edition of this *Syntax* encourages the belief that the book is being found serviceable by students and teachers. In the present Edition a few changes have been introduced into the body of the book, and some errors in the Index of passages have been corrected.

The main principles of Syntax are printed in larger type, and the less common, poetical or anomalous, usages thrown into the form of notes. The illustrative examples, at least the earlier ones in each case, have been taken as much as possible from the classical prose, but references have been multiplied, partly in order that the principle illustrated may be seen in various connexions, and partly under the impression that the references might be useful in forming exercises for Prose Composition ; and the

purposes of composition have been had in view in the form given to a number of the sections.

Several points in Syntax are still involved in some obscurity, such as the use of the Imperfect, and its interchange with other tenses, especially in poetry; and the use of the Jussive, particularly in later writings. What has been said on these points, if it do nothing more, will make intelligible the state of the question regarding them. For fuller details Canon Driver's special work on the *Tenses* should be consulted.

From the assumption, perhaps, that the Predicate is the principal element in the sentence, Arabic Grammars usually begin Syntax with the Verb, and this order has been followed in some recent Hebrew Grammars. It may be disputed which order is the more logical in analysing the sentence. The order here followed, Pronoun, Noun, Verb, and Sentence, was adopted partly for the sake of simplicity, and partly to make the book run somewhat parallel to the *Introductory Grammar*, in the hope that the two might occasionally be read simultaneously. In order to avoid repetition, treatment of Infinitive and Participle, which have both a nominal and verbal character, was postponed till the sections

on the Government of the Verb had been completed.

I am under great obligations to Mr. Charles Hutchison, M.A., formerly Hebrew Tutor, New College, Edinburgh, who read over the proofs of the first edition, and to several students and reviewers who have made useful suggestions.

EDINBURGH, *February 1896.*



# TABLE OF CONTENTS



	PAGE
<b>SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN</b> . . . . .	1
Personal Pronoun . . . . .	1
Demonstrative Pronoun . . . . .	3
Interrogative Pronoun . . . . .	6
Relative Pronoun . . . . .	8
Other Pronominal Expressions . . . . .	12
<b>SYNTAX OF THE NOUN</b> . . . . .	15
Gender . . . . .	15
Number . . . . .	17
Case . . . . .	20
Determination. The Article . . . . .	22
The Genitive. Construct . . . . .	30
Nominal Apposition . . . . .	39
The Adjective . . . . .	44
The Adjective. Comparison . . . . .	47
The Numerals . . . . .	50
<b>SYNTAX OF THE VERB</b> . . . . .	58
The Perfect . . . . .	58
The Imperfect . . . . .	64
Imperfect with Strong Vav . . . . .	70
Perfect with Strong Vav . . . . .	78
Perf. and Impf. with Light Vav . . . . .	84
The Moods . . . . .	86
The Moods with Light Vav . . . . .	90
<b>GOVERNMENT OF THE VERB. THE ACCUSATIVE</b> . . . . .	95
Absolute Object . . . . .	96
Free Subordination of Words in Acc. . . . .	97
Accusative of Direct Object . . . . .	102
Verbs with two Acc. of the Obj. . . . .	107

	PAGE
Construction of the Passive . . . . .	112
Subordination of one Verb to another . . . . .	113
Infinitive Absolute . . . . .	116
Infinitive Construct . . . . .	123
The Participle . . . . .	130
Subordination by Prepositions . . . . .	138
<b>SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE</b> . . . . .	<b>144</b>
The Sentence itself . . . . .	144
Nominal Sentence . . . . .	145
Verbal Sentence . . . . .	146
Compound Sentence . . . . .	148
Expression of Subject . . . . .	151
Complement of Verbal Sentence . . . . .	155
Agreement of Subj. and Pred. . . . .	156
<b>PARTICULAR KINDS OF SENTENCE</b> . . . . .	<b>162</b>
Interjectional Sentence . . . . .	162
Affirmative Sentence . . . . .	164
Interrogative Sentence . . . . .	166
Negative Sentence . . . . .	171
Conditional Sentence . . . . .	175
Optative Sentence . . . . .	182
Conjunctive Sentence . . . . .	184
Circumstantial Claus. . . . .	185
Relative Sentence . . . . .	190
Temporal Sentence . . . . .	193
Subject and Object Sentence . . . . .	196
Causal Sentence . . . . .	198
Final Sentence . . . . .	199
Consequential Sentence . . . . .	200
Comparative Sentence . . . . .	201
Disjunctive Sentence . . . . .	201
Restrictive, Exceptive, &c., Sentence . . . . .	202
<b>INDEX OF PASSAGES</b> . . . . .	<b>205</b>
<b>INDEX OF SUBJECTS</b> . . . . .	<b>230</b>



# HEBREW SYNTAX



## SYNTAX OF THE PRONOUN

### PERSONAL PRONOUNS

§ 1. In their full form the Personal pron. are employed only in the Nom. case. In the oblique cases (Gen., Acc.) they are attached in the form of suffixes to other words. On the Cases, cf. § 18, Gr. § 17.

When a pron. in the oblique case is repeated for the sake of emphasis, it is put in the absolute form. *Gen.* as suff. 1 K. 21. 19 דְּמַתְּךָ גַם אֶתָּה *thine own* blood. 2 S. 17. 5 מִמֶּה בְּפִי גַם־הוּא what is in *his* mouth also. Nu. 14. 32, 2 S. 19. 1, Jer. 27. 7, Ez. 23. 43, Ps. 9. 7, Pr. 23. 15. Or gen. with prep. 1 S. 25. 24 בִּי־אֲנִי הָעוֹן on *me* be the guilt. 1 K. 1. 26, Ezr. 7. 21. In the acc. Gen. 27. 34 בְּרַכְנִי גַם־אֲנִי bless *me* too. Pr. 22. 19. So when emphasis falls on noun in the oblique case. Gen. 4. 26 לְשֵׁת גַם־הוּא *to Seth* also. Gen. 10. 21.—Cf. these exx. Gen. 30. 20; 41. 10, 1 Chr. 23. 13.

Rem. 1. Occasionally oblique case has full form. 2 K. 9. 18 אֲנִי עַד הֵם if reading right, cf. *v.* 20. Neh. 4. 17 אֲנִי הוּא the pron. being co-ordinated with the following nouns. Cases like Is. 18. 2 are different, מִן־הוּא being = מֵאֲשֶׁר הוּא (*היה*) since *it* was. Nah. 2. 9 מִיָּמֵי אִשֶׁר הָיָא = מִיָּמֵי הָיָא since the days she was, i.e. *all her days*, cf. 2 K. 7. 7. Such a sense is usually מִיָּמֵיהָ (1 S. 25. 28, 1 K. 1. 6, Job 27. 6; 38. 12), and the text is doubtful. Jer. 46. 5 הָמָּה חֲתִים is a clause, חֲתִים pred. and הָמָּה subj., though the consn. is more

usual with finite form than with ptcp. Jud. 9. 48, 2 S. 21. 4, Lam. 1. 10, Neh. 13. 23. Ps. 89. 48 אני stands for emphasis first: remember, *I, what transitoriness!* But cf. v. 51. In 1 Chr. 9. 22 הָפְתָה seems really *obj.* to verb as in Aram. Ezr. 5. 12. So Moab. Stone, l. 18.

Rem. 2. When 3 p. pr. is used neuterly for *it*, it may be mas. or fem. In Pent., where הוּא is common, the *gend.* is matter of pointing, Ex. 1. 16; and everywhere the pron. is apt by attraction to take the *gend.* of pred., Deu. 4. 6; 30. 20, Ez. 10. 15, Ps. 73. 16, Job 31. 11, Jer. 10. 3. The *fem.*, however, is usual when pron. refers back to some action or circumstance just spoken of, particularly if suff., Jos. 10. 13, Jud. 14. 4, Gen. 24. 14 וְכֵן אֵרַע and *thereby* (the circumstance) shall I know. Is. 47. 7 לֹא זָכַרְתָּ אֶחְרִיתָהּ thou thoughtest not on the issue of *it* (the conduct described). Gen. 42. 36; 47. 26, Ex. 10. 11, Nu. 14. 41; 23. 19, 1 S. 11. 2, 1 K. 11. 12. So the verb, Jud. 11. 39 וַיְהִי חֹק and *it* became a rule. Is. 7. 7; 14. 24.

Rem. 3. By a common gramm. negligence the *mas.* pron., esp. as suff., is used of *fem.* subjects. Is. 3. 16 וּבְרִנְיָהֶם הֶעֱפְסְנָה make a tinkling *with their feet*. Gen. 26. 15; 31. 9; 32. 16; 33. 13, Ex. 1. 21, Nu. 27. 7, 1 S. 6. 7, 10, Am. 4. 1, Ru. 1. 8, 22, Song 4. 2; 6. 8.

§ 2. The oblique cases of the Pers. pron. appear in the form of suffixes to nouns, verbs, and particles. (a) Suffixes to nouns are in *gen.*, and are equivalent to our possessive pron. Gen. 4. 1 אִשְׁתּוֹ *his* wife, 4. 10 אָחִיךָ *thy* brother. This *gen.* is usually *gen.* of subj., as above, but may be *gen.* of *obj.*, Gen. 16. 5 חֲמָסִי *my* wrong (that done me). 18. 21. Cf. § 23, R. 1.

If several nouns be coupled by *and*, suff. must be repeated with each. Deu. 32. 19 בָּנָיו וּבָנוֹתָיו *his* sons *and* daughters. Gen. 38. 18 הַחֲמֶה וּפְתִילָהּ וּמַטְּהָ *thy* seal *and* string *and* staff. Exceptions are very rare even in poetry. Ex. 15. 2, 2 S. 23. 5.

The suff. of prep. and other particles, which are really

nouns, must also be considered in *gen.* Gen. 3. 17 בְּעִבְרָהּ for *thy* sake, 39. 10 אֶצְלָהּ beside *her* (at *her* side).

(b) The verbal suff. is in acc. of direct *obj.* Gen. 3. 13 וַיְהַרְגֵהוּ the serpent beguiled *me*. 4. 8 וַיַּהַרְגֵהוּ and slew *him*. See § 73, R. 4. The suff. to אֵאת is also acc. Gen. 40. 4 וַיִּשְׁרַת אֹתָם he served *them*. 41. 10.

§ 3. The adj. being but feebly developed the relation of a noun to its material, quality, and the like is often expressed by the *gen.* הַר קָדֵשׁ hill of holiness, *holy* hill. In such cases the suff. is *gen.* to the whole expression. Ps. 2. 6 הַר קְדָשִׁי *my* holy-hill. Is. 2. 20 אֱלִילֵי זָהָב וְזָהָב *his* idols-of-gold. 13. 3; 30. 22, 23; 53. 5. On constructions like Lev. 6. 3 מְדוּ בָרָהּ *his* linen garment, see Nomin. Appos.

The noun with suff., forming a definite expression, the qualifying adj. has the Art. Gen. 43. 29 הַיָּהוּ אַחִיכֶם הַקָּטָן is this *your* youngest brother.

Rem. 1. The suff. to some particles which have a certain verbal force, as הִנֵּה *behold*, יֵשׁ *there is*, אֵין *there is not*, עוֹד *still*, are partly verbal in form (Gr. § 49). But suff. of 1st pers. is בְּעוֹדִי in the sense *while I have being*, Ps. 104. 33; 146. 2, and מֵעוֹדִי *since I had being*, Gen. 48. 15 (Nu. 22. 30). In ordinary sense Ps. 139. 18.

Rem. 2. These uses of the suff. are to be noted. Ex. 2. 9 אֶתֶּן אֶת־שְׂכָרְךָ I will give *thy* hire, i.e. give *thee* hire. Gen. 30. 18, Jud. 4. 9 לֹא תִהְיֶה תַפְאֲרָתְךָ the glory shall not be *thine*. Gen. 39. 21 וַיִּתֵּן הָנֹוֹתָוָה גָּבַחַתָּהּ gave *him* favour. Ez. 27. 15 rendered *thee* tribute. Nu. 12. 6, text doubtful. Ps. 115. 7? Job 6. 10, Hos. 2. 8 (her wall = a wall against her).

Rem. 3. 1 S. 30. 17 לְמַחֲרָתָם *their* following day, the use of suff. is unique in Heb., though something analogous is common in Ar. The text is dubious.

#### DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS

§ 4. The Demons. pron. זֶה and הוּא are used as in Eng. Jud. 4. 14 הַיּוֹם זֶה *this* is the day. Gen. 41. 28 הוּא הַדָּבָר *this* is the day.

*that* is the thing. Deu. 1. 1 אֵלֶּה הַדְּבָרִים *these* are the words. On their use as adj. § 32, and R. 3.

In usage זה refers to a subject when first mentioned, or when about to be mentioned (= the following), while הוּא refers back to a subj. already spoken of. Jud. 7. 4, of whom I shall say זֶה יֵלֵךְ אִתָּךְ הוּא יֵלֵךְ *this one* shall go with thee, *that one* shall go. Gen. 42. 14 הוּא אֲשֶׁר דִּבַּרְתִּי *that* is what I said to you. 32. 3; 44. 17. So the common prophetic phrase בַּיּוֹם הַהוּא on *that day* (time just spoken of), Is. 4. 2.

The pron. זה is used almost as a noun in all the three cases. Gen. 29. 27 שָׁבַע זֹאת the week of *this one*. 1 K. 21. 2. Gen. 2. 23 לְזֹאת יִקְרָא *this* shall be called. 1 S. 21. 12, 1 K. 22. 17. Is. 29. 11 זֶה קָרְאֵנָה read *this* (writing). 2 S. 13. 17 שְׁלֹחֵינָה אֶת־זֹאת send *this person* away; and *mas.* with same contemptuous sense, 1 K. 22. 27 (1 S. 21. 16). 2 K. 6. 20 פָּקַח אֶת־עֵינֵי־אֵלֶּה open the eyes of *these men*. Gen. 29. 33. Pron. הוּא is not used in this way, though cf. 1 K. 20. 40.

Rem. 1. When *this, that* are used neuterly while הוּא is perhaps more common than *fem.* (Gen. 42. 14, Am. 7. 6), זֹאת is much oftener used than *mas.* Gen. 42. 18 נַחַע עָשׂוּ וְחָיִי זֹאת do *this* and ye shall live. 42. 15 בְּזֹאת by *this* shall ye be proved. Is. 5. 25 בְּכֹל־זֹאת for (amidst) *all this*. Is. 9. 11, 20; 10. 4, Hos. 7. 10, Am. 7. 3. The *mas.*, however, is not unusual, esp. in the sense of *such*, Gen. 11. 6, 2 K. 4. 43. The distinction between *this* and *that* stated above is usually preserved, but *this* thing, *these* things seem exclusively used. Gen. 24. 9; 15. 1; 20. 8.

§ 5. When זה is repeated it is equivalent to *this . . . that, the one . . . the other*. Is. 6. 3 וְקָרָא זֶה אֶל־זֶה and *the one* called to *the other*. 1 K. 3. 23 זֹאת אָמְרָת . . . וְזֹאת אָמְרָת *this one* says . . . and *the other* says. Jos. 8. 22 אֵלֶּה מְוָה *these*

וְאֵלֶּהָ מִזֶּה *some on this side and some on that side.* Ex. 14. 20, 2 S. 2. 13, 1 K. 20. 29; 22. 20, Ps. 20. 8; 75. 8, Job 1. 16, Dan. 12. 2. Comp. 1 K. 20. 40 thy servant עֲשֵׂה הִנֵּה וְהִנֵּה was busy *with this and that*, where *gen.* as Deu. 25. 16 עֲשֵׂה אֵלֶּהָ.

§ 6. As in other languages, the Demons. have come to be treated as adjectives. They necessarily make their noun definite, and then conform so much to the usage of adj. as themselves to take the Art. Is. 4. 2 בְּיוֹם הַהוּא *on that day.* Occasionally, however, Art. is wanting, Gen. 19. 33 בְּלַיְלָהָ הוּא *that night*, 30. 16; 32. 23, 1 S. 19. 10, Ps. 12. 8. The Art. is always wanting when Demons. adj. qualifies a noun determined by a suff. Ex. 10. 1 אֶתֵּי אֵלֶּהָ *these my signs.* With another adj. or several Demons. stands last. Gen. 41. 35. See § 32. The form הַלְּזֶה *yonder* is generally used as adj. Gen. 24. 65; 37. 19, Jud. 6. 20, 1 S. 17. 26, 2 K. 4. 25; as pron. Dan. 8. 16.

Rem. 1. In some cases the Demons., as a substantive definite of itself, seems to stand in appos. with the defined noun, Ps. 104. 25, Ezr. 3. 12, Song 7. 8. Text of 1 K. 14. 14 is obscure, and 2 K. 6. 33, 1 Chr. 21. 17 are doubtful. With proper names, Ex. 32. 1 זֶה מֹשֶׁה, Jud. 5. 5. With noun defined by suff., Josh 9. 12, 13, Hab. 1. 11. The noun is rarely undefined, Ps. 80. 15 נֶפֶן זֶה *this vine*, Mic. 7. 12 (text uncertain). Phenic. says קִבְרִי זֶה *this grave*, and הַקִּבְרִי זֶה. Cf. Moab. St. 1. 3 הַבִּמְתָּ זֶה *this high place*. In Ar. Demons. being a noun, stands in appos., before the noun if defined by Art., and after if a proper name or defined by suff.

Rem. 2. The Demons., particularly זֶה, is used with interrogatives to add emphasis or vividness to the question. Gen. 27. 21 הֲאֵתָהּ זֶה בְּנִי *art thou my son Esau?* See § 7c.

In the same way force is added to adverbial and particularly *temporal* expressions. 1 K. 19. 5 מֵלִמָּחָה זֶה *and lo!* an angel. 1 Kings 17. 24 עַתָּה זֶה יָדַעְתִּי *now indeed I know!*

2 K. 5. 22 have *just* come to me. Gen. 27. 36 **זֶה פְּעָמַיִם נֹכַח** *now* twice; 31. 38 **זֶה עֲשָׂרִים שָׁנָה** *twenty years now*. 31. 41; 43-10; 45. 6, Nu. 22. 28, Deu. 8. 2, Jud. 16. 15, 1 S. 29. 3, 2 S. 14. 2, Job 19. 3.

Rem. 3. The form **זֶה** is often a *relative* in poetry (as in Aram., Eth.). Like **אֲשֶׁר** it suffers no change for *gend.* and *number*. Job 19. 19 **זֶה אֲהַבְתִּי נְהַפְכֵרְבִי** and *they-whom* I loved are turned against me. Ps. 74. 2; 78. 54; 104. 8; Pr. 23. 22, Job 15. 17. The form **זֶה** (Ps. 132. 12 **זֶה**) is still oftener used. Ex. 15. 13, Is. 42. 24; 43. 21, Ps. 9. 16; 10. 2; 17. 9; 31. 5; 32. 8; 68. 29; 143. 8.

Rem. 4. The Demons. unites with *prepp.* to form adverbial expressions. See Lex. On its union with **כִּי** to express *such*, cf. § 11, R. 1e.

#### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUN

§ 7. The pron. **מִי** *who?* is used of persons, *mas.* and *fem.*; and **מָה** *what?* of things. Both are invariable for *gend.* and *number*.

(a) The pron. **מִי** may be used in the three cases. Gen. 3. 11 **מִי הִגִּיד לְךָ** *who* told thee? 24. 65; 33. 5, Is. 6. 8. The *gen.*, Gen. 24. 23 **בְּתַרְמִי אֵתָהּ** *whose* daughter art thou? 32. 18 **לְמִי אֵתָהּ** *to whom* belongest thou? 1 S. 12. 3; 24. 15, Ps. 27. 1. And *acc.*, Is. 6. 8 **אֶת־מִי אֲשַׁלַּח** *whom* shall I send? 1 S. 28. 11, 2 K. 19. 22. The *acc.* is always preceded by **אֵת**. Like other words **מִי** may be repeated to particularise or distribute. Ex. 10. 8 **מִי וְמִי הֵהָלְכִים** *who all* are they that are to go?

(b) The *neut.* **מָה** is also used in all the cases. Gen. 31. 36 **מָה־פָּשְׁעִי** *what is* my offence? 32. 28, 2 K. 9. 18. The *gen.* by *prep.*, Gen. 15. 8 **בְּמָה אֲדַע** *by what* shall I know? Rarely after a noun, Jer. 8. 9 *wisdom of what* (what sort of w.)? Nu. 23. 3. The *acc.*, Gen. 4. 10 **מָה עָשִׂיתָ** *what* hast thou done? 15. 2. The **אֵת** is not used before

*what.* In Jer. 23. 33 אַתֶּם הַמְשָׂא rd. אַתֶּם הַמְשָׂא *ye are the burden.*

With adj. and verbs מַה has the sense of *how.* Gen. 28. 17 מַה אֲתֵן זֶה לְפָנַי *how terrible!* 2 K. 4. 43 מַה אֲתֵן זֶה לְפָנַי *how shall I set such a thing before a hundred people?* Ex. 10. 26, Job 9. 2, Ps. 133. 1.

(c) The interrog. pron. strengthen themselves by זֶה &c. to add vividness to the question. 1 S. 17. 55 בְּרַמְי־זֶה הַנֶּעַר *whose son (I wonder) is the lad?* 1 S. 10. 11 מַה־זֶּה הָיָה *what in the world has come over the son of Kish?* Gen. 3. 13; 27. 20, Jud. 18. 24, 2 S. 12. 23, Ps. 24. 8.

§ 8. In the indirect sentence the interrog. remains without change. Gen. 21. 26 לֹא יָדַעְתִּי מִי עָשָׂה *I do not know who did it.* 43. 22, Jud. 13. 6, 1 S. 17. 56. The interrog. are also used as indef. pron., *whoever, whoso, whatever, aught.* Jud. 7. 3 מִי יִרָא . . . וְשָׁב *whoever is afraid let him return.* Ex. 32. 26 מִי לְיְהוָה אֵלַי *whoever is for Je., Unto me (let him come)!* 2 S. 18. 12 מִי שְׁמְרוּ *have a care whoever ye be!* Ex. 24. 14, Is. 54. 15.—1 S. 19. 3 וְרָאִיתִי מַה וְהִגַּדְתִּי לְךָ *and if I observe aught I will tell thee.* 2 S. 18. 23 וַיְהִי־מָה *be what may I will run!* Nu. 23. 3, Job 13. 13; 26. 7, Pr. 9. 13. In some sentences of this form, however, the strict interrog. sense is probably still to be retained. Deu. 20. 5, Jud. 10. 18; 21. 5, Is. 50. 8. The form מִי אֲשֶׁר is also used, Ex. 32. 33, 2 S. 20. 11, cf. מַה־שֶׁ Ecc. 1. 9.

Rem. 1. The neut. מַה may be used of persons if their circumstances or relations be inquired of, as 1 S. 29. 3 *what are these Hebrews?* On the other hand, מִי is used of things when the idea of a person is involved, Jud. 13. 17 *who is thy name?* (as usual in Syr.), but generally *what* in this case, Gen. 32. 28. Mic. 1. 5, cf. 1 S. 18. 18 (*rd. חַיִּי my clan*), 2 S. 7. 18, Gen. 33. 8, Jud. 9. 28. Some cases are peculiar, and suggest a provincial or colloquial use of מִי for מַה; e.g. Ru. 3. 16 מִי־אַתְּ בְּתִי with Jud. 18. 18 מַה אַתָּם, Am. 7. 2, 5

יֵקוּם מִי יֵקוּם *how* shall J. stand? Is. 51. 19. The Mass. on Mic. 6. 5 states that the Orientals use מִי for מָה.

Rem. 2. In phrases like מַה־בִּצֵּעַ *what profit?* Gen. 37. 26, the original consn. was probably *What is the profit?* (appos. at least is not allowable in Ar.). Ps. 30 10, Is. 40. 18, Mal. 3. 14, Ps. 89. 48, Job 26. 14. In a number of cases the words are separated, Jer. 2. 5 מַה־פָּצְאוּ בִּי עֵוָל *what evil?* and second word might be adverb. acc. 1 S. 26. 18; 20. 10, 2 S. 19. 29; 24. 13, 1 K. 12. 16. The similar use of מִי is against acc., Deu. 3. 24; 4. 7, Jud. 21. 8, 2 S. 7. 23, 1 Chr. 17. 21.—Song 5. 9 מַה מְדוּד *what sort of beloved?* is no evidence for *gen.*, which cannot be the relation of the words.

Rem. 3. These uses of מָה are to be noted. Jud. 1. 14 מַה־לְּךָ *what hast thou?* *i.e.* what ails thee? what dost thou mean, want, &c.? Gen. 21. 17, 1 S. 11. 5, Jon. 1. 6.—Jud. 11. 12 מַה־לִּי וְלָךְ *what have I to do with thee?* 2 S. 16. 10; 19. 23. 2 K. 9. 18, 19 מַה־לְּךָ וְלְשָׁלוֹם. Cf. Jer. 2. 18, Ps. 50. 16. Without *and* with second word, Hos. 14. 9. Passages like 1 K. 12. 16, 2 Chr. 10. 16, Song 8. 4, show how מָה naturally passes over to be a negative, *not.* (Ar.).

Rem. 4. The expression אֵי זֶה is an interrog. adj. *which?* *what?* Jon. 1. 8 אֵי מְזֵה עִם אֲתָה *of what people art thou?* 2 S. 15. 2 אֵי מְזֵה עִיר אֲתָה *of what city?* 1 K. 13. 12; 22. 24, 2 K. 3. 8, 2 Chr. 18. 23, Is. 66. 1, Jer. 6. 16, Job 38. 19, 24, Ecc. 11. 6. The *fem.*, Jer. 5. 7 אֵי לְזֹאת *for what?* In many cases זֶה אֵי is merely *where?*

#### THE RELATIVE PRONOUN

§ 9. The word אֲשֶׁר is of uncertain derivation. Its usage differs according as it is preceded by what we call the antecedent, or is not.

When the antecedent is expressed אֲשֶׁר seems a conjunctive word, serving to connect the antecedent with what we call the relative clause. In this case אֲשֶׁר, besides being uninflected, is incapable of entering into regimen, admitting neither prep. nor אֶת of acc., but possibly stands in apposi-



tion with the antecedent. It is neither subj. nor obj. of the relative clause. The subj. or obj. of this clause is a pronoun referring back to the antecedent, and agreeing with it in gen., numb., and person. This pronoun may be expressed, but is often merely understood when no ambiguity would arise from its omission.

(a) When the retrospective pron. is subj. it may be expressed in a nominal sentence, as Gen. 9. 3 **כָּל־רֶמֶשׂ אֲשֶׁר** **הוּא־חַי** every creeping thing *which is alive*. But it is oftener omitted. Gen. 3. 3 **הָעֵץ אֲשֶׁר בְּתוֹךְ הַגֵּן** the tree *which is in the midst of the garden*. In a verbal sent. the pron. is represented by the verbal inflection, as 15. 7 **אֲנִי י' אֲשֶׁר הוֹצֵאתִיךָ** I am Je. *which brought thee out*. The separate pron. is hardly ever expressed, 2 K. 22. 13.

(b) When the pron. is the obj. (in a verbal clause) it is often expressed. Gen. 45. 4 **אֲנִי יוֹסֵף אֲשֶׁר מָכַרְתָּם אֹתִי** I am Jos. *whom ye sold*. Ps. 1. 4 **כַּמֶּץ אֲשֶׁר תִּדְרֹכֵנוּ רוּחַ** like the chaff *which the wind drives*. Gen. 21. 2, Jer. 28. 9; 44. 3, Ex. 6. 5, 2 K. 19. 4 (if not 2 acc. as 1 S. 21. 3). But often omitted. Deu. 13. 7 **אֱלֹהִים אֲשֶׁר לֹא יָדַעְתָּ** gods *whom thou hast not known*. Gen. 2. 8; 6. 7; 12. 1, Jud. 11. 39; 16. 30, 1 S. 7. 14; 10. 2, 2 S. 15. 7.

(c) When the retrospective pron. is gen. by noun or prep. Deu. 28. 49 **גּוֹי אֲשֶׁר לֹא־תִשְׁמַע לְשׁוֹנִי** a nation *whose tongue thou shalt not understand*. Gen. 24. 3, the Canaanite **אֲשֶׁר** **אֲנֹכִי יוֹשֵׁב בְּקִרְבּוֹ** *in whose midst I dwell*. 28. 13 **הָאָרֶץ אֲשֶׁר אַתָּה שֹׁכֵב עָלֶיהָ** the land *upon which thou liest*. Gen. 38. 25, Ex. 4. 17, Nu. 22. 30, Deu. 1. 22, Ru. 2. 12. Here the pron. requires to be expressed.

After words of time the prep. and suff. is very much omitted, so that **אֲשֶׁר** is equivalent to *when*. Gen. 45. 6, Deu. 4. 10, Jud. 4. 14, 2 S. 19. 25 **עַד הַיּוֹם אֲשֶׁר בָּא** until the day *when* (in which) he came in peace. 1 K. 22. 25, cf. Gen. 6. 4; 40. 13.

(d) With adverbs of place. Gen. 13. 3 הַמָּקוֹם אֲשֶׁר הָיָה the place *where* was his tent. 20. 13 כָּל-הַמָּקוֹם אֲשֶׁר נָבוֹא שָׁמָּה every place *whither* we shall come. 3. 23 הָאֲדָמָה אֲשֶׁר לָקַח מִשָּׁם the ground *whence* he was taken. Gen. 19. 27; 31. 13; 35. 15; 40. 3, Ex. 20. 21, 2 S. 15. 21.—Ex. 21. 13, Nu. 14. 24, Deu. 30. 3.—Gen. 24. 5. The adverbial *there, &c.*, may be omitted, Gen. 35. 13, esp. when the antecedent noun has prep.

Rem. 1. The part. אֲשֶׁר is usually separated from the pron. or adverb of the rel. clause by one or more words (see exx. above), but there are exceptions esp. in nominal sentences, Gen. 2. 11, Deu. 8. 9; 19. 17, 1 S. 9. 10. Sometimes אֲשֶׁר and pron. have an emphasis which must be brought out by expressing a pronom. antecedent. Jer. 32. 19 אֲשֶׁר עֵינַיִךְ thou *whose* eyes. Is. 42. 24 לוֹ וְהִטָּאנוּ לוֹ Is it not Je.? *he* against *whom* we have sinned. Hos. 14. 4, Ez. 11. 12, Neh. 2. 3; cf. Dan. 2. 37; 4. 6.

Rem. 2. The expression of the separate pron. in nominal sent. occurs mostly when the pred. is an adj. or ptcp., e.g. Gen. 9. 3; it is less necessary when pred. is an adverb or a prep. with its gen. after the verb *to be*, as Gen. 3. 3. When the nominal sent. is positive the pron. usually precedes the pred., Gen. 9. 3, Lev. 11. 26, 39, Num. 9. 13; 14. 8, 27, Deu. 20. 20, 1 S. 10. 19, 2 K. 25. 19, Jer. 27. 9, Ez. 43. 19, Ru. 4. 15, Neh. 2. 18, Ecc. 7. 26, cf. Jer. 5. 15. When the sent. is neg. the pron. follows the pred. Gen. 7. 2; 17. 12, Nu. 17. 5, Deu. 17. 15; 20. 15, Jud. 19. 12, 1 K. 8. 41. Although the expression of pron. in nominal sent. is genuine Shemitic idiom, it is still mainly in later writings that it occurs.

Rem. 3. It is rare that אֲשֶׁר takes prep. or אֲחַ when antecedent is expressed. Neither Is. 47. 12 nor 56. 4 is a case. Is. 56. 4 בְּאֲשֶׁר is under preceding verb *choose*, cf. 66. 3, 4. In 47. 12 the prep. is carried on from previous clause, *in that which, &c.*, the complement of יַעַת being unexpressed. Zech. 12. 10 (text obscure). In other cases אֲשֶׁר is distant from anteced. and אֲחַ resumptive, Lev. 22. 15 *that*

*which* they offer. Ez. 23. 40, Jer. 38. 9 might be, *in that* they have thrown.

§ 10. The word אשר often includes a pronominal antecedent, *i.e.* it is equivalent to *he-who*, *that-which*, *they-who*, *whom*, or indefinitely *one-who*, &c. In this case it is susceptible of government like a substantive, admitting prep. and את of acc. When used in this way אשר has the case which, according to our mode of thought, the pronom. antecedent would have. Gen. 7. 23 וַיִּשְׂאָר נֹחַ וְהָאֲשֶׁר אִתּוֹ and N. was left, and *they-who* were with him. 43. 16 וַיִּשְׂאָר עַל-בֵּיתוֹ וַיֹּאמֶר לְאֲשֶׁר עַל-בֵּיתוֹ he said *to him-who* was over his house. 44. 1 וַיִּצַו אֶת-אֲשֶׁר עַל-בֵּיתוֹ and he commanded *him-who* was, &c. 31. 1 וּמֵאֲשֶׁר לְאָבִינוּ of *that-which* is our father's. 9. 24 וַיֵּדַע אֵת אֲשֶׁר-עָשָׂה לוֹ בְּנוֹ he knew *what* his son had done to him. 2 K. 6. 16 רַבִּים אֲשֶׁר אָמְנוּ מֵאֲשֶׁר אִתָּם more are *they-who are* with us *than they-who are* with them (later for אִתָּם). Jud. 16. 30 הַרְבֵּי מֵאֲשֶׁר הָמִית בְּחַיָּוִי were more *than those-whom* he slew in his life. Gen. 15. 4; 27. 8; 47. 24, Ex. 4. 12; 20. 7; 33. 19, Lev. 27. 24, Nu. 22. 6, Jos. 10. 11, 1 S. 15. 16, 2 K. 10. 22, Is. 47. 13; 52. 15, Ru. 2. 2, 9. Ez. 23. 28 בְּיַד אֲשֶׁר שָׂנֵאתָ into the hand of *those-whom* thou hatest.

Rem. 1. The consn. in this case is quite the same as in § 9. The so-called rel. clause is complete in itself apart from אשר, which has no resemblance to the rel. pron. of classical languages. Cf. Lev. 27. 24, Ru. 2. 2, Nu. 5. 7. Cases like Gen. 31. 32 אֲשֶׁר עִם אִשְׁרָיִם *with whomsoever*, are unusual, cf. Gen. 44. 9.

Rem. 2. In § 10 the retrospective pronoun is greatly omitted except when gen., cf. Lev. 5. 24; 27. 24, Ru. 2. 2, Is. 8. 23; and even prep. and gen. are sometimes omitted where they would naturally stand, Is. 8. 12; 31. 6—particularly with verb *to say*, *e.g.* Hos. 2. 14; 13. 10.

Rem. 3. The adverbial complement *there, thither, &c.*, is omitted after the compound *באשר אשר, בכל אשר, אל אשר, על אשר, מאשר, &c.*, in designations of *place*, Ex. 5. 11; 32. 34, Jos. 1. 16, Jud. 5. 27, 1 S. 14. 47; 23. 13, 2 S. 7. 9; 8. 6; 15. 20, 1 K. 18. 12, 2 K. 8. 1. In Gen. 21. 17 *there* is expressed in the nominal sent. (Ar. *ḥaithu hua*).

Rem. 4. On use of *אני*, &c. as Rel. § 6, R. 3, and on Art. as Rel. § 22, R. 4.

#### OTHER PRONOMINAL EXPRESSIONS

§ 11. The want of a reflexive pronoun is supplied in various ways. (a) By the use of reflexive forms of the verb (Niph., Hith.). Gen. 3. 10 *וָאִירָא וָאֲחָבִיא* I was afraid, and hid myself. 45. 1 *לֹא יָכַל לְהִתְאַפֵּק* he was unable to control himself. 3. 8; 45. 1; 42. 7, 1 S. 18. 4; 28. 8, 1 K. 14. 2; 20. 38; 22. 30.

(b) By the ordinary personal pron., simple or suff. Is. 7. 14 *וַיִּתֵּן יְהוָה אֲדָנִי הוּא* the Lord Himself will give. Ex. 32. 13 *אֲשֶׁר נִשְׁבַּעְתָּ לָּהֶם בְּךָ* to whom thou didst swear by thyself. Jer. 7. 19 *הֲאֵתִי הֵם מְכַעֲסִים הֲלֹא אֲתָם* do they provoke me? is it not themselves, &c. Gen. 3. 7; 33. 17, Ex. 5. 7, 11, Is. 3. 9; 49. 26; 63. 10, Hos. 4. 14, Pr. 1. 18, Job 1. 12.

(c) By a separate word, esp. *בְּנַפְשׁוֹ*. Am. 6. 8 *נִשְׁבַּע י' בְּנַפְשׁוֹ* Je. has sworn by himself. 1 S. 18. 1, 3. Plur., Jer. 37. 9. So *לֵב קָרַב* heart. Gen. 8. 21 *וַיֹּאמֶר י' אֶל־לְבוֹ* and Je. thought with himself. 18. 12 *וַתִּצְחַק ש' בְּקִרְבָּהּ* Sarah laughed within herself. Gen. 24. 45, 1 S. 1. 13; 27. 1, 1 K. 12. 26, Hos. 7. 2. Also *פָּנִים* face, presence, self, esp. in later style. 2 S. 17. 11 *וּפָנֶיהָ הִלְכִים בְּקִרְבָּהּ* thou thyself going into battle (rd. perh. *בְּקִרְבָּם* among them). Ez. 6. 9 *וְנִקְטְוּ בְּפִיָּהֶם* they shall loathe themselves. Ex. 33. 14, Deu. 4. 37, Ez. 20. 43; 36. 31, Job 23. 17. In ref. to things, *עצם* bone, self-same, self. Ex. 24. 10; chiefly PC. and Ez. Gen. 7. 13, Ez. 24. 2.

Rem. 1. Some other quasi-pronominal expressions are these: (a) *Some, several*, may be expressed by plur. Gen. 24. 55 יָמִים *some* days (a time); 40. 4 (cf. 27. 44; 29. 20 יָמִים אֲחֵרִים *a few* days). Ez. 38. 17. By prep. מִן with noun. Gen. 30. 14 give me מְרֹדָי בְּנֵה *some of* thy son's mandrakes. Jer. 19. 1 מִזְקְנֵי הָעָם *some of* the elders. Ex. 17. 5, Ps. 137. 3, and often in later style.

(b) *Any, every* by כֹּל. Deu. 16. 21 an Ashera כֹּל־עֵץ *any* (kind of) wood. *Any one, one*, by אִישׁ. Gen. 13. 16 אִם אִישׁ יוּכַל *if one* were able. *Anything*, דָּבָר Gen. 18. 14. *No, none*, by אִישׁ . . . לֹא; *nothing*, דָּבָר . . . לֹא, the neg. placed before the verb. Gen. 45. 1 לֹא עָמַד אִישׁ *none* stood. Hos. 2. 12 לֹא יַצִּילֶנָּה אִישׁ *none* shall deliver her. 2 K. 10. 25 אִישׁ לֹא חָסְדָתָּ לֹא חָסְדָתָּ *let no one* go out. Ex. 16. 19. Deu. 2. 7 דָּבָר דָּבָר thou didst want *nothing*; 22. 26, 2 S. 17. 19, 1 K. 18. 21. Sometimes strengthened by כֹּל, 2 S. 18. 13. Cf. Gen. 3. 1, thou shalt eat of *no tree*. Ex. 12. 48. The phrase . . . לֹא מְאוּמָה *nothing*, 1 S. 12. 4, cf. Gen. 22. 12.

(c) *This . . . that, the one . . . the other*, by זֶה . . . זֶה Is. 6. 3 (§ 5), or אֶחָד . . . אֶחָד, Ex. 17. 12, 1 K. 3. 25. *One another* by אֶחָיו . . . אִישׁ or רֵעֵהוּ . . . אִישׁ, Gen. 13. 11; 11. 3, Ex. 16. 15; 32. 27, Is. 3. 5; *fem.* Ex. 26. 3, 5, Ez. 1. 23, Is. 34. 16.

(d) *Each* distributively by אִישׁ, Jud. 9. 55 וַיִּלְכְּבוּ אִישׁ לְמִקְמוֹ *each* Jud. 7. 7, 1 S. 8. 22; 10. 25, 2 S. 6. 19, the noun usually sing., but usually *plur.* with tents, Jud. 7. 8 וְשָׁלַח אִישׁ לְאֹהֲלָיו the men of Israel he dismissed, *every one to his tents*. 1 Sam. 13. 2.—Also by אֶחָד Is. 6. 2, Jud. 8. 18. When אִישׁ would be in the gen. it is placed as *casus pendens* with a retrospective suff. Gen. 42. 35 הִנֵּה-אִישׁ צְרוּר-בְּכֶסֶף *every man's* bundle of money; 15. 10; 41. 12; 42. 25, Nu. 17. 17. So Gen. 9. 5 מִיַּד אִישׁ אֶחָיו at the hand of *every man's* brother, unless אִישׁ אֶחָיו had become a single expression like *one another*, and the phrase mean at the *hand of one another*. Comp. Zech. 7. 10 do not plot רַעַת אִישׁ אֶחָיו the hurt of *one another*, cf. 8. 17 for the sense.

(e) *Such* is expressed by כֵּן with זֶה or suff. Gen. 44. 7 הַזֶּה כֵּן-דָּבָר *such a thing*, כְּדָבָרִים הָאֵלֶּה *such things*. 41. 38 כֵּן-זֶה *such a one*. Jer. 5. 9 נֹי אֲשֶׁר בֹּזֵה *such a nation*. Gen. 44. 15 כֵּן-אִישׁ אֲשֶׁר בְּמִנִּי *such as I*. 2 S. 9. 8.—2 S. 17. 15

כִּזְאֵחַ וְכִזְאֵחַ *such and such a thing*. Jos. 7. 20, 2 K. 5. 4 ; 9. 12, cf. 1 K. 14. 5. For *so and so* (person) Ru. 4. 1. Cf. 1 S. 21. 3, 2 K. 6. 8.

(f) The pronouns *mine, ours, yours, theirs, &c.*, must be expressed by prep. and suff. Is. 43. 1 אֲנִי לְיָ אֱלֹהֶיךָ thou art *mine* ; Gen. 48. 5. Gen. 26. 20 לְנוּ הַמַּיִם the water is *ours*. Jer. 44. 28 they shall know מִי יִקְוֶה וּמִי יִדְבַר whose word shall stand, *mine or theirs*.

## SYNTAX OF THE NOUN

## GENDER OF THE NOUN

§ 12. Of the two genders, mas. and fem., the mas. is the prevailing one, and by a natural inaccuracy the writer often falls into it even when speaking of a fem. subject, especially in using suffixes. § 1, R. 3. The distinctive fem. termination *a*, i.e. *at* (Gr. § 16, R. *θ*) is generally used in adj. and ptcp. referring to a fem. subject.

In the case of living creatures, distinction of gender is indicated—

(a) By the fem. termination, as אֵיל *a hart*, fem. אֵילָת, אֶלְמָה *a youth*, fem. אֶלְמָה, עֵגֶל *a calf*, fem. עֵגֶלָה.

(b) By different words, as אָב *father*, אִם *mother*, חֲמֹר *he-ass*, אֲתוֹן *she-ass*, אֵיל *ram*, רְחֵל *ewe*, עֶבֶד *servant*, אֲמָה *maid*.

(c) Or the same word may be used for both genders, and differentiated only in construction, as Hos. 13. 8 דֵּב שָׁכַל *a bear robbed of her whelps*, 2 K. 2. 24 שְׁתֵּי דְבִים *two bears*. So גְּמָלִים *camels*, mas. Gen. 24. 63, fem. 32. 16; אֱלֹהִים *goddess?* 1 K. 11. 5. The grammatical difference, however, does not seem always meant to express a real difference of gend., cf. Jer. 2. 24. Anciently נָעַר appears to have been of common gend.

(d) Or a word of one gend. may be used as name of the class or genus, without distinction of individuals, as כָּלָב *dog*, זָאֵב *wolf*, mas.; אֲרֻנָּבַת *hare*, יוֹנָה *dove*, fem.

§ 13. Of inanimate things the following classes are usually fem. (Gr. § 16):—

(a) Proper names of countries and cities, as **בָּבֶל** *Babylon*, **צִדוֹן** *Sidon*. Words like **מוֹאָב** *Moab*, &c., when used as name of the people, are usually mas., but fem. when the name of the country, and also when used for the population as a collective personified (§ 116, R. 5). So the word **בֵּית** *daughter* of inhabitants or people, as **בֵּית צִיּוֹן**.

(b) Common names of definite places, as districts, quarters of the earth, &c., as **עִיר** *city*, **תֵּבֵל** *the world*, **כְּפָר** *the circle* (of the Jordan), **שְׁאוֹל** *hades* (mas. as personified Is. 14. 9), **תֵּימָן** *the south*, **צָפוֹן** *north*, Is. 43. 6. But there are exceptions.

(c) The names of *instruments, utensils* used by man, and members of the body, particularly such as are double, as **חֶרֶב** *sword*, **כּוֹס** *cup*, **נֶעַל** *shoe*; **עֵין** *eye*, **אָזן** *ear*, **רֶגֶל** *foot*, &c. So of animals, **קֶרֶן** *horn*. Again there are exceptions, as **אָף** *nose, nostril*, **עֶרְף** *neck*, **פֶּה** *mouth*.

(d) The names of the elements, natural powers and unseen forces, as **אֵשׁ** *fire*, **נֶפֶשׁ** *soul*, **רוּחַ** *wind, spirit* (usually), **שֶׁמֶשׁ** *the sun* (usually), but **יָרֵחַ** *moon*, is mas.

§ 14. Some other classes of nouns are fem. 1. Abstract nouns, as **אֱמֶת** *truth*, **גְּבוּרָה** *strength*, **צְדָקָה** *righteousness*, though there is often also a mas. form, as **עֲזָרָה** and **עֲזָרָה** *help*, **נִקָּם** and **נִקְמָה** *vengeance*. So adj. and ptc. used nominally, as we should say as neuters, as **רָעָה** *evil* (physical), Hos. 5. 9 **נְאֻמָּה** *a sure thing*, Am. 3. 10 **נִכְחָה** what is *straightforward*, Mic. 3. 9 **הַיִּשְׁרָה**. And often in the plur. Gen. 42. 7 **קִשּׁוֹת** *harsh things, harshly*, Is. 32. 4, 8 **צְהוֹת** *clear things, plainly*, **נְדִיבוֹת** *liberal things*. Zeph. 3. 4. The mas. plur. is sometimes used in poetry, Ps. 16. 6, 11, Pr. 8. 6 **נְגִידִים**. Cf. Is. 26. 10; 28. 22; 30. 10; 42. 9; 43. 18; 48. 6; 58. 11; 59. 9; 64. 2, Nu. 22. 18; 24. 13, Jos. 2. 23; 3. 5, 2 S. 2. 26, 2 K. 8. 4; 25. 28.

2. Collectives, which are often *fem.* of ptc., as **אֲרָקָה**



a caravan (from אָרֶה *a traveller*), גּוֹלָה *captivity* (גּוֹלָה one going captive), יֹשְׁבֵי יִשְׁבֵּת *inhabitants*, Is. 12. 6, אֹיְבֵת *enemy* (of a people), דְּלָה *the lower classes*, 2 K. 24. 14, Jer. 40. 7, plur. Jer. 52. 15, 16. Cf. Mic. 4. 6, Zeph. 3. 19, Ez. 34. 4.

3. The *fem.*, however, sometimes is used as *nomen unitatis* when the *mas.* is collect., as אָנִי *fleet*, 1 K. 9. 26, אֲנִיָּה *a ship*, Jon. 1. 3, 4; שֵׁעַר *the hair*, 2 S. 14. 26, שֵׁעָרָה *a hair*, Jud. 20. 16, 1 K. 1. 52, but probably coll. Job 4. 15; שִׁירָה *a song*, Is. 5. 1, *mas.* generally coll. 1 K. 5. 12, though also singular, e.g. Is. 26. 1. So מְרֻכָּבָה *a chariot*, Gen. 41. 43 with מְרֻכָּב 1 K. 5. 6. Perhaps פִּשְׁתָּה *wick*, Is. 42. 3; 43. 17, cf. Hos. 2. 7, 11, *flax*.

Rem. 1. Sometimes when a parallel is seen in lifeless things to some organ or feature of living creatures the *fem.* is used, as יָרֵךְ *the thigh, loins* (sing. and plur.), יָרְכָתַיִם *the sides*, furthest back parts, of a locality; מִצְחָה *forehead, front*, מִצְחָה *shin-front, greave*. And in a wider way, יוֹנֵק *suckling, child*, יוֹנְקָה *sucker, shoot*. So such words as *horns, feet* when transferred to things are used in plur. with *fem.* termination.

Rem. 2. The *fem.* is used where other languages would use the *neut.*, e.g. זאת *this*, שְׁתֵּי אֵלֶּה *these two things*, Is. 47. 9; אֶחָד מֵהֵנָּה *one of these things*, 1 Chr. 21. 10; particularly in ref. to something previously mentioned, Is. 22. 11; 37. 26; 41. 20; 43. 13; 46. 11; 47. 7; 48. 16; 60. 22. See § 109, R. 2. Occasionally the plur. seems used as a *neut.*, where *fem.* might have stood, Job 22. 21 בהם = בָּה *thereby*. Ez. 33. 18, Is. 30. 6. The passages Is. 38. 16; 64. 4 are obscure.

## NUMBER

§ 15. Of the three numbers the *dual* is now little used. On its use cf. Gr. § 16, R. a.

The plur. of compound expressions like בֵּית אָב *a father-house or clan*, גְּבוּר חַיִל *a man of valour* (wealth), is formed variously.

1. **בֵּית עֲצֻיָּהֶם** plur. of second. 1 S. 31. 9 *their idol temples*. 1 K. 12. 31, 2 K. 17. 29, 32, Mic. 2. 9, Dan. 11. 15, Ps. 120. 1, &c. **שִׁיר הַמַּעֲלֹת** ?

2. **עָרֵי הַמְּבֻצָּר** plur. of first. Jer. 8. 14 *fenced cities*, Is. 56. 6 **בְּנֵי הַנִּכְר** *strangers*, cf. v. 3. 1 S. 22. 7, 1 Chr. 5. 24; 7. 2, 9, 2 Chr. 8. 5; 14. 5.

3. **גְּבוּרֵי חַלִּים** plur. of both. Gen. 42. 35 **צָרוֹת בְּתֵי הַבָּמוֹת** *their bundles of money*. 1 K. 13. 32 **בְּתֵי הַבָּמוֹת**. 1 K. 15. 20, 2 K. 9. 1 (cf. sing. Am. 7. 14); 23. 19; 25. 23, 26, Is. 42. 22, Jer. 5. 17; 40. 7, Mic. 1. 16, 1 Chr. 5. 24; 7. 5, 7, 11, 40. Cf. Neh. 10. 37.

§ 16. Many words are used only in plur. (a) Such words as express the idea of something composed of parts, e.g. of several features, as **פָּנִים** *face*, **צוּאָרִים** *neck* (also sing.), or of tracts of space or time, **שָׁמַיִם** *heaven*, **מַיִם** *water*, **עֲבָרִים** *region on the other side*, Is. 7. 20; **חַיִּים** *life*, **עוֹלָמִים** *eternity*, Is. 45. 17, **נְצָחִים** *id.*, **נְעוּרִים** *time of youth*, **זְקֵנִים** *time of old age*, &c. Comp. **סֵפֶרִים** *a letter* (also sing.), 2 K. 20. 12, Jer. 29. 25.

(b) Abstract nouns. As **סְנוּרִים** *blindness*, **בְּתוּלִים** *virginity*, **מִישָׁרִים** *uprightness*, **כְּפָרִים** *atonement*, **זְנוּנִים** *whoredom*, **שְׁלָמִים** *requital*, **תְּהַפְּכוֹת** *perversity*, &c. The plur. in this case may express the idea of a combination of the elements or characteristics composing the thing, or of the acts realising it.

(c) The plur. of *eminence* or excellence (majesty) also expresses an intensification of the idea of the sing.; e.g. **אֱלֹהִים** *God*, and analogically **קְדוּשִׁים** *Holy One*, Hos. 12. 1, Pr. 30. 3, **עֲלִיוֹנִים** *Most High*, Dan. 7. 18; so ptc. referring to God, Is. 54. 5, Ps. 149. 2, Job 35. 10. Similar words are **אֲדֹנִים** *lord, master*, **בְּעָלִים** *owner*, cf. Is. 10. 15, Pr. 10. 26. So **תְּרָפִים** *Teraphim*, even of one image. On the consn. of such plur. cf. § 31, and § 116, R. 4.

§ 17. Many words in sing. have a collective meaning, and do duty for the plur., as בָּקָר *cattle*, צֹאן *sheep, goats*, בָּנִים *children*, רִמָּשׁ *creeping things*, עוֹף *birds*, בְּהֵמָה *cattle, beasts, &c.*, רֶכֶב *chariots*. Almost any word may be used in the sing. as collective, as אִישׁ *men*, נַפְשׁ *persons*, עֵץ *trees*, Gen. 3. 8, שׂוֹר *oxen*, Gen. 49. 6, אַרְבָּה *locusts*, עִיר *cities*, אֶבֶן *stones*. 1 K. 22. 47 הַקְדָּשׁ *hierodouli*, 2 K. 11. 10 יְרֵעָהוּ *spears* (beside a plur.), 2 K. 25. 1. 1 K. 16. 11 יְרֵעָהוּ *his comrades* (beside a plur.), 1 Chr. 20. 8. Particularly in enumerations, where the emphasis is on the number, and it is sufficient to state the *kind* or class of thing enumerated, e.g. חָלַל *slain*, 2 S. 23. 8, נְעָרָה בְּתוּלָה *young virgins*, Jud. 21. 12, מְלָךְ *kings*, 1 K. 20. 1 (more usual Jud. 1. 7), גִּפְתּוֹן *vines*, Is. 7. 23, מִשְׁל *proverbs*, 1 K. 5. 12; and expressions like עֵשָׂה מְלַחְמָה *warriors*, 2 Chr. 26. 13, רֵעָה צֹאן Gen. 47. 3, cf. 2 K. 24. 14, הַסֹּבֵל *the burden bearers*, Neh. 4. 4 (1 K. 5. 29 *rd.* perhaps סֹבֵל). It is, however, chiefly words that express *classes* of persons or things that are used in the sing., and words of *time, weight, and measure*. Cf. § 37.

Rem. 1. The plur. is quite natural in such instances as עֵצִים *timber* (pieces of wood), חִטִּים *wheat in grain*, 2 S. 17. 28 (חֵטָה *wheat in crop*, Ex. 9. 32). So שְׂעִירִים and שְׂעִירָה *barley*, &c.

Rem. 2. The plur. seems often used to heighten the idea of the sing., 1 S. 2. 3 יְדֹעוֹת *knowledge*, Jud. 11. 36 *vengeance*, 2 S. 4. 8, Is. 27. 11 *understanding*, 40. 14; Ps. 16. 11 *joy*, Ps. 49. 4; 76. 11; 88. 9 *abomination*, Pr. 28. 20, Job 36. 4. Cf. § 16b. In poetry the plur. comes to be used for sing. without difference of meaning, Gen. 49. 4 *bed* sing. and plur., 1 Chr. 5. 1, Ps. 63. 7; 46. 5; 132. 5, Job 6. 3 (seas).

Rem. 3. The plur. is sometimes used to express the idea in a general and indefinite way. Jud. 12. 7 בְּעָרֵי גִלְעָד *in* (one of) *the cities* of Gilead, 1 S. 17. 43 *staves*, 2 K. 22. 20 *thy graves*, Job 17. 1, Gen. 21. 7, Ex. 21. 22, Zech. 9. 9, Neh. 6. 2. The word דְּבָרֵי *matters of* seems to convey the same meaning, Ps. 65. 4.

Rem. 4. Such words as *hand, head, mouth, voice, &c.*, when the organ or thing is common to a number of persons, are generally used in the sing. Jud. 7. 16 put the trumpets into *the hand* of them all, v. 19, Gen. 19. 10. Jud. 7. 25 *the head* of Oreb and Zeeb, cf. 8. 28; 9. 57, Jos. 7. 6, Dan. 3. 27. Ps. 17. 10 *their mouth*, Ps. 78. 36 *tongue*, 144. 8. So to clap פָּרַף *the hands* 2 K. 11. 12, Is. 55. 12. So perhaps נִבְלָה and פָּגַר *carcases*, Is. 5. 25, 1 S. 17. 46, cf. πτώμα Rev. 11. 8. But cf. *heads* Job 2. 12, and usually *eyes*, though cf. Gen. 44. 21.

Rem. 5. The idea of universality is sometimes expressed by the use of both genders, Is. 3. 1 מִשְׁעֵן וּמִשְׁעֵנָה *every stay*, Deu. 7. 14. Also by the use of contrasted expressions, as Zech. 7. 14 וְשָׁב לֵבֶר עֹבֵר *passing or returning*, 9. 8, and the common וְעֹזֵב עֲצוּר *restrained or free*, Deu. 32. 36, 1 K. 14. 10; 21. 21, 2 K. 9. 8; 14. 26. Cf. Noeld. *Carm. Arab.* 42. 4.

Rem. 6. The coll. בָּקָר *cattle* is used in plur. Neh. 10. 37, but צֹאֲנֵינוּ is to be read in same verse. The parall. to 2 Chr. 4. 3, viz. 1 K. 7. 24, reads differently. Plur. of רֶכֶב *chariots*, Song. 1. 9. In Am. 6. 12 *rd.* perhaps יָם בְּבָקָר יָם.

#### THE CASES

§ 18. The cases are not marked by means of terminations except in rare instances. They must be supposed, however, to exist, and an accurate analysis of construction will take them into account. The cases are three, Nom., Gen., and Acc. When a word is governed by prep. לְ *to*, the dative is sometimes spoken of, and the abl. when it is governed by prep. מִן *from*, &c.; but this is inaccurate application of classical terminology.

1. *The Nom.*—The nom. has no particular termination (Gr. § 17). The personal pronouns are only used in nom., their oblique cases appearing as suffixes. The nom. is often *pendens*, being resumed by pronoun (§ 106).

2. *The Gen.*—(a) All words after a cons. state are in gen.,

as **סוּס הָאִישׁ** *the man's horse*. (b) All words governed by a prep. are in gen., as **לְרוּחַ הַיּוֹם** *at the cool of the day*; *cool* is gen. by prep., and *day* is gen. by *cool*. (c) All suffixes to nouns and prep. are to be considered in gen., as **סוּסוֹ** *his horse* (h. of him), **אַצְלָהּ** *beside her* (at the side of her). (d) Sometimes a clause assumes the place of a gen. to a preceding noun, the clause being equivalent to the infin. or *nomen actionis*. Is. 29. 1 **קָרַנְתָּ חֲנָה דָוִד** *thou city where David dwelt* (of David's dwelling).

3. *The Acc.*—There are traces of a case ending in *a*. (a) The acc. may be directly governed by a verb, **וַיִּקַּח אֶתְהָאָדָם** *he took the man*. The verbal suffixes are usually direct obj., **וַיַּנְחֵהוּ** and put *him*. (b) The acc. may be of the kind called adverbial or modal, as in designations of place, time, &c., in statements of the *condition* of subj. or obj. during an action, or in limitations of the incidence of an action, or the extent of the application of a quality (§ 70, § 24, R. 5). (c) So-called prepp. like **אַחֲרַי** *behind*, **אַצֵּל** *beside*, &c., are really nouns in this kind of acc., except when preceded by another prep., as **מֵאַחֲרַי** *from behind*, when, of course, they are in the gen. (d) Many times clauses with **כִּי** *that*, **אֲשֶׁר**, **אֶת־אֲשֶׁר** *how that*, assume the place of a virtual acc. to a preceding verb.

4. *The construct* is not a case but a state of the noun. The cons. is the governing noun in a genitive-relation; its state or difference of form from the abs. or ordinary form is due to the closeness of the connection between it and its gen. The cons. may be in any case, as **וַיְהִי הָאָרֶץ** *and the gold of that land is good*; or gen. **בְּתוֹךְ הַגֶּן** *in the midst of the garden*, where *midst* is gen. by prep.; or acc. **לְשֹׁמֵר דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים** *to keep the way of the tree of life*, where *way* is acc. after *keep*, and cons. before its gen. *tree*, &c.

The cons. occasionally ends in *i*, more rarely in *o* or *u*. In Eth. the vowel *a* marks the cons.

#### DETERMINATION. THE ARTICLE

§ 19. There is no indef. art. in Heb., the noun if indef. remains without change. Job 1. 1 **אִישׁ הָיָה** there was *a man*. 1 K. 3. 24 **קְחוּלִי חֶרֶב** fetch me *a sword*.

The predicate naturally is indeterminate and without Art. Gen. 3. 1 **הַנְּחָשׁ הָיָה עָרוֹם** the serpent was *cunning*. 2. 12, 25; 3. 6; 29. 2, 2 S. 18. 7. The inf. or *nomen actionis* retains too much of the verbal nature to admit the Art. Occasionally **הַדְּעָת** *the knowing* occurs. Gen. 2. 9, Jer. 22. 16. And *fem.* verbal nouns approach more closely the real noun, and occasionally take Art. Ps. 139. 12 **כְּחֹשֶׁכַּה כְּאוֹרָה** *the darkness* is as *the light*.

Rem. 1. The numeral **אֶחָד** *one* is sometimes used almost like an indef. art., esp. in later style. Ex. 16. 33, 1 S. 7. 9, 12, 1 K. 19. 4; 22. 9, 2 K. 7. 8; 8. 6. Or it has the sense of *a certain*; Jud. 9. 53; 13. 2, 1 S. 1. 1, 1 K. 13. 11, 2 K. 4. 1. The words **אִישׁ** *man*, **אִשָּׁה** *woman* prefixed to another term appear to express indefiniteness, **אִישׁ נְבִיא** *a prophet*, Jud. 6. 8; 4. 4, 2 S. 14. 5; 15. 16, 1 K. 3. 16; 7. 14; 17. 9. Eth. uses *man*, *woman* in the same way.

<sup>1</sup> The inflection of an Ar. noun '*abd*' "servant" may illustrate the cases.

	SING.		
	<i>Abs.</i>	<i>with Art.</i>	<i>Cons. and Gen.</i>
N.	'abdun a serv.	'el 'abdu the ser.	'abdu lmaliki the s. of the king.
G.	'abdīn	'el 'abdi	'abdi lmaliki.
A.	'abdan	'el 'abda	'abda lmaliki.
	DUAL.		
N.	'abdāni	'el 'abdāni	'abdā lmaliki.
G.A.	abdaini	'el 'abdaini	'abdāyi lmaliki.
	PLURAL.		
N.	'abdāna	'el 'abdāna	'abdā lmaliki.
G.A.	'abdīna	'el 'abdīna	'abdī lmaliki.

The regular plur. given here to '*abd*' does not exist in usage. After a vowel both the Alif and the vowel of the Art. are elided in pronunciation.

Rem. 2. The inf. לְמוֹט is probably strengthened form of לְמוֹט Ps. 66. 9; 121. 3. In 1 K. 10. 19 שָׁבַח seems a noun, Am. 6. 3. Jer. 5. 13 הַדְּבַר the Art. might be relative, either *he who* speaks, or *that which* he speaks (§ 22, R. 4), both little natural. Scarcely more likely, *the* “He has said” (the phrase they use). Sep. הַדְּבַר.

Rem. 3. In some cases the subj. and pred. are *coextensive*, and pred. has Art. Gen. 2. 11 הוּא הַפֶּלֶבֶל *it is that which goeth round*. Particularly with ptcps. Gen. 42. 6 *he was the seller*; 45. 12, Deu. 3. 21; 8. 18; 9. 3, 2 S. 5. 2, 1 Chr. 11. 2.

Rem. 4. Certain archaic terms, originally appellatives, have acquired the force of proper names, as שְׂאוֹל *hades*, הַיָּבֵל *the inhabited world*, הַיָּהוֹם *the primary ocean* (plur. with Art. Is. 63. 13, of waters of Red Sea, Ps. 106. 9), and do not take Art. And so some other terms used in poetry, which greatly dispenses with the Art., as רְיָנִים *princes*, Ps. 2. 2, אֲנָשׁ *man*, Ps. 8. 5, שָׂדֵי *field*, Ps. 8. 8, צְלָמוֹת *darkness, midnight*, Ps. 23. 4, תְּרוּשָׁה *wisdom, power*, Is. 28. 29, Job 6. 13. Also רֵאִים *wild ox*, even in a comparison, Ps. 92. 11. So the divine names עֲלִיּוֹן, שְׁדַי, אֱלֹהִים.

§ 20. Words may be determinate in themselves or from construction, and with these the Art. is not used. Words def. of themselves are—(a) *Proper* names of persons, countries, cities, rivers, &c., as יהוה *Jehovah*, מֹשֶׁה *Moses*, מוֹאָב *Moab*, צַר *Tyre*, פְּרַת *Euphrates*. (b) The personal and other pronouns, Ex. 20. 2 אֲנֹכִי יְהוָה *I am the Lord*, Gen. 29. 27 שָׁבַע זֹאת *the week of this one*, 41. 28 הוּא הַדְּבַר *that is the thing*, 3. 11 מִי הַגִּיד *who told thee?*—Words determined by construction are—nouns in the cons. state before a *definite* gen., whether this gen. be a proper name, a pron. (separate or suffix), a noun defined by Art., or itself a cons. determined by a definite gen. (Gen. 3. 24). Ru. 1. 3 בֵּית מִי אִישׁ נַעֲמִי *the husband of Naomi*. Gen. 24. 23 בֵּית מִי אַתָּה *the daughter of whom (whose d.) art thou?* 2. 25 הָאָדָם הַזֶּה *the man and his wife*. 2. 19 חַיַּת הַשָּׂדֶה *the beast of*

the field. 3. 24 דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים *the way of the tree of life*,  
6. 18 נָשִׁי בְנֵיהָ.

Rem. 1. Proper names of persons are always without the Art., and so names of peoples called after a personal ancestor, as Moab, Edom. Many names of places, rivers, &c., however, were originally appellatives and sometimes retain the Art., as הַלְבָנוֹן Lebanon (*the white mountain?*), הַיַּרְדֵּן Jordan (*the river?*), הַגִּבְעָה Gibeah (*the hill*), הַעֵי Ai (*the mound*). Usage fluctuates.

Rem. 2. The def. gen. makes the whole expression definite. But this rule seems to have exceptions, the cons. remaining indef. This is the case at any rate with prop. names, as 1 S. 4. 12 אִישׁ בְּנֵימִן *a man of Benjamin*, Josh. 7. 21 *a Babylonish garment*, Jud. 10. 1, Deu. 22. 19, and apparently in other cases, Lev. 14. 34 *a house*, Gen. 9. 20, Jer. 13. 4. It is to be assumed in general, however, that the def. gen. determines the whole expression. Thus Heb. may say הַזָּהָב *the gold* (so called generic Art. § 22), *i.e. gold*, and so Gen. 41. 42 רֶכֶת הַזָּהָב *the chain of the gold*, *i.e. a chain of gold*; the *kind* of definiteness, whatever it be, extends over the expression. Song 1. 13, 14; 4. 3. Cf. 1 S. 25. 36 מִשְׁתֵּה הַמֶּלֶךְ *the banquet of the king*, *i.e. a royal banquet*; Jud. 8. 18 *royal children*. The use of Art. fluctuates, Song 1. 11, 13.

Rem. 3. In compound proper names the Art. maintains its usual place. 1 S. 5. 1 אֶבְנֵי הָעֵזֶר Ebenezer. And so with gentilics, Jud. 6. 11, 24 אֲבִי הָעֹזִי *the Abiezrite*, 1 S. 17. 58 בֵּית הַלְחָמִי *the Bethlehemite*. 6. 14.

Rem. 4. A number of cases occur of Art. with cons. or noun with suff. (a) In some cases the text is faulty, being filled up by explanatory glosses from the marg. Gen. 24. 67 omit Sarah his mother. Jos. 3. 11 om. הַבְּרִית, so v. 14, and v. 17 בְּרִית י'. Jos. 8. 11 om. war (13. 5, cf. § 29, R. 5). Jer. 25. 26 rd. הַמְטֻלָּבוֹת *abs.* and om. earth (Sep.), Ez. 45. 16 om. earth (Sep.). Jer. 32. 12 הַמִּסְפָּר הַמִּקְנָה can hardly be appos. *the bill, the sale*; probably ungrammatical *explicitum* from marg. for *it* of Sep. 1 Chr. 15. 27 rd. probably בְּמִשְׁעָא (Berth.), cf. vv. 22, 23. 2 Chr. 8. 16 cf. Ex. 9. 18,



2 S. 19. 25. Is. 36. 8, 16 **הַמֶּלֶךְ אֲשׁוּר** is correct in 2 K. 18. 23, 31, and hardly belongs to the original text. Jer. 48. 32 **הַנֶּפֶן שְׂבִימָה** is *voc.* and perhaps protected by Lam. 2. 13 **הַיְבֵת יְרוּשָׁלַם**; otherwise Is. 16. 9.—1 S. 26. 22, 2 K. 7. 13 are corrected by Mass. More serious faults of text, 2 S. 24. 5 (Dr. *in loc.*), Ez. 46. 19, Dan. 8. 13.

(b) Jos. 13. 9 “Medeba unto Dibon” is appos. to *the Mishor*, explaining it. Ez. 47. 15 might be the way to Hethlon, cf. Hos. 6. 9, but text dubious. Gen. 31. 13 **אֲנִי הָאֵל בֵּית־אֵל** can hardly be, I am the God *at Bethel* (acc.). Cases like 2 S. 2. 32; 9. 4, &c., are not parallel, and Num. 22. 5 is no doubt to be read: the river (Euph.), *unto* the land of the children, &c. 2 K. 23. 17 (possibly **הוּא קָבַר**). 1 K. 14. 24, Art. may have slipped in mechanically after **כָּל**. Jud. 16. 14 possibly **הַיְחִיד הָאָרֶץ** being subsequent gloss. Ezr. 8. 29 perhaps **הַלְשָׁבוֹת**, “house of God” being in loose appos., and “weigh” a virtual verb of motion (carry to and weigh). Ps. 123. 4 (**לְשֹׂאנֵינוּ**? as second clause). Nu. 21. 14, 2 S. 10. 7, 1 K. 16. 24, &c., are cases of appos.

With suff. Lev. 27. 23 **הָעֵרְבֵךְ**, the phrase is technical and suff. otiose. Jos. 8. 33 **הַחֲצִיזִי** *the* (other) half of it. Is. 24. 2 **פְּנֵי־הַתְּהִיָּה** in assonance with the other words. Mic. 2. 12 possibly **הַדִּבְרֵי וְתִ**. 2 K. 15. 16 after **כָּל**. Jos. 7. 21, Pr. 16. 4, Ezr. 10. 14.

§ 21. Determination by Art.—With individual persons or things the Art. is used when they are *known*, and definite to the mind for any reason, *e.g.*—

(a) From having been already mentioned. Gen. 18. 7 **בֶּן־הַבָּקָר אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה** **וַיִּקַּח בֶּן־בָּקָר** he took *a* calf; *v.* 8 he took **בֶּן־הַבָּקָר אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה** *the* calf which he had got ready.

(b) Or from being the only one of their kind, as **הַשֶּׁמֶשׁ** *the* sun, **הַיָּרֵחַ** *the* moon; *the* earth, *the* high priest, *the* king, &c.

(c) Or, though not the only one of the class, when usage has elevated into distinctive prominence a particular individual of the class, as **הַנָּהָר** *the* river (Euphrates). **הַבַּעַל**

the lord (Baal), הַשָּׂטָן *the adversary* (Satan), Job 1. 6, Zech. 3. 1, הַיָּאֵר *the stream* (Nile, cf. Am. 8. 8, the stream of Egypt), הַכֶּכֶר *the circle* (of Jordan), הַבַּיִת *the house* (Temple), Mic. 3. 12, Ps. 30. 1, הָאֱלֹהִים *the (true) God*.

(d) Or when the person or thing is an *understood* element or feature in the situation or circumstances. Gen. 24. 20, she emptied her pail אֶל-הַשְּׂקָתָא into *the trough* (of course existing where there were flocks to water). 35. 17 וְהַאֲמָרָה הַמִּילֵּדָה and *the midwife* (naturally present) said, 38. 28. So 18. 7 *the boy*; 22. 6 *the fire* and *the knife*; 26. 8 *the window*. Ex. 2. 15 *the well* (beside every encampment). Jud. 3. 25 *the key*. 1 S. 19. 13, 2 S. 18. 24, Pr. 7. 19 *the goodman*. Eng. also uses the def. Art. in such cases; at other times it employs the unemphatic possessive pron. Gen. 24. 64, she lighted מֵעַל הַגְּמֵל *from her camel*; v. 65 she took הַצְּעִיףָהּ *her veil*; 47. 31 *his bed*. Jud. 3. 20, 2 S. 19. 27, 1 K. 13. 13, 27, 2 K. 5. 21.

(e) It is a peculiar extension of this usage when, in narratives particularly, persons or things appear definite to the imagination of the speaker—the person just from the part he played, and the thing from the use made of it. In this case Eng. uses the indef. Art. 2 S. 17. 17 וְהַלְכָה וְהַשְּׂפִיחָה וְהַגִּידָה and *a wench* always went and told them. 1 S. 9. 9 פָּה אָמַר הָאִישׁ thus spoke *a man* when he went, &c. Jos. 2. 15 וְהוֹרִידֵם בַּחֶבֶל and she let them down with *a rope*. Ex. 17. 14 כָּתַב וְזָאת בַּסֵּפֶר write this in *a book*; 1 S. 10. 25, Jer. 32. 10, Job 19. 23.—Deu. 15. 17, Ex. 21. 20 with *a rod*, Nu. 22. 27, Jos. 8. 29 on *a tree*, Jud. 4. 18 *a rug*, v. 21 *a tent-pin*, v. 19 *a milk bottle*, 6. 38 *a cupful*, 9. 48; 16. 21 (3. 31?). So probably Is. 7. 14 הָעַלְמָה *a maid*. Gen. 9. 23 *a garment* (less naturally *his*, i.e. Noah's). Deu. 22. 17, Jud. 8. 25, 1 S. 21. 10 (some passages may belong to d). So with rel. cl. Ps. 1. 1, Jer. 49. 36.

(f) The person addressed is naturally def. to the mind, and the so-called vocative often has the Art. 1 K. 18. 26 **עֲנֵנוּ הַבַּעַל** *O Baal*, hear us! 2 K. 9. 5 **אֵלֶיךָ הָשָׁר** unto thee, *Captain!* Jud. 6. 12 **יְעֻמָּה גִבּוֹר הַחַיִל** Je. is with thee, *O man of valour.* Jud. 3. 19, 1 S. 17. 58, 2 S. 14. 4, Hos. 5. 1, Jer. 2. 31, Is. 42. 18, Jo. 1. 2, Zech. 3. 8. The noun with Art. is probably in appos. to *thou, ye* understood. Cf. Job 19. 21, Mal. 3. 9, Mic. 1. 2.—2 K. 9. 31, Is. 22. 16; 47. 8; 54. 1, 11, Zeph. 2. 12.

Rem. 1. In such cases as **הַיּוֹם** *to-day*, **הַלַּיְלָה** *to-night*, **הַפַּעַם** *this time*, Gen. 2. 23, **הַשָּׁנָה** *this year* Jer. 28. 16, the definiteness is due to the fact that the times belong to the speaker's present and are before him. Jud. 13. 10 **בַּיּוֹם** *that* (a former) *day* is defined by the circumstance that occurred on it.

Rem. 2. To *e* belongs the phrase **וַיְהִי הַיּוֹם** occurring 1 S. 1. 4; 14. 1, 2 K. 4. 8, 11, 18, Job 1. 6, 13; 2. 1. Probably: and it fell *on a day* (lit. *the day*, viz. that on which it fell, &c.). Others make **הַיּוֹם** *subj.*, and *the day was*, i.e. there fell *a day*. The vav impf. following is less natural on this view, but the explanation of Art. is the same.—Gen. 28. 11 *a place* prob. belongs to *e*; it is hardly *heilige Stätte* (like Ar. maqam) either here or 2 K. 5. 11.

§ 22. It is on the same principle as in § 21 that classes of persons, creatures, or things have the Art. The classes are *known* just from the fact of their having distinct characteristics. But, further, in such cases the individual possesses all the characteristics which distinguish the class, and the class is seen in any individual. Hence the use of the *sing.* is common.

(a) The sing. of gentile nouns is so used, as Gen. 13. 7 **הַכְּנַעֲנִי** *the Canaanite*, 15. 21. Of course also the plur. with Art., rarely without, though **פְּלִשְׁתִּים** *Philistines*, is more common; cf. 2 S. 21. 12.

(b) So adjectives and ptcps., as **הַצְדִּיק** *the righteous*,

הַרְשָׁע *the wicked*. Ptcp., Jos. 8. 19 הַאֲוִיב *the ambush*, 1 S. 13. 17 הַפְּלִיט *the active warriors*, Gen. 14. 13 הַפְּלִיט *the fugitive* (if these do not belong to § 21 *e*, and be defined by the action they perform). The Art. is frequently omitted in poetry. Here also *plur.* is common. Ps. 1. 4–6.

(*c*) The various classes of creatures, as Gen. 8. 7 הָעֵרֵב *a raven*, *v.* 8 *a dove*. Esp. in comparisons. Jud. 14. 6 כְּשֹׁפֵעַ הַגְּדִי as one rends *a kid*. 2 S. 17. 10 כְּלֵב הָאֲרִיָּה like the heart of *a lion*. Ps. 33. 17 שְׁקֵר לְתַשׁוּעָה *a horse* is vain for deliverance. So Ecc. 7. 26 הָאִשָּׁה *a woman* (*i.e.* women). 1 S. 26. 20 *a partridge*, Jud. 7. 5 as *a dog* laps, 1 S. 17. 34, Am. 3. 12; 5. 19. 2 K. 8. 13 מָה עֲבָדָה הַכֶּלֶב what is thy servant, *the dog* (thy dog of a s.)?

(*d*) So other well-known objects, such as the precious metals and stones, and, in general, any well-known article, though usage fluctuates here; Gen. 2. 11 אֲשֶׁר שָׁם הַזָּהָב where there is *gold*. Am. 2. 6, Gen. 13. 2, 2 Chron. 2. 13, 14. Gen. 11. 3 *the brick, the asphalt, the mortar*. 1 K. 10. 27, Is. 28. 7.

(*e*) And, in general, in comparisons—the thing to which comparison is made naturally being known and distinct before the mind. Is. 1. 18 אֲסִיְהוּי הַמַּאֲיֶכֶם כְּשָׁנִים כְּשֶׁלֶג if your sins be *like crimson*, they shall be white *like snow*. 10. 14 וְתִמְצָא בְּקֶן יָדַי *and my hand hath found like a nest* the wealth of the nations. Nu. 11. 12, Jud. 16. 9, 1 K. 14. 15, 2 S. 17. 3, Hos. 6. 4, Deu. 1. 44, Is. 34. 4; 51. 8; 53. 6, 7, Mic. 4. 12. See the exx. in *c*.

Rem. 1. Any object or thing well known receives the Art., *e.g.* affections or diseases, Gen. 19. 11 הַפְּטוּרִים *blindness*, Zech. 12. 4 *madness*, &c., 2 S. 1. 9 הַשִּׁבְזָן *dizziness*? Lev. 13. 12 *leprosy*. So plagues, calamities, as *blasting, mildew*, &c. Am. 4. 9, Hag. 2. 17, Deu. 28. 21, 22, cf. Ex. 5. 3, 2 K. 6. 18. So moral qualities as *faithfulness* Is. 11. 5, &c. Also physical elements as *fire* in the frequent *burn*

בַּאֵשׁ *with fire*, &c.; *darkness* Is. 9. 1. In all these cases, however, usage fluctuates, the Art. being most frequent with prefixed prep.

Rem. 2. In comparisons use of Art. fluctuates. But generally: when the thing to which comparison is made stands simply the Art. is used (see exx. in § 22 *e*); and so when a clause follows which merely states or explains the point in the comparison, Ps. 1. 4; 49. 13, Is. 61. 10, 11, Hos. 6. 4. But when an epithet or clause is added which describes the object not generally but in a particular aspect or condition, the Art. is not used. Is. 13. 14; 16. 2; 29. 5; 41. 2, Hos. 2. 5; 4. 16. The usage fluctuates particularly in poetry.

Rem. 3. Poetry often omits Art. where prose would use it, Ps. 2. 2, 8, 10 מְלִכֵי אֶרֶץ kings of *the earth*, 72. 17 לְפָנֵי שֶׁמֶשׁ before *the sun*, v. 5, 7. So in archaic or semi-poetical phrases like *earth and heaven* Gen. 2. 4, Ps. 148. 13, Gen. 14. 19; *beast of the earth* Gen. 1. 24, cf. Ps. 50. 10; 104. 11, 20, Is. 56. 9. In prose also the Art. is omitted with expressions familiar, Ex. 27. 21 אֹהֶל מוֹעֵד *tent of meeting* (as we say "to church," cf. John 6. 59 ἐν συναγωγῇ), 1 K. 16. 16 שׂר צָבָא *commander in chief*. So *king*, 1 K. 21. 10, 13 to curse God *and king*, cf. 1 K. 16. 18, Am. 7. 13. Gen. 24. 11 לְעֵת עֶרְבַּי at *evening time*, Deu. 11. 12 to *year's end*, 4. 47. Also such words as *head, hand, foot, face, mouth*. Is. 37. 22 shake אִשׁ the *head*, Mic. 7. 16 יָרַע יָדַי put *the hand upon the mouth*. Job 21. 5, Pr. 11. 21; 16. 5. Gen. 32. 31 *face to face*, Nu. 12. 8 *mouth to mouth*. 2 S. 23. 6 בְּיָד with *the hand*, Is. 28. 2, Neh. 13. 21, 2 Chr. 25. 20. Is. 1. 6 from *foot-sole to head*. Jer. 2. 27 to turn לְעָרְף the *back*. The words *heart, soul, eyes*, &c., when in gen. by an adj., usually want the Art. Ps. 7. 11 upright *of heart*. Is. 24. 7, Ps. 95. 10 (Deu. 20. 6 Art.). Ps. 101. 5, Job 3. 20, Jud. 18. 25, cf. Ps. 37. 14, Job 30. 25.

In particular the word כָּל before such words without Art. may mean *all, the whole*. Is. 1. 5 כָּל-רֹאשׁ the *whole head*, 9. 11 the *whole mouth*, 2 K. 23. 3 the *whole heart* . . . *soul*, Ez. 36. 5. And even in other cases, Is. 28. 8 *all tables*. So phrases like כָּל-חַיִּי *all living*, כָּל-בָּשָׂר *all flesh*.—The phrase

פְּעֻלֵי אֵת is usually anarthrous (Ps. 125. 5 Art.). And certain terms are used with a kind of technical brevity, *e.g.* גְּבֻלַּת *boundary*, Jos. 13. 23, *breadth*, &c. (in measurements), 2 Chr. 3. 3. So "gate," "court," &c. (§ 32, R. 2). Cf. Mal. 1. 10, 11.

Rem. 4. In later writings particularly the Art. is used like a rel. pron., as subj. or obj. to a verb and with prep. Jos. 10. 24, 1 Chr. 26, 28; 29, 8. 17, 2 Chr. 1. 4 (older usage Jud. 5. 27, Ru. 1. 16), 29. 36, Ezr. 8. 25; 10. 14, 17 (Jud. 13. 8 might be ptc. without *m.*). Ez. 26. 17 also as accented is perf.

The art. with ptc. is usual (§ 99), and a number of cases accented as perf. of ע'י verbs are certainly *fem. ptc.*, however the accentuation is to be explained, *e.g.* Gen. 18. 21 their cry הִבָּאתָ *which is come*; 46. 27, Is. 51. 10, Ru. 1. 22; 4. 3. Gen. 21. 3 הַנּוֹלֵד לוֹ is ptc. 1 K. 11. 9, Is. 56. 3 are also probably ptcps., and should be so pointed, unless the pointing is to be explained as following the type of ל'א verb, cf. 1 K. 17. 14 הַבָּלֵה. Dan. 8. 1 being late is doubtful. 1 S. 9. 24 for הָעֵלְיָהּ *that which is upon it, rd.* probably הָאֵלְיָהּ *the (fat) tail* (Hitz. הָעֵלְיָהּ as imp. hiph.?). Jos. 10. 24 is anomalous in spelling, and possibly should be read הַהֶלְלָבִים.—Ar. occasionally joins Art. to finite verb, the ass *alyujadda'u which has its ears cut off*. Of course it is said that Art. is for alladhi the rel.

#### THE GENITIVE. CONSTRUCT

§ 23. In the compound expression formed by the Gen. and the preceding cons. state, as בֶּן־הַמֶּלֶךְ *the son of the king*, the first word is hurriedly passed over, and consequently shortened where possible (Gr. § 17), and the accent falls on the last half of the expression. The first half of the expression is called in Oriental grammar *the annexed*, the second half *that to which annexion is made*, and the relation between them *annexion*.

The gen. may be a noun (subst. or adj.), a pronoun, or a clause. The cons. must be a noun (subst. or adj.). The use

of the gen. is very wide. It expresses almost any relation between two nouns, corresponding often to the semi-adjectival use of nouns in our own language, as tree-fruit, fruit-tree, seed-corn, water-pot, except that the order of words is reversed, fruit of tree, tree of fruit, &c. The gen. may be said to be either gen. of the *subject* or gen. of the *object*, and this distinction applies to pron. suffixes, which are also in the gen. Gen. 27. 41 יְמֵי אָבְלִי אָבִי the days of mourning for my father; 3. 24 דֶּרֶךְ עֵץ הַחַיִּים the way to the tree of life; 42. 19 שֶׁבֶר רַעְבוֹן בְּתֵיכֶם corn (needful) for the famine of your houses; 2 S. 8. 10 אִישׁ מִלְחָמוֹת תַּעֲנִי engaged in wars with *Toi*; Is. 9. 6 קִנְיַת יְהוָה יִקְעֶשֶׂה-זֹאת the zeal of Je. will do this; 26. 11 יִהְיוּ קִנְיַת-עַם they shall see thy zeal for the people (Ps. 69. 10). Gen. 16. 5 חֲמָסִי חַמְסִי עָלַי my wrong (that done me) be on thee; 29. 13 שִׂמְעַתְּ הַיְיָ the news about Jacob (2 S. 4. 4). Is. 32. 2 סֶתֶר זֶרֶם a covert from the rain. Ps. 60. 10 סִיר רַחֲצִי מוֹאָב Moab is my wash-pot. Is. 56. 7 בֵּית תְּפִלָּתִי my house of prayer. Gen. 44. 2 נֶסֶף שֶׁבֶרֹוּ his corn-money. Gen. 18. 20, Is. 23. 5, Am. 8. 10, Ob. 10, Hab. 2. 17.

Rem. 1. The gen. of the subject may be (a) the *possessor* of any object, as Jer. 7. 4 יְהוָה יִכַּל יְהוָה the temple of Je.; Gen. 4. 1 אִשְׁתּוֹ his wife. (b) The *subject* to which any quality or attribute belongs, 1 K. 5. 10 חֲכֵמָה שְׁלֵמָה the wisdom of Solomon; 10. 9 אֶהְבֵּהּ the love of Je. (c) The *agent* in any action, especially after *pass. ptcp.*, Is. 53. 4 מִבְּהֵמַת אֱלֹהִים stricken of God; or the *instrument*, Is. 22. 2 לֹא חָלְלֵי חֶרֶב וְלֹא מֵחַבְרֵת מָלְחָמָה not slain by the sword nor dead through war. Cf. on Particip. § 98. The gen. of the object is the converse of this, and may be: (a) the *possession* of a possessor, Gen. 42. 30 אֲרִנִּי הָאָרֶץ the lord of the country. (b) The *quality* or attribute belonging to any subject, 1 K. 20. 31 מְלָכֵי חֶסֶד kings of clemency, Is. 30. 18 אֱלֹהֵי מִשְׁפָּט a God of justice. (c) The *object* of any action, particularly after active *ptcp.*,

Isa. 5. 18 מְשִׁבֵי הָעוֹן *dragging on iniquity*, v. 23 מְצַדִּיקֵי רָשָׁע *justifying the wicked*.

§ 24. The genius of the language is not favourable to the formation of adjectives, and the gen. is used in various ways as explicative of the preceding noun, indicating its material, qualities, or relations. (a) When the gen. is identical with the cons., merely expressing for ex. its name, as Gen. 2. 15 גַּן־עֵדֶן the *garden of Eden*; 15. 18 נְהַר־פָּרָת the *river of Euphrates*; Is. 41. 14 תוֹלַעַת יַעֲקֹב thou *worm* (of) *Jacob*; Is. 37. 22 בַּת יְרוּשָׁלַם the *daughter of Jerus.* Or the class to which it belongs, Is. 9. 5 פֶּלֶא יוֹעֵץ a *wonder of a counsellor*; Hos. 13. 2 זִבְחֵי אָדָם *men who sacrifice*; Gen. 16. 12 פָּרָא אָדָם a *wild ass of man*; Is. 1. 4 זֶרַע מְרַעִים a *race of malefactors*. 1 K. 10. 15, Is. 29. 19, Mic. 5. 4, Pr. 15. 20, 2 Chr. 2. 7.

(b) When the gen. is the *material*; Gen. 24. 22 נֶזֶב זָהָב a *ring of gold*; Ex. 20. 24 מִזְבֵּחַ אֲרָמֶה an *altar of earth*. Gen. 3. 21, Jud. 7. 13, 1 K. 6. 36, Is. 2. 20, Ps. 2. 9. Or the *commodity* or article in measure, weight, or number, Jud. 6. 19 אֵיפֶת קֹמַח an *ephah of meal*, Gen. 21. 14, 1 S. 16. 20; 17. 17, Hos. 3. 2.—The consn. by Apposition is very common in this case, § 29. See also the Numerals, §§ 36, 37.

(c) When the gen. is an *attribute* or quality, 1 K. 20. 31 מְלִכֵי חָסֵד *clement kings*; Jud. 11. 1 גִּבּוֹר חַיִל a *valiant hero*; Lev. 19. 36 מֵאֻנֵי צֶדֶק *right balances*; Is. 43. 28 שָׂרֵי קֹדֶשׁ *holy princes*, and very often in later writings. Or more generally: Is. 51. 11 שְׂמֵחַת עוֹלָם *everlasting joy*; Zech. 11. 4 צֹאן הַקְּרָגָה the *flock (destined) for slaughter*; Is. 13. 3 גִּבּוֹרֵי גִּבּוֹרֵי עֵלְיָי my *proud exulters* (Zeph. 3. 11). Is. 13. 8; 22. 2; 28. 4; 32. 2, Ex. 29. 29, Ps. 5. 7; 23. 2, Pr. 1. 9; 5. 19, Zeph. 3. 4. Jer. 20. 17 *with child always*.—The equivalence of this gen. to the adj. appears from the loose constructions, Deu. 25. 15 אָבֵן שְׁלֵמָה וְצֶדֶק a *full and right*



weight; 1 S. 30. 22 **כָּל אִישׁ רָע וּבְלִיעֵל** every *bad* and *worthless* man.

(d) Under the explicative gen. may also be classed the gen. of restriction or specification. Adj. and ptcp. are construed with a gen. which specifies the extent or point of their application: Is. 6. 5 **אִישׁ מְמֵא־שִׁפְתָיו** a man *unclean of lips*; Ex. 32. 9 **עַם־קִשְׁה־עַרְףָּה הוּא** they are a *stiffnecked people*; Gen. 24. 16 **וְהַנְּעֵר טוֹבַת מְרָאָה מְאֹד** and the girl was *very pretty*; 2 S. 9. 13 **פָּסַח שְׁתֵּי רַגְלָיו** lame *in his two feet*; 1 S. 25. 3 **הָאִשָּׁה טוֹבַת שְׂכָל וַיִּפֹּת תְּאֵר וְהָאִישׁ רָע מְעַלְלִים** the woman was *of great discretion*, and *beautiful in form*, but the man was *evil in his doings*. Gen. 12. 11; 26. 7; 29. 17; 39. 6; 41. 2-6, Ex. 4. 10; 6. 12, Deu. 9. 6, 13, Jud. 3. 15; 18. 25, 1 S. 2. 5; 22. 2, 2 S. 4. 4, Is. 1. 4, 30; 3. 3; 19. 10; 20. 4 (*rd.* חֲשׂוּפֵי); 29. 24; 54. 6, Am. 2. 16, Ps. 24. 4, Job 3. 20; 9. 4, Lam. 1. 1, Song 5. 8.

Rem. 1. The gen. of material, a ring *of gold*, is not *partitive*, but explicative—a ring which is gold.

Rem. 2. The gen. of *quality*, &c., forms along with its cons. a single conception, hence the suff. goes to the gen. Ps. 2. 6 **הַר קָדְשִׁי** *my holy hill*, Deu. 1. 41, Is. 2. 20; 9. 3; 30. 22; 31. 7; 64. 9, 10, Zeph. 3. 11, Job 18. 7. Cf. § 27.

Rem. 3. The gen. of attribute or quality is very common with certain nouns, **אִישׁ**, **אִשָּׁה** *man, woman*, **בֵּן**, **בַּת** *son, daughter*, **בַּעַל** *owner, possessor*. Ex. 4. 10 **אִישׁ דְּבָרִים** a *good speaker*, Job 11. 2 **שֹׁפְתִים** a *babbler*, 2 S. 16. 7 **דָּמִים** a *bloodshedder*, Pr. 25. 24 **אִשָּׁת מְרִינִים** a *brawling woman*. Gen. 9. 20; 25. 27, 2 S. 18. 20, 1 K. 2. 26, Ps. 140. 12.—Pr. 11. 16; 12. 4; 12. 19; 28. 5; 29. 1, 8, Ru. 3. 11, Zeph. 3. 4.

1 S. 14. 52 **בֶּן־חַיִל** *mighty man*, 26. 16 **בְּנֵי מוֹחַ** *deserving death*, 1. 16 **בַּת בְּלִיעֵל** a *worthless person*. Nu. 17. 25, Deu. 3. 18, Jud. 18. 2, 2 S. 3. 34, 2 K. 14. 14, Is. 5. 1; 14. 12, Jer. 48. 45, Jon. 4. 10, Job 5. 7; 28. 8.—Mic. 4. 14, Mal. 2. 11, Ecc. 12. 4. And in stating *age*, 1 S. 4. 15 **בֶּן־חֲשׂוּפֵי** *98 years old*. Gen. 50. 26, Nu. 32. 11, Josh. 24. 29, Jud. 2. 8, Gen. 17. 17.

Gen. 37. 19  $\text{בְּעַל הַחֲלֹמוֹת}$  the *dreamer*, 2 K. 1. 8  $\text{ב' שֵׁעָר}$  *hairy*, Pr. 23. 2  $\text{ב' גִּפְשׁ}$  of *large appetite*. Gen. 14. 13, Ex. 24. 14, Is. 41. 15; 50. 8 (adversary), Jer. 37. 13, Nah. 1. 2, Pr. 18. 9; 22, 24; 24. 8, Neh. 6. 18, Ecc. 7. 12, Dan. 8. 6 (*two-horned*).—1 S. 28. 7, 1 K. 17. 17, Nah. 3. 4.—In 2 S. 1. 6  $\text{פָּרָשִׁים}$  seems to mean *war-horses*, but cf. Dr. or Well. on v. 18.

Rem. 4. Adverbs and particles being really nouns may stand virtually in the gen., 1 K. 2. 31  $\text{הַנֶּגֶם הַיָּמִי}$  *causeless* bloodshed, Nu. 29. 6  $\text{עֹלֹת הַחֲמִיד}$  the *continual* burnt-offering, Ez. 39. 14,  $\text{אֲנָשֵׁי ח'}$ , Deu. 26. 5  $\text{כְּתִי כְּעֵט}$  a *few* men, Jer. 13. 27  $\text{כְּתִי אַחֲרַי}$  after *how long*. 2 S. 24. 24, Hab. 2. 19, Ez. 30. 16 (if read. right). And of course such particles as  $\text{אִי}$ ,  $\text{בְּלִתִּי}$  &c. may themselves take a gen. after them.

Rem. 5. The consn. in (*d*) is the usual one in Heb., of the type *integer vitæ*; the *acc.* of limitation after adj. and ptcp. is uncommon, e.g. Is. 40. 20  $\text{הַמֵּסֵבֵן תְּרוּמָה}$  he who is poor *in oblation*, Job 15 10  $\text{יָמִים מֵאַבְיָד}$  older *in days*. But this is not liked, cf. 30. 1 younger  $\text{לְיָמִים}$  *in days*, so 32. 4. The prep.  $\text{ב}$  is generally used of members of the body (Am. 2. 15) when the *gen.* is not employed, cf. Ps. 125. 4 (Pr. 17. 20). Cf. § 71, R. 3. Ar. on the other hand regards this gen. as *improper* (unreal) annexion, being substitute for *acc.* of limitation.

Rem. 6. Proper names are occasionally followed by a gen., as Ur of the Chaldees Gen. 11. 31, Aram of the two rivers Gen. 24. 10, Gath of the Philistines Am. 6. 2, Gibeah of Saul Is. 10. 29, Mizpeh of Gilead Jud. 11. 29, &c. Most proper names were originally appellatives, and in other cases there were several places of the same name, but in such a case as *Zion of the Holy One* of Israel Is. 60. 14, the last fact does not apply, and the first had certainly been long forgotten. Cf. *thy sun* v. 20, Jer. 15. 9, Nu. 31. 12, Ezr. 3. 7. Most languages so construe proper names. Wright, Ar. Gr. ii. § 79.

The common  $\text{צְבָאוֹת}$  is probably brevilouquence for  $\text{אֱלֹהֵי צ'}$  2 S. 5. 10, Am. 3. 13 and often.

§ 25. A clause may occasionally take the place of the gen. Such a clause will be what we call relative (in Heb.

rel. or descriptive), particularly in designations of *time* and *place*: Gen. 40. 3 מְקוֹם אֲשֶׁר יוֹסֵף אָסוּר שָׁם *the place where* J. was confined; Is. 29. 1 קְרִיַת חֲנָה דָּוִד *thou city where* D. dwelt; 1 S. 25. 15 כָּל-יְמֵי הַתְּהַלֵּכְנוּ אִתָּם *all the days* we were conversant with them; Ex. 4. 13 שְׁלַח-נָא בְיַד-הַשְּׁלַח *send by the hand of him* whom thou wilt send (send by means of some one else); 6. 28 בְּיוֹם דְּבָר יְהוּה *on the day* Je. spoke. Gen. 39. 20, Deu. 32. 35, 2 S. 15. 21, 1 K. 21. 19, Jer. 22. 12; 36. 2; 48. 36, Hos. 1. 2; 2. 1, Ps. 4. 8; 18. 1; 56. 4, 10; 59. 17; 65. 5; 81. 6; 90. 15; 102. 3; 104. 8; 137. 8, 9; 138. 3; 146. 5, Pr. 8. 32, Lev. 13. 46; 14. 46, Nu. 3. 1; 9. 18, Job 6. 17, 2 Chr. 29. 27.

§ 26. In annexion the determining *Art.* is prefixed to the gen. Both members of the expression are usually indef. when the *Art.* is wanting, and both usually def. when it is present. Gen. 42. 30 אֲדֹנָי הָאָרֶץ *the lord of the country*; 24. 22 נֶזֶם זָהָב *a ring of gold*. Of course proper names and all pron., whether separate or suffixal, are def. of themselves. § 20. A number of constructs may follow one another, each depending on the one after it as its gen. Gen. 47. 9 יְמֵי שָׁנֵי אֲבֹתַי *the days of the years of the lives of my fathers*; 1 K. 2. 5 לְשְׁנֵי שָׂרֵי צְבָאוֹת יִשְׂרָאֵל *to the two captains of the hosts of Is.* Gen. 41. 10, Lev. 10. 14, Nu. 6. 13, Josh. 4. 5, 2 K. 10. 6, Is. 10. 12; 21. 17, 1 Chr. 9. 13 (if חֵיל be read. Perhaps ל has fallen out before מַלְאכָת).

§ 27. As in annexion the two members form a single expression, nothing (except the *Art.* to the gen. and the ה of direction to the cons.) can come between them. (a) An adj. qualifying either of the members must stand outside the expression. Jo. 3. 4 יוֹם הַגָּדוֹל *the great day* of the Lord, Gen. 27. 15 בְּגָדֵי עֵשָׂו בְּנֵה הַגָּדֹל הַחֲמֹדוֹת *the best garments of her elder son* Esau; Gen. 10. 21 אֲחֵי יֶפֶת הַגָּדוֹל *the elder brother* of Japheth; 44. 14 וַיָּבֵא בֵיתָהּ יוֹסֵף *he came to the*

house of J.; 28. 2; 43. 17; 46. 1, Deu. 4. 41, 1 K. 19. 15.—  
Deu. 3. 24; 11. 7; 1 S. 25. 25, Is. 36. 9.

(b) For the same reason not more than one cons. can stand before the same gen. For ex. *the sons and daughters of the man* cannot be expressed thus: **בְּנֵי וּבָנוֹת הָאִישׁ**, because the form **בְּנֵי**, not being dependent, is without reason. Various forms are adopted. (1) **בְּנֵי הָאִישׁ וּבָנוֹתָיו**. (2) **הַבָּנוֹת וְהַבָּנוֹת**. (3) **בְּנֵי הָאִישׁ וְהַבָּנוֹת**. The first is lightest and most usual. Gen. 41. 8 *the magicians of Eg. and her wise men* (=the mag. and wise men of E.), Jud. 8. 14 *the princes of Succoth and her elders* (=the pr. and el. of S.). The second is occasional. Gen. 40. 1 **מִשְׁקָה וְהָאֹפֶה** *the butler of the king of E. and the baker*; Ps. 64. 7 **עֲמֹק וְלֵב אִישׁ וְקָרֵב אִישׁ וְלֵב עֲמֹק** *the breast of each and the heart is deep*. The third, circumscription of gen. by prep. **ל**, is common, and gains ground in the later stages of the language. Gen. 40. 5 **הַמִּשְׁקָה וְהָאֹפֶה אֲשֶׁר לְמֶלֶךְ מִן־מִצְרָיִם**.—This circumscription must be had recourse to also when the first member of a gen. relation is to be preserved indef., the second being def. 1 S. 16. 18 **בֶּן לְיֵשׁוּעַ** *a son of Jesse*; cf. 20. 27 **בֶּן-יֵשׁוּעַ** *the son of Jesse* (David), 1 K. 2. 39 **שְׁנֵי עֲבָדִים לְשִׁמְעִי** *two slaves of Shimei*, Gen. 41. 12. See more fully Rem. 5, below.

§ 28. Such words as **כָּל** *all*, **רַב** *multitude, many*, are nouns, and are followed by gen. Gen. 8. 9 **כָּל-הָאָרֶץ** *all (of) the earth*, Ps. 51. 3 **רַב רַחֲמֶיךָ** *according to thy many mercies*. So the numerals. Gen. 40. 12 **שְׁלֹשַׁת יָמִים** *three days*. See § 29 Apposition, and § 36 *seq.* Numerals. On Adj. in gen. by their noun, cf. § 32, R. 5.

Rem. 1. The cons. before a clause (§ 25) is scarcely a mere *formal* shortening of the word due to the closeness of connexion. It has syntactical meaning, the clause being equivalent to inf. cons. with suff.; e.g. 1 S. 25. 15 = **כְּלִימִי**

הַתְּהַלְלֶנּוּ (Pr. 6. 22), Ps. 4. 8 = מעת רב דנגם (Hos. 4. 7; 10. 1, Deu. 7. 7). In other cases there is om. of rel. pr.

More like a mere formal shortening is the use of the cons. before prepp. In poetry and the higher style chiefly the ptcps. (and nouns) of verbs that govern by a prep. are put in cons. before the prep. The real consn. in this case is by prep. and the cons. is secondary, as appears from Jud. 8. 11 מִשְׁבִּימִי בַבְּקָר 11 (so Sep.) with *Art.* — Is. 5. 11 מִשְׁבִּימִי בַבְּקָר 11; 9. 2 שְׂמַחַת בַּקְצִיר 2; 28. 9 נִמְוִלִי מִחֶלֶב 9, Jud. 5. 10, 2 S. 1. 21, Is. 14. 19; 56. 10 (inf.), Jer. 8. 16, Ez. 13. 2, Ps. 2. 12, Job 24. 5.

The few cases of shortening before *vav copul.* seem due to assonance, Ez. 26. 10 (cf. Jer. 4. 29), Is. 33. 6, or to the ear being accustomed to the cons. form before words closely connected, Is. 35. 2. In Is. 51. 21 the coming word יין seems to influence the preceding “drunken.” Jer. 33. 22 מִשְׁרָתִי אֶתִי is altogether anomalous (cf. *v.* 21); Hag. 2. 17.

Rem. 2. On indef. cons. before def. gen. cf. § 20, R. 2.

Rem. 3. Sometimes an adj. is used nominally and brought within the chain of constructs. Is. 28. 16, a corner-stone יְקִרַת of *preciousness* of a foundation; perhaps *v.* 1, 4 flower נֵבֶל of a *faded-thing* (faded flower), Jer. 4. 11 *wind of dryness*. In some cases the Abs. seems retained in a phrase. Is. 28. 1 נִיא שְׂמֹנִים הַלְוִי יין *the fat valley* of those stricken down of wine; *v.* 3 נִאוֹת. Ps. 68. 22, Pr. 21. 6? Text is doubtful, Is. 63. 11, the words “Moses,” “his people,” being wanting in Sep. Ez. 6. 11 רְיֹתָו wanting in Sep. Is. 32. 13 קְרִיָה עֲלֵיָהּ may be loose subord. in acc. On Is. 19. 8, cf. Rem. 1.—The consn. 2 S. 1. 9, בַּל עוֹר נִפְטָי בִּי (Job 27. 3, Hos. 14. 3), where בַּל seems separated from its gen., is uncertain. The בַּל appears rather to be used adverbially, *wholly, in whole*, cf. Ecc. 5. 15 (Ps. 39. 6; 45. 14) and the Chald. בַּל קַבֵּל דַּן Dan. 2. 8, 41, &c.

Rem. 4. An instance of two cons. before a gen. is Ez. 31. 16, but Sep. wants וְטוֹב. Dan. 1. 4 is scarcely an ex., cf. Is. 29. 12. Occasionally the first word seems to stand loosely in Abs., Is. 55. 4; less necessarily 53. 3, 4. In the broader or emphatic style, when one cons. would be followed by several gen., it is repeated before each. Gen. 24. 3, *God of heaven and God of earth*; 11. 29; 14. 13, Jos.

24. 2, though usage fluctuates, Gen. 14. 22; 28. 5, Ex. 3. 6, 16 with 4. 5, 1 K. 18. 36. There is nothing unusual in several gen. after one cons. Deu. 5. 19; 8. 8; 32. 19, Jud. 1. 7, 9, Is. 1. 11, 28; 37. 3; 64. 10, Ps. 5. 7, Pr. 3. 4. On the other hand Deu. 8. 7, 15, &c., are ex. of loose rhetorical accumulation of terms. Cf. Deu. 3. 5, 1 K. 4. 13.

Rem. 5. Circumscription of the gen. is used: 1. When it is needful to preserve the indefiniteness of first word. 1 S. 16. 18 לְיֵשׁוּ בֶן a son of Jesse, 1 S. 17. 8, 1 K. 2. 39, Gen. 41. 12, Nu. 25. 14, Song 8. 1. Similarly the so-called ל of authorship, לְדָוִד a psalm of D., or simply לְדָוִד by David. 2. When it is desired to retain for the first noun the somewhat greater distinctiveness given by the Art. Gen. 25. 6; 29. 9; 47. 4, Jud. 6. 25, 1 S. 21. 8, 1 K. 4. 2, 2 K. 5. 9, Ps. 116. 15; 118. 20. 3. When it is necessary to retain a definite designation or expression in its completeness. 1 K. 15. 23 סֵפֶר הַכְּתוּבִים הַמְּלִכִּי יְהוָה the book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah, 2 K. 11. 4 הַמְּצֻרִים the centurions, Ru. 2. 3 חֵלקַת הַשָּׂדֶה הַזֶּה לְבִעֹז the field-portion (property) of Boaz, 2 S. 23. 11 הַשָּׂדֶה הַזֶּה (piece of country); cf. 2 K. 9. 25, Nu. 27. 16; 30. 2, Gen. 41. 43, Jos. 19. 51, 2 S. 2. 8, 2 Chr. 8. 10. Sometimes also with words not declinable, as *Tera- phim* Gen. 31. 19. And in general to express the gen. relation of, *belonging to*, in consns. where the *case* could not be used. Am. 5. 3 of, in, the house of Isr., 1 K. 14. 13, Jer. 22. 4, Am. 9. 1, Ezr. 10. 14, 1 Chr. 3. 1, 5; 7. 5. 4. For the same reason the circumscription is usual in dates and with numerals. Gen. 7. 11 in the 600 year נַח לְחַיֵּי of the life of N., 1 K. 3. 18 בְּיוֹם הַשְּׁלִישִׁי לְלִדְתִּי לְדָוִד, Gen. 16. 3, 1 K. 14. 25, and often. Cf. on dates, § 38c. The circums. occurs, however, without significance and gains in later style, Ps. 123. 4, 1 S. 20. 40, Jer. 12. 12 חֶרֶב לַיהוָה the sword of Je. 5. The gen. suff. is circumscribed in the same way, perhaps with some emphasis. 1 K. 1. 33 הַמְּדֻרָה אֲשֶׁר לִי my mule; cf. v. 38, Ru. 2. 21, Lam. 1. 10, cf. 3. 44. So the curious לִי אִשָּׁה my wife (a w. of mine) 2 Chr. 8. 11. After suff. Song 1. 6 בְּרִמְיִי שְׂפֵלִי my own vineyard, Ps. 132. 11, 12.

Rem. 6. A noun in appos. with a cons. is sometimes attracted into construction. 1 S. 28. 7 אִשָּׁת בַּעֲלַת אוֹב a woman

possessing an Ob. Is. 23. 12; 37. 22 בְּתוּלַת בַּת צִיּוֹן *the virgin, the daughter of Zion*. Jer. 14. 17, Deu. 21. 11. And sometimes a noun in cons. is suspended by being repeated before its gen., or by the interposition of a synonym in appos. Gen. 14. 10 בְּאֲרוֹת בְּאֲרוֹת חֶמֶר *pits, pits of bitumen*. Nu. 3. 47, Deu. 33. 19, Jud. 5. 22; 19. 22, 2 S. 20. 19, 2 K. 10. 6; 17. 13 (Kere), Jer. 46. 9 (if text right), Ps. 78. 9, Job 20. 17, Dan. 11. 14. 1 K. 20. 14 is different, and Ps. 35. 16 obscure.

## NOMINAL APPPOSITION

§ 29. With a certain simplicity and concreteness of thought the Hebrew said: The altar is brass, the table is wood, instead of the altar is *brazen*, the table is *of wood*. Similarly he said: The ark is three storeys, the altar is stones, instead of *consists of* three storeys. So: the homer is barley; the famine is three years; his judgments are righteousness; I am peace. When, therefore, two nouns stand related to one another in meaning in such a way that they may form the subj. and pred. in a simple judgment or proposition, as, *the altar is brass*, they may be made to express one complex idea by being placed in apposition, *the altar, the brass*, for the altar *of* brass, or, the *brazen altar*; *a homer, barley*, for *of* or *in* barley. In the former case *altar* is the principal thing, and *brass* is *explanation*; in the other *barley* is principal, and said to be the *permutative* (substitute or exchange) for the measure. In many cases appos. is used as in other languages, as, *I, the Lord*; *his servants, the prophets*, &c. Apposition is used—

(a) In the case of the person or thing and its name. 2 S. 3. 31 הַמֶּלֶךְ דָּוִד *the king David*; Nu. 34. 2 הָאָרֶץ כְּנָעַן *the land Canaan*; 1 Chr. 5. 9 הַנָּהָר פָּרָת *the river Euphrates*, Gen. 14. 6 בְּהַרְרֵם שֵׁעִיר *in their mountain Seir*. Gen. 24. 4, 1 S. 3. 1; 4. 1, 1 K. 4. 1; 16. 21, 24, Ezr. 8. 21; 9. 1. In such cases as Nu. 34. 2, 1 Chr. 5. 9 the *gen.* is more common, though apposition may seem more logical.

If the personal name be second the *nota acc.* את or prep. if before the appellative has to be repeated. Gen. 24. 4 לְבָנִי to my son Isaac; 21. 10. Gen. 4. 2 וְהִסֹּף לְלֶדֶת את אחיו את־הַבֵּל bore his brother Abel; and את is usual before the proper name even when the appell. wants it, particularly if any word come between them. Is. 7. 6; 8. 2, Gen. 22. 20, 21; 48. 13, Ex. 1. 11; Jud. 3. 15, 1 K. 11. 14. On the other hand, there is no repetition of את or prep. with appell. when second. Gen. 16. 3 שָׁמְתָהּ took H. her maid; 11. 31; 12. 5; 14. 16; 20. 14; 24. 59. Gen. 4. 8 וַיָּקָם אֶל־הַבֵּל אָחִיו rose up against Ab. his brother.—Gen. 11. 28, Jud. 8. 27, 2 S. 7. 8, 10, Is. 22. 20. Cf. Gen. 43. 28, 2 S. 11. 17.

(b) The person or thing and its *class*. 1 K. 7. 14 אִשָּׁה אֶלְמָנָה a woman, a widow (widow woman); 2 K. 9. 4 הַנְּבִיא the prophetic youth (not, the youthful prophet); Ex. 24. 5 זְבָחִים שְׁלָמִים sacrifices (of) peace-offerings (gen. זְבָחִי later). Deu. 22. 23, 1 S. 2. 13, 2 S. 10. 7. Gen. 21. 20 a shooter, a bowman, and 6. 17 הַמַּיִם הַרְבֵּי the flood, waters; the second word merely explains the archaic or unusual first.

(c) The thing and its *material*, which may also be considered the individual and its general class. 2 K. 16. 17 הַבָּקָר הַבְּרָזִי the brazen oxen; Deu. 16. 21 אִשְׁרָה כָּל־עֵץ an Ashera (of) any wood; Ex. 39. 17 הַעֲבֹתֹת הַזָּהָב the cords (of) gold; Ex. 28. 17 אַבְנֵי טֹרֵם four rows (of) stones (gen. 39. 10); 2 Chr. 4. 13, two rows pomegranates, Ez. 22. 18, 1 Chr. 15. 19, Zech. 4. 10.—1 Chr. 28. 18 הַכֶּרֶבֶת הַזָּהָב the cher. (of, in) gold, Lev. 6. 3. In 2 K. 16. 14 rd. perh. abs. הַמִּזְבֵּחַ; but cf. 23. 17.

(d) The measure, weight, or number, and the thing measured, weighed, or counted. 2 K. 7. 1, 16, 18 סָאָה סָלָת a seah flour and two seahs barley, Gen. 18. 6, Ru. 2. 17 כֶּאֱפָה שְׁעָרִים about an ephah of barley. Ex.



29. 40 רְבִיעִית הַהוּן יוֹן the *fourth of a hin* of wine; *ib.* a *tenth of fine flour*, Nu. 15. 4, Ex. 9. 8; 16. 33, Nu. 22. 18, 1 K. 18. 32, Lev. 6. 13.—Gen. 41. 1 שְׁנַתִּים יָמִים *two years* of time, 2 S. 13. 23. 2 S. 24. 13 שִׁבְעַת שָׁנִים רָעַב *7 years* of famine; *ib.* שְׁלֹשַׁת יָמִים דָּבָר *3 days* of pestilence. Gen. 29. 14, Nu. 11. 20, Deu. 21. 13, 2 K. 15. 13; Gen. 45. 11, 1 Chr. 21. 12, Ez. 38. 17, Dan. 11. 13. 2 K. 3. 4 100,000 rams, wool (fleeces), but 1 S. 16. 20 is not an *ass-load* of bread, but an *ass laden with b.* (text dubious).—1 K. 16. 24 בְּכַנְרִים נֶסֶף for *two talents* of silver, 2 K. 5. 23, cf. v. 17; 1 S. 17. 5.

With different order, Neh. 2. 12 אֲנָשִׁים מְעַט *men, few*, Is. 10. 7; Nu. 9. 20 מִסְפָּר יָמִים *days, a number* (many), 2 S. 8. 8; 24. 24, 1 K. 5. 9. Ex. 27. 16 *a curtain* of 20 cubits.

(e) Even the thing and its quality (regarded as its substance or class), or anything which, being characteristic, may serve as specification or explanation of it. 1 K. 22. 27 מַיִם לַחַץ *water of distress* (scanty as in stress); Ps. 60. 5 יַיִן פְּרִיעָלָה *wine of reeling*; Pr. 22. 21 אֲמָתִים אֱמֶת *words of truth*, Zech. 1. 13, Is. 3. 24 *work of crimping*, Dan. 8. 13. Ez. 18. 6 אִשָּׁה נְדָה. 1 K. 6. 7.

The usage receives large extension in the predicative form. Gen. 11. 1 the earth *was one tongue*; 14. 10 the vale *was pits, pits* (full of p.), Is. 5. 12 their feast *is harp*, &c., Ps. 45. 9 all thy garments *are myrrh and cassia*, Ezr. 10. 13 the season *was rains*. Gen. 13. 10, 2 S. 17. 3, 1 K. 10. 6, Is. 7. 24; 65. 4, Jer. 24. 2; 48. 38, Mic. 5. 4, Ez. 2. 8; 27. 36, Zech. 8. 13, Ps. 10. 5; 19. 10; 25. 10; 55. 22; 92. 9; 109. 4; 110. 3; 111. 7; 120. 7, Pr. 3. 17; 8. 30, Job 3. 4; 5. 24; 8. 9, 2 Chr. 9. 5, Dan. 9. 23 (cf. 10. 11).

Rem. 1. The order *Dav. the king* occurs 2 K. 8. 29; 9. 15, and in later style 1 Chr. 24. 31, &c. In 2 S. 13. 39 *rd. יוֹחָבֵל רוּחַ הַמֶּלֶךְ* (רוח for דוד). In other cases the usual order is *Isaiah the prophet* Is. 39. 3, *Abiathar the priest* 1 S. 30. 7.

Hos. 5. 13 *king Jareb* is obscure; Pr. 31. 1 perhaps *L. king of Massa*.

Rem. 2. Repetition of prep. &c. before proper name has exceptions, Gen. 24. 12, 1 S. 25. 19 (but Sep. om. Nabal, cf. *v.* 25), Job 1. 8. With *my, thy, his people Israel* om. is more common.

Rem. 3. In most of the cases *a—e* the *gen.* may be used (§ 24), 1 K. 7. 10, 2 K. 5. 5, 1 Chr. 29. 4, 2 Chr. 8. 18; 9. 9, 13. Cf. Ez. 47. 4 מֵי מַחֲנִים with מַיִם בְּרִבִּים.

Rem. 4. In cases like 1 Chr. 28. 18 הַבְּרוּכִים זָהָב where object is def. and material indef. the latter might be in *acc.* of specification, cher. *in* gold; Lev. 6. 3 *linen garment* (*g. in* linen); and so cases like Gen. 18. 6 three *seahs fine flour*, though appos. is more natural. Ar. has four ways of connexion: appos.; the prep. *min, of* (explicative); the *gen.*; and *acc.* of specif. Such passages as Ps. 71. 7 עוֹ מַחֲסֵי עוֹ my *strong refuge*, Ez. 16. 27 דְּרֹבֶךָ זָמָה *thy lewd way*, Hab. 3. 8, 2 S. 22. 33, seem cases of appos., the noun being explanatory. Of course the second noun is not *gen.*, but an *acc.* of limitation is less natural and expressive, and cases like Ps. 38. 20 שְׁנַיִ שְׁקָר 35. 19; 69. 5; 119. 86, Ez. 13. 22 are of a different class (§ 70, 71, R. 2). Lev. 26. 42 בְּרִיתִי בְּיַעֲקֹב &c., Jer. 33. 20 הַיּוֹם ב' start from the *gen. the cov.* (of) *with Jacob*, and when the annexion is broken by the suff. the second noun is loosely left without prep., cf. Jer. 33. 21. An *acc.* of specification with proper name or def. noun is improbable. With Ezr. 2. 62, Neh. 7. 64, comp. Jer. 52. 20.

Rem. 5. Some cases of apparent appos. are due to errors of text. Josh. 3. 14 om. הַבְּרִית, 8. 11 om. הַמַּלְחָמָה, cf. *v.* 10, as explanatory margins. Jos. 13. 5 הָאָרֶץ הַנִּבְלִי might be like Nu. 34. 2 (but Sep. otherwise). Jud. 8. 32 perhaps עַפְרַת like 6. 24. Is. 11. 14 rd. בְּבִתּוֹף. Jer. 8. 5 om. *Jerus.* and Ez. 45. 16 om. הָאָרֶץ, both with Sep.

Rem. 6. The word כל *all* instead of taking *gen.* is often placed in appos., 2 S. 2. 9 פְּלֵאָה יִשְׂרָאֵל, Is. *all of it*, 1 K. 22. 28, Is. 9. 8; 14. 29, 31, Jer. 13. 19, Mic. 2. 12; often in Ezek., 11 15; 14. 5; 20. 40, &c. The archaic form of suff., as 2 S. 2. 9, is common, Is. 15. 3; 16. 7, Jer. 2. 21; 8. 6, 10;

20. 7 (15. 10 *rd.* קָלְלוּנִי בְּקִלְהֵם or בְּקִלְהֵם?).—In such phrases as 1 S. 4. 10 וַיָּנֶסוּ אִישׁ לְאָהֳלָיו *each* is in appos. to subj. in the verb (*pl. tents* except Jud. 20. 8, 2 K. 14. 12 K'th.). In prose the plur. verb mostly precedes, but in higher style often follows, Is. 13. 8, 14.

Rem. 7. An anticipative pron. sometimes precedes the subj. or obj., which then stands in appos. with the pron.; Ex. 2. 6 וַתִּרְאֶהוּ אֶת־הַיֶּלֶד *and she saw him, the child*, Ez. 10. 3 שָׁבַע הָאִישׁ *when he came, the man*. Ex. 7. 11; 35. 5, Lev. 13. 57, Josh. 1. 2, 1 K. 21. 13 (2 K. 16. 15), Jer. 31. 1, Ez. 3. 21; 42. 14 (text?); 44. 7, Ps. 83. 12, Pr. 5. 22, Song 3. 7, 1 Chr. 5. 26; 9. 22, Ezr. 3. 12; 9. 1, Dan. 11. 11, 27.—In 1 K. 19. 21 Sep. wants “the flesh,” and in Jer. 9. 14 “this people.” The usage is common in Aram., and prevails in later style; it appears in Pr. 1–9, 10–22, but not in 25–29.

Rem. 8. When the same word is repeated in appos. *intensity* of various kinds is expressed; e.g. the superl. of adj., 1 S. 2. 3 *very proudly*, Is. 6. 3 *most holy*, Ecc. 7. 24 *very deep*. With nouns Gen. 14. 10, Ex. 8. 10, 2 K. 3. 16 *pits, pits* (sheer pits), Jud. 5. 22, Jo. 4. 14.—With words of time the idea of continuity, constancy, Deu. 14. 22 שָׁנָה שָׁנָה *year by year*. Often with prep. ב, Deu. 15. 20 שָׁנָה בְּשָׁנָה, 1 S. 1. 7, Nu. 24. 1, Jud. 16. 20, 2 K. 17. 4. Comp. Deu. 2. 27 *always by the road*, 16. 20 *always righteousness*. Ex. 23. 30, Deu. 28. 43.

(2) With Numerals the idea of *distribution*; Gen. 7. 2 *seven, seven (by sevens)*, 7. 3, 9, 15, Josh. 3. 12, Is. 6. 2; sometimes with *and*, 2 S. 21. 20, 1 Chr. 20. 6. Gen. 32. 17 *each flock* separately; 2 K. 17. 29; 25. 15.

(3) When words are joined by *and* the idea of *variety* is expressed; Deu. 25. 13, 14 *stone and stone* (divers weights), Ps. 12. 3, 1 Chr. 12. 34, Pr. 20. 10. The usage is very common in later style to express *respective, various, several*, 1 Chr. 28. 14 the *respective services*; v. 15 the *several lamp-stands*; v. 16 the *various tables*. 1 Chr. 26. 13, 2 Chr. 8. 14; 11. 12; 19. 5, &c., Ezr. 10. 14, Neh. 13. 24, Est. 1. 8, 22, and often. With בל prefixed, Est. 2. 11, 2 Chr. 11. 12 (also post-Biblical).

## THE ADJECTIVE

§ 30. The adj. as attribute, being virtually in apposition to the noun, is placed after it, and agrees with it in gend., numb., and case. Gen. 21. 8 וַיַּעַשׂ מִשְׁתֵּה גָדוֹל he made *a great feast*; 20. 9 הֵבֵאתָ עָלַי חַטָּאת גְּדוֹלָה thou hast brought on me *a great sin*; Is. 5. 9 בָּתִּים רַבִּים לְשִׁמְדָה *many houses* shall be desolate. It also agrees in determination, being without the Art. if its noun be indef., but having the Art. if the noun be determined in any way (by Art., def. gen. or suff.). Gen. 21. 8; 20. 9 above. 2 K. 4. 9 אִישׁ אֱלֹהִים קָדוֹשׁ *a holy man* of God; 1 S. 12. 22 שְׁמוֹ הַגָּדוֹל *his great name*; 17. 13 שְׁלֹשָׁת בְּנֵי יִשְׂי הַגְּדֹלִים *the three e'dest sons of Jesse*; Is. 8. 7 מֵי הַנְּהַר הָעֲצוּמִים *the many waters* of the River. If there be several adj. the concord of all is the same; Is. 27. 1 בַּחֲרָבוֹ הַקָּשָׁה וְהַגְּדוֹלָה וְהַחֲזָקָה with his *sore and great and strong sword*.

The concord of the adj. when *pred.* is the same as when it is qualificative, though liable to be less exact. The position of *pred.* in the sentence is also variable (§ 103 seq.). The *pred.* is usually indefinite.

§ 31. The adj. having no dual is used in *plur.* with dual nouns; Is. 35. 3 קַשְׁלוֹת בְּרַפִּים *failing knees*; 42. 7 לְפָקַח וַיִּדְי מִשָּׁה כְּבָדִים to open *blind eyes*; Ex. 17. 12 וַיְדִי מִשָּׁה כְּבָדִים *the hands* of M. were *heavy* (*hand* mas. only here, cf. Ez. 2. 9). Gen. 29. 17, 1 S. 3. 2, Ps. 18. 28; 130. 2, Pr. 6. 17, 18.

With collectives agreement may be grammatical in the *sing.*, or *ad sensum* in the *plur.*; 1 S. 13. 15 הָעָם הַנִּמְצָאִים *the people that were present* with him; but in *v.* 16 הָעָם הַנִּמְצָאִים. § 115.

With the *plur.* of eminence the adj. is usually *sing.*; Is. 19. 4 אֱלֹהִים צַדִּיק קָשָׁה *a harsh master*. Ps. 7. 10 אֱלֹהִים צַדִּיק *righteous God*; but in some parts of the Hex. (E) *plur.*,

Josh. 24. 19 אֱלֹהִים קְדוֹשִׁים *a holy God* (cf. pl. vb. Gen. 20. 13; 35. 7). So 1 S. 17. 26 אֱלֹהִים חַיִּים *the living God*, Deu. 5. 23, Jer. 23. 36, but also אֱלֹהֵי חַי 2 K. 19. 4, 16. Cf. *Teraphim* of single image, 1 S. 19. 13, 16. Gen. 31. 34 (E), where Ter. is treated as pl., may be doubtful.

§ 32. The demonstrative adj. זֶה, הוּא *this, that*, have the same concord as other adj. But (1) they necessarily make their noun def., הַזֶּה הָאִישׁ *this man*, הַיָּמִים הָהֵם *those days*, and have themselves the Art. (2) In the case of nouns determined by pron. suff. they are in Appos. *without* the Art., Ex. 10. 1 אֵלֶּה אֶתֵּי אֵלֶּה *these my signs*; and so always. (3) With another adj. or several they stand last, 1 K. 3. 6 הַזֶּה הַחֶסֶד הַגָּדוֹל הַזֶּה *this great goodness* (v. 9); Deu. 1. 19 הַזֶּה הַמִּדְבָּר הַגָּדוֹל וְהַנּוֹרָא הַהוּא *that great and terrible wilderness*; Gen. 41. 35 הַשָּׁנִים הַטּוֹבוֹת הַבָּאִתָּה הָאֵלֶּה *these good coming years*.

Rem. 1. Occasionally the adj. precedes the noun, particularly רַב in plur. (sing. Is. 21. 7; 63. 7, Ps. 31. 20; 145. 7), Jer. 16. 16, Ps. 32. 10; 89. 51, Pr. 7. 26; 31. 29, Neh. 9. 28, 1 Ch. 28. 5. Ez. 24. 12 (fem. cons.) might suggest that in some instances of the sing. the adj. is used *nominally*.—Is. 28. 21 the adj. may be pred., *strange is his work*. In other cases the adj. is independent and the consn. apposition, Is. 23. 12 *thou violated one, virgin, &c.*; 53. 11 perhaps the place of צַדִּיק is due to attraction of vb. יַצְדִּיק; 10. 30 also apposition, *thou poor one*, Anathoth (Ew. *al.* would rd. עֲנִיָּה imp. *answer her*). Jer. 3. 7, 10 כְּנוּדָהּ is almost a proper name, *Treacherous, her sister*.

Rem. 2. Sometimes the noun is defined and adj. without the Art. (1) Numerals as אֶחָד *one*, and words similarly used as אֲחֵר *another*, רַבִּים *many*, being def. of themselves, may dispense with Art. Gen. 42. 19 (Art. v. 33), 1 S. 13. 17, 2 K. 25. 16, Jer. 24. 2, Ez. 10. 9; Gen. 43. 14, Jer. 22. 26, Ez. 39. 27. (2) In some cases the adj. is *acc.* of condition, or at any rate of the nature of pred. Gen. 37. 2, Nu. 14. 37,

1 S. 2. 23 (Sep. wants), Is. 57. 20 (11. 9?), Ez. 4. 13; 34. 12, Hag. 1. 4, Ps. 18. 18; 92. 12.—Is. 17. 6 prob. *rd.* סַעֲפֵי הַפִּי. (3) Possibly euphony in some cases led to om. of Art. 2 S. 6. 3, unless *new cart* expressed a single idea (cf Mic. 2. 7) to which Art. was prefixed. (4) Other *exx.* Jer. 2. 21, where Hitz. suggests that סוּרֵי הַגֶּפֶן may = הַסּוּרִים לְגַפֵּן, 1 S. 15. 9 where *rd.* נִבְּוָה וְנִמְצָאָם (cf. 1 K. 19. 11) at any rate. Dan. 8. 13; 11. 31. So formulas like אֱלֹהִים הוּא the *living* God.

In other cases the adj. is defined and noun without Art. (1) Numerals and similar words like בָּל, having a certain definiteness of their own, may communicate it to their noun, which then dispenses with Art. Gen. 21. 29; 41. 26, Nu. 11. 25, cf. 2 S. 20. 3, Gen. 1. 21; 9. 10. (2) Certain half-technical terms came to be def. of themselves, as *court, gate, entrance, &c.* (§ 22, R. 4): *court* 1 K. 7. 12, 2 K. 20. 4 (K're), Ez. 40. 28, 31 (47. 16 text obscure); *gate* Ez. 9. 2, Zech. 14. 10 (Neh. 3. 6, gate is cons.); *entrance* Jer. 38. 14. So *way* 1 S. 12. 23, Jer. 6. 16 (cf. Jud. 21. 19); *day*, particularly with ordinals, Gen. 1. 31, Ex. 12. 15; 20. 10; Deu. 5. 14, Lev. 19. 6; 22. 27; cf. Is. 43. 13 מִיּוֹם = מִהַיּוֹם. (3) Other *exx.* 1 S. 6. 18; 16. 23, 2 S. 12. 4, Jer. 6. 20; 17. 2 (Ps. 104. 18); 32. 14 (text obscure), Zech. 4. 7, Neh. 9. 35, Ps. 62. 4, Ez. 21. 19 (text uncertain). 2 K. 20. 13 rather as Jer. 6. 20 than as Song 7. 10. 1 S. 19. 22 *rd.* perhaps הַיָּמָה (Sep.) for הַגִּדְלָה. (4) With *ptcp.* Jud. 21. 19, Jer. 27. 3; 46. 16 (Zech. 11. 2).

Rem. 3. The usage § 32 (2) goes throughout all stages of the language, Gen. 24. 8, Ex. 11. 8, Deu. 5. 26; 11. 18, Josh. 2. 14, 20, Jud. 6. 14, 1 K. 8. 59; 10. 8; 22. 23, Jer. 31. 21, Ezr. 2. 65, Neh. 6. 14; 7. 67, 2 Chr. 18. 22; 24. 18, Dan. 10. 17.—Josh. 2. 17 is doubly anomalous (cf. Jud. 16. 28). The demons. is without Art. sometimes in the phrase בַּלַּיְלָה הוּא *on that night*, Gen. 19. 33; 30. 16; 32. 23, 1 S. 19. 10, cf. Ps. 12. 8 (§ 6, R. 1). 1 S. 2. 23 text dubious.—On the other hand 2 K. 1. 2; 8. 8, 9 *rd.* הַלַּיְלָה (cf. Jer. 10. 19). In 1 S. 17. 17 *num.* may define לַחֹם (1 S. 14. 29?). In 1 S. 17. 12 text faulty.

The order § 32 (3) may be changed when adj. is em-

phatic, 2 Chr. 1. 10, or when other specifications are linked to it, Jer. 13. 10.

Rem. 4. When two adj. qualify a *fem.* noun the second is sometimes left in *mas.* 1 K. 19. 11 רוח גדולה וחזק a *great* and *strong* wind, Jer. 20. 9 (1 S. 15. 9). And in cases of a commodity and its measure or number the adj. may agree with the commodity as the main thing, 1 S. 17. 17 *this ephah of parched corn*; v. 28.

Rem. 5. The adj. is sometimes used nominally and put by the noun in *gen.*; 2 K. 18. 17 חיל כבד a *great force*, Is. 22. 24 כל־כֵּלֵי הַקָּטָן all vessels *of the smallest*, Song 7. 10 יַיִן הַטּוֹב wine *of the best*. Deu. 19. 13; 27. 25, Jer. 22. 17 (cf. 2 K. 24. 4), Nu. 5. 18, 2 K. 25. 9 (Am. 6. 2?), Zech. 14. 4, Ps. 73. 10; 74. 15 (cf. Ex. 14. 27); 78. 49; 109. 2, 2 Chr. 4. 10, Ecc. 1. 13; 8. 10.—Other exx. of adj. used nominally, Gen. 30. 35, 37 (exposing *the white*), Deu. 28. 48 (and *nakedness*), Josh. 3. 4 (*a distance*), Jud. 9. 16; 14. 14 (*sweetness*), Josh. 24. 14, 2 K. 10. 15 (perh. om. אַחַת), Jer. 2. 25; 15. 15; 30. 12, Is. 28. 4 (*flower of a fading thing*), v. 16, Ps. 111. 8, Job 33. 27 (*perverted right*).—Conversely the noun may be put in *gen.* by the adj. used nominally, often with superlative meaning, Jud. 5. 29 (*the wisest*), Is. 19. 11; 35. 9, Ez. 7. 24; 28. 7. Ex. 15. 16, 1 S. 16. 7; 17. 40, Jer. 15. 15, Ps. 46. 5; 65. 5. Pr. 16. 19, שָׂפַל might be inf.

Rem. 6. The adj. when it expresses the characteristic attribute of the noun is sometimes used instead of it; Is. 24. 23 הַלְבָנָה the *moon (the white)*, הַחֶמֶד the *sun (the hot)*, 30. 16 קַל the *horse (swift)*, Jer. 8. 16, Mal. 3. 11 הַאֵכָל the *consumer (locust)*. Mostly in poetry and less common than in Ar.

## THE ADJECTIVE. COMPARISON

§ 33. The language possesses no elative form of the adj. Comparison is made by the simple form, followed by prep. מִן, Gen. 3. 1 עָרִים מְכֹלֹת הַשָּׂדֶה *more cunning than* all the beasts; Deu. 11. 23 גְּדֹלִים מֵאֲמָרִים *greater*

*than* you; Hos. 2. 9 אָז מֵעַתָּה כִּי טוֹב לִי it was *better* for me than *than* now; 1 S. 9. 2 גְּבִיחַ מִכָּל־הָעָם *taller*. Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 24. 18, 2 S. 19. 8. With *better* the subj. is often a clause (inf.), Gen. 29. 19, Ps. 118. 8, 9, Pr. 21. 3, 9 (§ 89).

(b) The quality (*tertium comp.*) is often expressed by a verb, Gen. 41. 40 אֲנִדְלָמָּה I *will be greater* than thou; 29. 30 וַיֶּאֱהָב אֶת־רַחֵל מִלְּאָה he *loved R. more than L.*, 2 S. 1. 23 מִנְּשָׂרִים קָלוּ מִמְּאֲרֹת גִּבּוֹרֵי עֵתָה נָרַע לָהּ עֵתָה נָרַע לָהּ now will we *treat thee worse* than them. Gen. 37. 4; 48. 19, Deu. 7. 7, Jud. 2. 19, 1 S. 18. 30, 2 S. 6. 22; 18. 8; 20. 5, 6, 1 K. 5. 10, 11; 10. 23; 14. 9.

§ 34. The superlative is expressed by the simple adj. with Art., or followed by gen. of a noun or pron., 1 S. 17. 14 וְדָוִד הוּא הַקָּטָן and David was *the youngest*; 18. 17 בְּתִי הַגְּדוּלָה *my eldest* (elder) daughter, Deu. 21. 3. — 2 K. 10. 6 גְּדֹלֵי הָעִיר *the greatest men* of the city; Jer. 6. 13 מִקְּטָנִים וְעַד־גְּדוֹלָם from *the least of them*, &c. Gen. 9. 24; 10. 21; 29. 16; 42. 13; 43. 29, Jud. 6. 15; 15. 2, 1 S. 9. 21, Mic. 7. 4, Jon. 3. 5, 2 Chr. 21. 17, Ps. 45. 13, Job 30. 6 (§ 32, R. 5). Absolute superlativeness is expressed by מְאֹד *very* (a noun in *acc.*), Jud. 3. 17 בְּרִיא מְאֹד *very fat*, Gen. 12. 14; 41. 31, which may be intensified by prep. עַד, 1 K. 1. 4 הַנְּעִמָּה יְפָה עַד־מְאֹד the girl was *extremely pretty*, 2 S. 2. 17, Gen. 27. 33; in later style בְּמְאֹד מְאֹד Ez. 9. 9; or מו' is repeated without prep., Nu. 14. 7.

Rem. 1. In *form* a few words correspond to the Ar. relative ('afdalū), as אֲכֹר *cruel*, אֲכֹב *deceptive*, אֵיתוֹ *perennial*. But in Ar. many adj. of this form have no compar. sense, 'ahmaru, *red*; 'ahmaqu, *foolish*.

Rem. 2. The adj. or verb with מִן may often be rendered by *too*, or *rather than*. Gen. 18. 14 דָּבָר מִי' דָּבָר is anything *too hard* for Je. ? (Deu. 17. 8, Jer. 32. 17, 27), Jud. 7. 2, רַב מִתַּתִּי *too many* for me to give, 1 K. 8. 64 קָטָן מִהֶבֶל *too small*



to contain, Gen. 4. 13 *גָּדוֹל מִנְשׂוּאָה* *too great to bear*, Ps. 61. 3 the rock *יְרִים מִמֶּנִּי* *too high for me*, Is. 49. 6 *too light to be*, Ex. 18. 18, 1 K. 19. 7, Gen. 26. 16; 36. 7, Ru. 1. 12, Hab. 1. 13, Ps. 139. 12 *too dark for thee* (to see). So with *מְעַט* Isa. 7. 13 is wearying men *too little*? Nu. 16. 9.—Hos. 6. 6 knowledge of God *rather than burnt-offerings*; Ps. 52. 5 evil *rather than good*, Hab. 2. 16, 2 S. 19. 44, where perhaps *rd.* *בְּבוֹר* for *ברור*, first-born *rather than thou* (Sep.).

Rem. 3. The word expressing the quality is occasionally omitted, Is. 10. 10 (greater or more) *than those of Jer.*, Job 11. 17 (clearer) *than noon*. In Mic. 7. 4; Is. 40. 17; 41. 24, Ps. 62. 10, *מהבל* the prep. is partitive or explicative, *of* (consisting of) vanity.

Rem. 4. The consn. with *מן* is sometimes virtually a superlative, 1 S. 15. 33 *הַשֶּׁבֶל מִנְשִׁים אִפְדָּה* *the most bereaved of women* (lit. bereaved above w.).—A superl. sense is expressed by joining a noun with its own *pl.* in the gen., Gen. 9. 25 a *slave of slaves* (lowest slave), Ex. 26 33 *holy of holies* (most holy), Is. 34. 10 *eternity of eternities* (all eternity), Ecc. 1. 2 *vanity of vanities* (absolute vanity), Song 1. 1, Ez. 16. 7, Deu. 10. 17. 1 K. 8. 27, though such phrases had at first sometimes a lit. sense.

Rem. 5. Just as the simple adj. the abstract noun with gen. conveys superl. meaning, as *טוב* *the best*, Gen. 45. 18, Is. 1. 19, *מִיטָב* *the best* 1 S. 15. 9, 15, *מִבְּחָר* *the choicest* Ex. 15. 4, Deu. 12. 11, *רֵאשִׁית* *the chiefest*, Nu. 24. 20, Am. 6. 1, 6.

Rem. 6. A kind of superl. sense is given to a word by connecting it with the divine name. Probably the idea was that God *originated* the thing (as Ar.), or that it belonged to Him, and was therefore extraordinary. Sometimes the meaning appears to be “in God’s estimation,” Gen. 10. 9. Cf. Jon. 3. 3 *עִיר גְּדוֹלָה לְאֱלֹהִים* (Acts 7. 20); Ps. 36. 7; 68. 16; 80. 11; 104. 16, Song 8. 6, 1 Chr. 12. 23.—1 S. 14. 15; 26. 12 (Gen. 30. 8 seems different).

## THE NUMERALS

§ 35. The numeral *one* is an adj., having the usual place and concord (§ 30). 1 S. 2. 34 בְּיוֹם אֶחָד *in one day*, 1 K. 18. 23 הַפָּר הָאֶחָד *the one ox*, Gen. 11. 6 שָׁפָה אֶחָת *one speech*, 32. 9 הַמַּחֲנֶה הָאֶחָת *the one camp*. 11. 1.

Rem. 1. In later style *one* sometimes precedes its noun, Neh. 4. 11, Dan. 8. 13, Nu. 31. 28, Song 4. 9.

Rem. 2. It is also construed nominally, followed (*a*) by gen., Gen. 22. 2 אֶחָד הַהָרִים *one of the mountains*, 2 S. 2. 1, Job 2. 10; (*b*) by prep. מִן, Gen. 3. 22 אֶחָד מִמֶּנִּי *one of us*, 2. 21. The short form usual in this case (Lev. 13. 2, Nu. 16. 15, 1 S. 9. 3, 1 K. 19. 2; 22. 13, 2 K. 6. 12; 9. 1, &c.; cf. otherwise 1 S. 16. 18; 26. 22, 2 S. 2. 21, &c.) might be cons. before prep. (§ 28, R. 1), but in some cases at least it must be a form of *abs.*, Gen. 48. 22, 2 S. 17. 22, Is. 27. 12, Zech. 11. 7. (*c*) It is itself governed in gen. by its noun (§ 32, R. 5), Lev. 24. 22, 2 K. 12. 10, Is. 36. 9. (*d*) With prep. מִן before it, it is a strong *any*; Lev. 4. 2 מֵאֶחָת מֵהֵנָּה *any of these things*, Lev. 5. 13, Deu. 15. 7, Ez. 18. 10 (text obscure). So in Ar. after a neg.

§ 36. The Numerals 2–10 are nouns, being followed by the thing enumerated either in Appos. (permutative, § 29), or in the gen. (explicative, § 24). Or, chiefly in later style, the thing may precede and the Num. follow in Appos. The thing enumerated is *plur.*

(*a*) With *indef.* nouns or expressions (cons. with *indef.* gen.) the Num. is mostly *abs.* and the noun in Appos. Gen. 29. 34 בָּנִים שְׁלֹשָׁה *three sons*. 24. 10 עֲשָׂרָה גְמָלִים *ten camels*. 1 K. 3. 16 נָשִׁים שְׁתַּיִם *two women*. Deu. 19. 2 שְׁלוֹשׁ עָרִים *three cities*. 31. 10 שִׁבְעַת שָׁנִים *seven years*. There are exceptions, 2 K. 5. 22; and in the case of *two* the cons. is more common than *abs.* even before *indef.* noun. There are also two general exceptions—(1) With יָמִים *days* the cons. is usual; Jud. 19. 4 שְׁלֹשַׁת יָמִים *three days*. Deu.

5. 13; 16. 4, 8, 13, but cf. 2 K. 2. 17. (2) So before *other* Num. 1 S. 25. 2. **שְׁלֹשָׁת אֲלָפִים** *three thousand*. Jos. 8. 12 **חֲמִשָּׁת אֲלָפִים** *five thousand*. 1 K. 5. 30 **שְׁלֹשׁ מֵאוֹת** *three hundred*, Jud. 4. 13.—Jos. 1. 11; 2. 16; 3. 2; 6. 3; 7. 3; 8. 12, Jud. 3. 29; 4. 6; 15. 11, 1 S. 26. 2. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) With noun determined by Art. or def. gen. the Num. is mostly in *cons.* with gen. of noun. Deu. 10. 4 **עֲשָׂרַת הַדְּבָרִים** *the ten words*. Jos. 10. 16 **חֲמִשָּׁת הַמְּלָכִים** *the five kings*. Jud. 3. 3 **חֲמִשָּׁת סָרְנֵי פְּלִשְׁתִּים** *the five lords of the Ph.* 1 S. 16. 10 **שִׁבְעַת בְּנָיו** *his seven sons*. Gen. 40. 12, 18, Nu. 23. 4, Jud. 14. 12; 18. 7, 1 S. 17. 13 (20. 20?), 2 S. 21. 22; 23. 16, 1 K. 21. 13, 2 K. 25. 18. There are exceptions, cf. 1 S. 17. 14. Cases like Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, &c., are according to § 20, R. 2.

(c) The Num. may follow the noun in Appos.—mostly in later style. 1 Chr. 12. 39 **יָמִים שְׁלוֹשָׁה** *three days*. Dan. 1. 12. 1 Chr. 22. 14; 25. 5, 2 Chr. 3. 12; 4. 8, Neh. 2. 11, Dan. 1. 5, 15, Ezr. 8. 15, cf. Jos. 21 *pass.* Ex. in earlier books are comparatively rare, Gen. 32. 15, 16. In 1 S. 1. 24 **רַד מִשְׁלָשׁ בְּפֶרֶק מִשְׁלָשׁ**.

Rem. 1. Additional ex. of *a.* Gen. 30. 20; 45. 23; 47. 2, Deu. 16. 9, 16; 17. 6, Jos. 6. 4, Jud. 9. 34; 16. 8, 1 S. 1. 8; 25. 5, 2 S. 21. 6, 1 K. 5. 28; 7. 4, 30; 10. 19; 17. 12; 18. 23; 21. 10, 2 K. 2. 24, Jer. 2. 13. There are exceptions, 1 K. 11. 16.

Rem. 2. The position of the Num. before the noun is almost exclusive in earlier writings, and is common at all times. This is true of all Num., whether units or higher numbers. The position after the noun occurs in Kings, is not unusual in P., and becomes very usual in Chr., Ezr., Neh., Dan., &c.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sven Herner, *Syntax der Zahlwörter im Alt. Test.*, Lund, 1893. This careful Treatise pays particular attention to the literary age of the various usages.

Rem. 3. The *gend.* is sometimes inexact. Gen. 7. 13 (due to mas. form of noun), cf. Ex. 26. 26; Job 1. 4, Ez. 7. 2, Zech. 3. 9, 1 Chr. 3. 20, Ez. 45. 3 Kth.—The noun is sometimes sing. after units in the case of words used collectively, 2 K. 8. 17; 22. 1 (year), 25. 17 (cubit), Ex. 21. 37 (צֵאן, בָּקָר), cf. Gen. 46. 27; and in cases where the thing weighed or measured is omitted (§ 37, R. 4). Gen. 24. 22, Jud. 17. 10, 1 S. 10. 4; 17. 17; 21. 4, Ex. 16. 22. In Ez. 45. 1 *rd.*, breadth *twenty* thousand.

Rem. 4. The Num. 2, 3, 4, 7 may take suffixes, as שְׁנַיִנוּ *we two*, both of us, שְׁלֹשָׁתָם *they three*, &c. Nu. 12. 4, 1 S. 25. 43, 2 S. 21. 9, Ez. 1. 8, Dan. 1. 17, cf. 2 K. 1. 10 *his* fifty.—The *order* is to be observed: Gen. 9. 19 אֵלֶּה אֵלֶּה *these three*, 1 K. 3. 18 אֲנַחְנוּ שְׁתַּיִם *we two*. Gen. 22. 23, Deu. 19. 9, 1 S. 20. 42. So *gen.* Ex. 21. 11, 2 S. 21. 22, Is. 47. 9.

Rem. 5. The language says *two three*, &c. (without *or*), as Engl. 2 K. 9. 32, Is. 17. 6, Am. 4. 8.

§ 37. Numerals above the units mostly have the noun in *plur.* (except collectives and words of *time*, *measure*, and *weight*). They stand in Appos., and mainly precede their noun—but may follow (chiefly in later style). When they follow, the noun is *plur.*, even though otherwise employed in sing.

(a) The Num. 11–19. Gen. 37. 9 אֶחָד עָשָׂר כּוֹכָבִים *eleven stars*. 2 S. 9. 10 עָשָׂר בָּנִים *fifteen sons*. Jos. 4. 8 שְׁתַּיִ עֶשְׂרֵה אֲבָנִים *twelve stones*. Gen. 32. 23; 42. 13, Ex. 15. 27; 24. 4, Deu. 1. 23, Jud. 3. 14, 2 S. 2. 30; 9. 10; 19. 18, 1 K. 18. 31, 2 K. 14. 21. Ex. 27. 15, Nu. 17. 14; 29. 14, 15, Jos. 15. 41.

(b) The tens, 20–90. Jud. 12. 14 אַרְבָּעִים בָּנִים *forty sons*. Gen. 18. 24 צְדִיקִים חֲמִשִּׁים *fifty righteous*. Exceptional order, Gen. 32. 15, 16 אַתְּנַת עֶשְׂרִים *twenty she-asses*, &c. Gen. 18. 26, 28, Ex. 15. 27; 21. 32, Jud. 1. 7; 8. 30; 10. 4; 12. 14; 14. 11–13, 2 S. 3. 20; 9. 10, 2 K. 2. 16; 10. 1; 13. 7; 15, 20, Ez. 42. 2; 45. 12.

(c) Numbers composed of tens and units, *e.g.* 23, are treated as a single number *twenty-and-three*; and as they stand in Appos. the unit remains in the *Abs.* (cases like 2 K. 2. 24 are exceptional). The *gend.* of the unit is, of course, determined by the noun: Jud. 10. 2 עֶשְׂרִים וְשָׁלֹשׁ שָׁנָה 23 years. The order *three-and-twenty* also occurs—chiefly in later style. It also belongs to later style to separate the elements of the Num., repeating the noun with each, as *twenty year and three years*, or the reverse order (mainly with the word *year*).

Jud. 7. 3 עֶשְׂרִים וְשָׁנִים אֲלֶף 22 thousand (cf. Rem. 1). Nu. 7. 88 ע' וְאַרְבָּעָה פָּרִים 24 oxen. Nu. 35. 6, Jos. 19. 30; 21. 39, Jud. 10. 3; 20. 15, 35, 46, 2 K. 10. 14, Ez. 11. 1, 1 Chr. 2. 22; 12. 29.—Gen. 11. 24, Ex. 38. 24, Nu. 3. 39, 43; 26. 22; 31. 38, Jud. 20. 21.—Gen. 5. 15; 12. 4; 23. 1; 25. 7. Cf. Gen. 5 *pass.*, Gen. 11. 13–25. Lev. 12. 4, 5 (repet. of *days*), cf. Num. 31. 32 *seq.* (thousand).

(d) The usage is the same with מֵאָה *hundred*, מֵאוֹת, מֵאוֹת (all in *abs.*; cons. מֵאוֹת in later style); and אֲלֶף *thousand*, אֲלָפִים, אֲלָפִים (cons. אֲלָפִי occasional, Ex. 32. 28, Job 1. 3). 1 K. 18. 4 מֵאָה נְבִיאִים 100 prophets. Jud. 15. 4 אֲלֶף שְׁלוֹשׁ-מֵאוֹת שְׂוֹעָלִים 300 foxes. 1 K. 3. 4 אֲלֶף מֵאָה אֲלָפִים 100,000 burnt-offerings. 2 K. 3. 4 אֲלָפִים אֲלָפִים 2000 horses. Ex. of *hundred*: Jud. 7. 22, 1 S. 17. 7; 18. 25; 25. 18; 30. 21, 2 S. 3. 14; 8. 4; 14. 26; 16. 1, 1 K. 7. 20; 10. 17; 11. 3, Jos. 7. 21. Ex. of *thousand*: 1 S. 13. 5; 17. 5, 1 K. 5. 6, Job 42. 12.

(e) While, however, the Num. 11 and upward are construed with plur., except with collectives and words of *time*, *weight*, and *measure*, there is a natural tendency in enumerations to regard the thing enumerated as forming a *class* or *genus*, and to use the sing.; cf. § 17. Ex. 24. 4, Jud. 21. 12, 2 S. 8. 4; 23. 8, 1 K. 5. 12; 9. 14, 2 K. 24. 14. Comp. 1 K.

10. 16 with 17, and 2 K. 2. 16 with 17; Ex. 26. 19 with 36. 24. The sing. is chiefly used with things which one is accustomed to count; the sing. *king*, 1 K. 20. 1, 16, is unusual. Rem. 1.

(f) When the expression is def. the Art. usually goes with the noun, and the Num. is def. of itself. Jud. 7. 7 שָׁלֹשׁ אֶת־אֶלֶף וּמֵאָה the 300 men (Rem. 1). 17. 3 מֵאֵתֶּיךָ הַכֶּסֶף the 1100 (shekels) of silver. 1 S. 30. 21 מֵאֵתֶיךָ הַבָּנִים the 200 men. Gen. 18. 28, Deu. 9. 25, Jos. 4. 20, Jud. 7. 22; 18. 17, 1 K. 7. 44, 2 Chr. 25. 9, Ex. 26. 19; 36. 24.

Rem. 1. Words used in sing. in the cases *a—d* are יוֹם *days*, שָׁנָה *years*, אִישׁ *men* (esp. of troops), אֶלֶף *thousands*, אַמְפָּה *cubits* (often pl.), כֶּרֶם, בַּת (measures), כֶּבֶד *talents* (also pl.), נִירָה, שָׁקֶל (oftenest pl.) &c.; and collect. as רִגְלֵי *infantry*, רֶכֶב *chariots*, נֶפֶשׁ *persons*, בָּקָר *cattle*, צֹאן *sheep*. Usage fluctuates; cf. § 17.—Adj. and words in Appos. may agree grammatically in sing. 1 S. 22, 18, 1 K. 20. 16, or *ad sensum* in pl. Jud. 18. 16, 1 K. 1. 5.

Rem. 2. In *eleven* the forms עֶשְׂרֵה עֶשֶׂר, ע' עֶשְׂרֵה occur Deu. 1. 3, Jer. 1. 3; 39. 2, Ez. 26. 1, but chiefly belong to later style. In *twelve* the forms עֶשְׂרֵה עֶשְׂרִים, שְׁנָיִם עֶשֶׂר are usual, the cons. שְׁנַיִם &c., comparatively rare.

Rem. 3. The form *twenty-and-three* (in *c*) is the older order and the one usual at all times, *i.e.* the larger number first and the two joined by *and*. The same order is usual when there are higher numbers, thus: hundreds *and* tens *and* units; thousands *and* hundreds *and* tens, &c. It is characteristic of later style (occasionally in Kings) to put the smaller number first or omit the *and*. Cf. Ezr. 2 or Neh. 7 *pass.*, Nu. 4. 36, 1 K. 10. 14. The repet. *20 year and 3 years* or reverse order is almost peculiar to P.<sup>1</sup>

Rem. 4. Words readily understood in expressions of weight, measure, or date are often omitted, as *shekel*, *ephah*, *day*, Gen. 24. 22 עֶשְׂרֵה זָהָב *ten (shekels) gold*, Ru. 3. 15 יָשַׁע שֵׁשׁ שְׁעָרִים *six (ephahs) of barley*, Gen. 20. 16; 45. 22, 1 S. 10. 3, 4;

<sup>1</sup> According to Herder, § 12, only 1 K. 6. 1 outside of P.

17. 17, 1 K. 10. 16. On om. of *day*, § 38c. The consn. Ex. 26. 2 בְּאַמְתָּה אַרְבַּע four *by the cubit*, four cubits, is common in later style. Ez. 40. 5, Zech. 5. 2, 1 Chr. 11. 23.

Rem. 5. Numerals as independent nouns may take the Art. Gen. 18. 29 הָאַרְבָּעִים *the forty*. 2 K. 1. 13 הַשְּׁלִישִׁים *the third fifty*; v. 14 *the former* (pl.) *fifties*; with suff. v. 10. Gen. 14. 9, Nu. 3. 46, Deu. 19. 9, 2 S. 23. 18 seq. In most other cases the Num. is without Art., though there are exceptions. Jos. 4. 4 שְׁנַיִם הָעָשָׂר אִישׁ *the twelve men*, Nu. 16. 35, Ex. 28. 10.

Rem. 6. After *eleven* and upwards the *sing.* noun, particularly of material or commodity, is probably in *acc.* of specification. § 71.

§ 38. The Ordinals.—(a) The ordinals *first—tenth* are adj. and used regularly (Gr. § 48. 2). Jud. 19. 5 בְּיוֹם הַרְבִּיעִי *on the fourth day*. 2 K. 18. 9 בְּשָׁנָה הַרְבִּיעִית *in the fourth year*. So always in stating the number of the *month* (cf. c), 1 Chr. 27. 2–13.

(b) From *eleventh* upwards the Card. numbers do duty for ordinals, and Art. is not generally used with the noun. Deu. 1. 3 בְּאַרְבָּעִים שָׁנָה *in the fortieth year*. 2 K. 25. 27 בְּשָׁנִים עָשָׂר חֹדֶשׁ *in the twelfth month*. Ex. 16. 1, Deu. 1. 2, 3, 2 K. 25. 27, Jer. 25. 3, 1 Chr. 24. 12–18; 25. 18–31.

(c) In stating dates there are some peculiarities. 1. The *gen.* “of the month” is circumscribed by prep., לַחֹדֶשׁ, and *day* is often omitted. Ex. 16. 1 יוֹם עָשָׂר לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the fifteenth day of the month*. 2 K. 25. 27 בְּעֶשְׂרִים וּשְׁבַע לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the 27th of the month*. Even the Card. 1–10 are greatly used in this case, mostly with om. of *day*. 2 K. 25. 8 בְּשִׁבְעָה לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the seventh*. Deu. 1. 3 בְּאַחַד לַחֹדֶשׁ *on the first*. Gen. 8. 5, Lev. 23. 32, Ez. 1. 1, Zech. 7. 1, cf. 2 Chr. 29. 17, Ezr. 3. 6.

2. The word *year* is very often put in cons. before the whole phrase, Num. and year. 2 K. 8. 25 בְּשָׁנַת שְׁתַּיִם עָשָׂרָה *in the year of twelve years* (the twelfth year),

1 K. 16. 8, 15, 29, 2 K. 8. 25; 14. 23; 15. 13, 17, 23, 27; 25. 8. And with *year* understood: 1 K. 15. 25, 28 בְּשָׁנָה שְׁתַּיִם *the year of two years* (second year). 1 K. 16. 10; 22. 41, 2 K. 3. 1; 15. 30, 32; 18. 10; 24. 12, Zech. 7. 1, Ezr. 5. 13, Neh. 1. 1, Dan. 1. 21; 2. 1.

Rem. 1. The adj. אָחַד *one* is very often used for *first*, Gen. 2. 11 seq.; 4. 19, Ex. 1. 15, Nu. 11. 26, 2 S. 4. 2, Ru. 1. 4.

Rem. 2. The word *year* is also construed with gen. of the *def.* Ordinal. 2 K. 17. 6 הַשְּׁשִׁיעִית בְּשָׁנָה *in the year of the ninth year*. 2 K. 25. 1, Jer. 32. 1, Ezr. 7. 8, Neh. 2. 1; 5. 14.—In *c* the form לְחָדָשׁ בְּעֶשְׂרִי is used for *on the tenth* of the m. (spelling plenary except Ex. 12. 3).

Rem. 3. The Art. seems used with the Num. in cases where the whole expression is *def.*, as Lev. 25. 10, 11 *the fiftieth year* (of jubilee), Deu. 15. 9 *the seventh year* (of manumission), 1 K. 19. 19; but occasionally in other cases, Ex. 12. 18, Nu. 33, 38, 1 K. 6. 38, 1 Chr. 24. 16; 25. 19; 27. 15. Its place varies, 1 K. 19. 19 הַשְּׁנַיִם הָעֲשָׂרִי with 1 Chr. 25. 19 הַשְּׁנַיִם עֲשָׂרִי.

Rem. 4. *Distributives*.—(a) These may be expressed by Card. with לְ to: 1 K. 10. 22 לְשָׁלֹשׁ שָׁנִים *once to = every three years*. Ex. 16. 22, 1 K. 5. 2, Ez. 1. 6. (b) By repeating the Num. Gen. 7. 2, 3, 9, 15, Ex. 17. 12, 1 K. 18. 13, Ez. 40. 10. § 29, R. 8. Very often the whole phrase is repeated, Is. 6. 2 *six wings, six wings to each*, Jos. 3. 12, Nu. 13. 2; 34. 18, Ex. 36. 30.

Rem. 5. *Multiplicatives* are expressed variously.—Thus: *as much as* you, they, &c., by כְּכֶם, כְּהֵם, 2 S. 24. 3, Jer. 36. 32, Deu. 1. 11.—*double* by מִשְׁנֵה, used in Appos. either before or after the noun, Gen. 43. 12 (after), 15 (before), Ex. 16. 5, 22. Also by שְׁנַיִם, Ex. 22. 3, 6, 8, *twofold*.—By the *du. fem.* of Num., as 2 S. 12. 6 אַרְבַּעַתַּיִם *fourfold*. Gen. 4. 15 שִׁבְעַתַּיִם *sevenfold*. Is. 30. 26, Ps. 12. 7. Or by simple Card. Lev. 26. 21, 24, cf. Gen. 4. 24.—By יָדוֹת (hands), Gen. 43. 34 *fivefold*, Dan. 1. 20 *tenfold*. Comp. Gen. 26. 12 מֵאָה שְׁעָרִים *a hundredfold*.



*Times* is expressed by פַּעַם (beat). Gen. 2. 23 הפַּעַם *this time*. Jos. 6. 3 אַחַת פ' *one time*. Neh. 13. 20 וּשְׁתַּיִם פ' *once or twice*. Gen. 27. 36; 43. 10 פַּעַמַּיִם *two times*. Ex. 23. 17 פַּעַמַּיִם שְׁלֹשׁ *three times*, &c. Gen. 33. 3, Nu. 14. 22, 2 K. 13. 19, Job 19. 3, Neh. 4. 6.—2 S. 24. 3 פַּעַמַּיִם 100 *times*. Deu. 1. 11 אֶלֶף פַּעַמַּיִם 1000 *times*, 1 K. 22. 16.—The word *time* may be omitted. 2 K. 6. 10 אַחַת שְׁתַּיִם *once, twice*. 1 K. 10. 22, Job 40. 5. Also בְּאַחַת, בְּשְׁתַּיִם 1 S. 18. 21, Job 33. 14, Nu. 10. 4. With similar omission, שְׁנַיִת *a second time*, Gen. 41. 5, Is. 11. 11; שְׁלִישִׁית *a third time*, 1 S. 3. 8, *a seventh time* 1 K. 18. 44.—Other words for *times* are רְגָלִים Ex. 23. 14, Nu. 22. 28, 32, 33; and מְנַיִם Gen. 31. 7.

Rem. 6. *Fractions*.—Apart from חֲצִי *half*, 1 K. 16. 21, &c., fractions are formed: (a) by separate words, as רִבְעֵי *a fourth*, Nu. 23. 10, 2 K. 6. 25; חֲמִישׁ *a fifth*, Gen. 47. 26. The analogy has not been followed in other cases (cf. Ar. *tholth* a third). The form רִבְעֵי also, 1 S. 9. 8. For a *tenth* עֶשְׂרֹן (pl. עֶשֶׂר), peculiar to P. The *tithe* is מַעְשֵׂר. (b) By the fem. of Ordin. as שְׁלִישִׁית *a third*, 2 S. 18. 2, 2 K. 11. 5, Ez. 5. 2, 12; רִבְעִית *a fourth*, Nu. 15. 4, Neh. 9. 3. So the others, Gen. 47. 24, Lev. 5. 11, 16, 24, Ez. 4. 11; 45. 13. Above *tenth* the Card. must be used, Neh. 5. 11, *the one per cent*. The noun of measure, weight, &c., usually has the Art. after the fraction, Ex. 26. 16, Nu. 15. 4; 28. 14, 1 K. 7. 31, 32, 2 K. 6. 25, Ez. 45. 13; 46. 14.

Obs.—In prose composition these general rules may be safely followed. 1. Place all numerals *before* their noun. 2. The units take their noun in *pl.*; before an indef. noun they are in the abs., except *two*; before a def. noun in cons.; also in cons. before the word *days* and before other numerals. 3. The numbers 11–19 have fixed forms (Gr. § 48), but the *second* form of 11 and 12 may be neglected. 4. The numbers 11 and upwards take their noun in *pl.*, except collectives, and words of *time*, *weight*, and *measure*, though usage is not uniform, § 37, R. 1. 5. Compound numbers like 23 form one number *twenty-and-three* (in this order), the unit in abs., but its gender regulated by the noun. So in greater numbers the largest first, and each class joined by *and*, as 6000 *and 300 and 50 and four*. 6. The rules for Ordinals, § 38.

## SYNTAX OF THE VERB

## THE PERFECT

§ 39. The simple perf. is used to express an action completed either in reality or in the thought of the speaker.

The perf. is used to express completed actions where Eng. also uses past tenses.—(a) Like the Eng. past tense, to denote an action completed at a time indicated by the narrative, as Gen. 4. 26 **אָז הוּחַל** *then it was begun* (began men); or completed in the indefinite past, Job 1. 1 **אִישׁ הָיָה** *there was a man*. Gen. 3. 1; 15. 18; 22. 1; 29. 9; 31. 20. Even if the finished action may have extended over a period of time, unless it is desired to mark this specially, the simple perf. is employed; Gen. 14. 4, twelve years **עָבְדוּ** *they served*, 1 K. 14. 21, and often.

(b) Like the Eng. perf. with *have*, to denote an action finished in the past but continuing in its effects into pres.; Gen. 4. 6 **לָמָּה נָפְלוּ פְּנֵיהָ** *why has (is) thy face fallen?* Is. 1. 4 **עָנְבוּ אֶת־יְיָ** *they have forsaken the Lord*. In this case the pres. must sometimes be used in Eng., Ps. 2. 1 **לָמָּה רָגְשׁוּ גוֹיִם** *why do the nations rage?* Ps. 1. 1. Or to denote an action *just* finished, or finished within an understood period; Gen. 4. 10 **מָה עָשִׂיתָ** *what hast thou done?* 1 S. 12. 3 **אֶת־שׁוֹר מִי לָקַחְתִּי** *whose ox have I taken?* Gen. 3. 22; 12. 18; 22. 12; 26. 22; 46. 31, Ex. 5. 14, Nu. 22. 34, Jud. 10. 10; 11. 7, 1 S. 14. 29.

(c) Like the Eng. pluperf. to indicate that one of two actions was completed before the other. This use is most common in dependent (relative or conjunctive) clauses. Gen.

2. 8, he put there אֶת־הָאָדָם אֲשֶׁר יָצַר the man *whom he had made*; 6. 6 אֶת־הָאָדָם י' כִּי עָשָׂה *repented that he had made* man. Gen. 2. 5, 22; 3. 23; 18. 8, 33; 19. 27; 26. 15, 18; 28. 11, Nu. 22. 2, 1 S. 6. 19; 7. 14; 28. 20, 1 K. 5. 15; 11. 9. With modal force, Gen. 40. 15 *should have put*, 1 S. 17. 26 *should have defied*. After הִנֵּה, Gen. 19. 28 the smoke *was gone up*, Deu. 9. 16, Jud. 6. 28.

When the dependent clause is introduced by *and* the subj. usually precedes the verb; Gen. 20. 4 וְאֵבְרָהָם לֹא קָרַב אֶלֶּיהָ *and Abimelek had not approached*. 31. 19, 34, Jud. 6. 21, 1 S. 9. 15; 25. 21; 28. 3, 2 S. 18. 18, 1 K. 1. 41, 2 K. 9. 16.

(d) In hypothetical sentences the perf. is employed both in protasis and apodosis where Lat. subj. would be used. Jud. 13. 23 לוֹ הָפֵץ לְהַמִּיתֵנוּ לֹא לָקַח עִלָּה *if he had wanted to kill us he would not have taken* a burnt-offering. Gen. 43. 10, Nu. 22. 33, Jud. 8. 19; 14. 18, Is. 1. 9. So in other supposed cases; Gen. 26. 10 one of the people כְּמַעַט שָׁכַב *might readily have lain*, 2 K. 13. 19. Also in Opt. sent. in ref. to past, Nu. 14. 2, and fut., Is. 48. 18; 63. 19. Cf. Cond. and Opt. Sent. §§ 130, 134.

Rem. 1. Though it may be doubtful whether the shades of meaning expressed by our tenses were present to the eastern mind, it is of great consequence to observe them in translation. The direct sent. 1 K. 21. 14 סָפַל נְבוֹחַ וְיָמָת *N. has been stoned and is dead*, when made dependent by כִּי v. 15, must be rendered, *that N. had been stoned and was dead*. In Is. 53. 5, 6 the perf. must be translated in three ways: all we *were* (had) *gone astray*; the Lord *caused to fall* on him; by his stripes *we have been healed*. Job 1. 21, the Lord gave . . . *hath taken*. In Ps. 30. perf. has all its various uses: v. 4 *hast brought up*; v. 7 *I said*; v. 8 *hadst made to stand* . . . *didst hide*; v. 12 *hast turned* (or possibly *didst turn*). Ezr. 1. 7. So inchoative perf., Ps. 97. 1 מֶלֶךְ י' *is become king*; 2 K. 15. 1 *became king*, and often.

§ 40. The perf. expresses actions regarded as completed, where Eng. rather uses the present.—(a) In the case of stative verbs, *i.e.* verbs expressing mainly a mental or physical condition, as *to know, remember, refuse, trust, rejoice, hate, love, desire, be just, &c.*; *to be, be high, great, small, deep, clean, full, be old, many, &c.* Eng. by its pres. expresses the condition, Heb. rather the act which has resulted in it. Gen. 27. 2 **וְקָנֹתִי לֹא יָדַעְתִּי יוֹם מוֹתִי** *I am old, I know not, &c.*; Jud. 14. 16 **רַק שָׂנֵאתָנִי וְלֹא אֶהְבַּתָּנִי** *thou only hatest me, and lovest me not*; Gen. 42. 31 **לֹא הָיִינוּ מְרַגְלִים** *we are not spies*. Stative verbs, however, often occur in such a way that their perf. must be rendered by a past tense; Gen. 28. 16 *I knew*, 34. 19 *he delighted*, 37. 3 *loved*, Jud. 8. 34 *remembered*. The connexion shows to what time the completed act belongs.

(b) In a class of actions which are completed just in the act of giving them expression. This usage appears chiefly with verbs denoting to speak, as verbs of swearing, declaring, advising, and the like, or their equivalents in gesture. Deu. 26. 3 **הַיּוֹם הַזֶּה אֶפְרָס** *I profess this day*; 2 S. 17. 11 **כִּי יִעֲצָתִי** *I advise*; 2 S. 19. 8 **בְּיְהוָה נִשְׁבַּעְתִּי** *I swear by the Lord*. Gen. 22. 16, Nu. 14. 20, Deu. 4. 26; 26. 17; 30. 15, 18, 19, 1 S. 17. 10, 2 S. 16. 4 *I worship*, 19. 30, 1 K. 2. 42 *I hear* (obey), 2 K. 9. 3 *I anoint*, Jer. 22. 5; 42. 19, Ez. 36. 7, Ps. 129. 8; 130. 1, Pr. 17. 5. Song 2. 7 *I adjure*. So the frequent **אָמַר** *saith* Je., or **אָ' י'** *thus saith*. In some cases impf. **יֹאמַר** is used, hardly as a frequent. but as a present. This occurs in the midst of a speech, Is. 1. 11, 18; 33. 10; 40. 1, 25; 41. 21, Ps. 12. 6. Both forms Is. 66. 9.

(c) In a class of actions which, being of frequent occurrence, have been proved by experience (perf. of experience). Jer. 8. 7 the turtle and swallow **שָׁמְרוּ אֶת-עֵת בֹּאָנָה** *observe the time of their coming*; Job 7. 9 **כָּלָה עֵצוֹן וַיֵּלֶד** *the cloud*

*dissolves* and vanishes. Is. 40. 7, 8, Am. 5. 8, Ps. 84. 4 *findeth, layeth*, Pr. 1. 7 *despise*, 14. 19 *bow*; 22. 12, 13.

Rem. 1. Exx. of stative verbs. זָכַר *remember*, Nu. 11. 5, Jer. 2. 2; מָאָן *refuse*, Ex. 7. 14, Nu. 22, 13, Deu. 25. 7; בָּטַח *trust*, 2 K. 18. 19, 20; שָׂמַח *rejoice*, 1 S. 2. 1, Is. 9. 2; חָפֵץ *to wish*, Deu. 25. 8, Is. 1. 11; צָדִיק *be just*, Gen. 38. 26, Ps. 19. 10; גְּבוּהָ *be high*, Is. 3. 16; 55. 9; גָּדֹל *be great*, Gen. 19. 13; קָטָן *be small*, Gen. 32. 11; עֵמֶק *be deep*, Ps. 92. 6; טָהוֹר *be clean*, Pr. 20. 9; מָלֵא *be full*, Is. 2. 6, Mic. 3. 8; אָבַל *to mourn*, Is. 33. 9, Joel. 1. 9; אָבָה *be willing*, Deu. 25. 7; מֵאֵס *loathe*, Am. 5. 21, Job 7. 16; שָׂבַע *be sated*, Is. 1. 11; רַבָּה *be many*, Ps. 3. 2 (רַבָּה = become many); קִיָּה *hope*, Ps. 130. 5, &c.

§ 41. The perf. is used to express actions which a lively imagination conceives as completed, but for which the fut. is more usual in Eng.—(a) The perf. of certainty. Actions depending on a resolution of the will of the speaker (or of others whose mind is known), or which appear inevitable from circumstances, or which are confidently expected, are conceived and described as having taken place. This use is common in promises, threats, bargaining, and the like. Is. 42. 1 הֵן עֲבָדֵי נְתַתִּי רוּחִי עָלָיו behold my servant, *I will put* my spirit upon him; Is. 6. 5 אֲוִי־לִי בִינְדָמִיתִי woe is me *for I am undone*; Ru. 4. 3 חָלַקְתָּ הַשָּׂדֶה מְכַרָּה גְעָמִי Naomi *is selling* the field-portion. Gen. 15. 18; 17. 20; 30. 13, Nu. 17. 27, 28, Jud. 15. 3, 1 S. 2. 16; 14. 10; 15. 2, 2 S. 24. 23, 1 K. 3. 13, 2 K. 5. 20, Is. 30. 19, Jer. 4. 13; 31. 5, 6, Ps. 6. 9, 10; 20. 7; 36. 13; 37. 38. In these last exx. and many others the tense may be called the perf. of *confidence*.

(b) It often happens, esp. in the higher style, that in the midst of descriptions of the fut. the imagination suddenly conceives the act as accomplished, and interjects a perf. amidst a number of imperfs. Job 5. 20, 23 *hath redeemed*

(4. 10); Hos. 5. 5 Judah *is fallen*. This usage receives an extension among the prophets, whose imagination so vividly projects before them the event or scene which they predict that it appears realised. Is. 5. 13 מִבְּלִי־דַעַת עָמִי גָלָה עָמִי *my people is gone into captivity*; 9. 5 כִּי יֵלֵךְ יִלְד־לָנוּ *for a child has been born to us*; 9. 1 הַהֲלֹכִים בַּחֹשֶׁךְ רָאוּ אֹר גָּדוֹל *they who walked in darkness have seen great light*. Is. 5. 14; 9. 2 seq., 10. 28; 11. 8, 9; 28. 2, Hos. 4. 6; 10. 7, 15, Jer. 4. 29, Am. 5. 2. The prophetic perf. is sometimes scarcely to be distinguished from perf. of confidence, Ps. 22. 22, 30.

(c) The perf. is used in the sense of the *future perf.* to indicate that an action though fut. is finished in relation to another fut. action. Gen. 24. 19 עַד אִם-כִּלּוֹ לְשָׁתוֹת *until they (shall) have done drinking*; 2 S. 5. 24 לְפָנֶיהָ י' *for then Je. will have gone forth*. Gen. 28. 15; 43. 9; 48. 6, 1 S. 1. 28, 2 K. 7. 3; 20. 9, Is. 4. 4; 6. 11; 16. 12, Jer. 8. 3, Mic. 5. 2, Ru. 2. 21.

Rem. 1. The prophetic perf. may be distinguished from the ordinary perf. by the fact that it is not maintained consistently, but interchanges with *impfs.* or *vav conv. perfs.*, the prophet abandoning his ideal position and returning to the actual, and so falling into the ordinary *fut.* tenses, *e.g.* Is. 5. 14-17. The prophetic passage may begin with *perf.*, Is. 5. 13, which is frequently introduced by כִּי *for*, לָכֵן *therefore*, or other particles, Is. 3. 8; 9. 5; or it may begin with *vav impf.*, Is. 2. 9. When further clauses with *and* are added, if the ideal position be sustained, the natural secution, *vav impf.*, may be used, Is. 9. 5, Ps. 22. 30, or simple *perf.* if verb be disconnected with *and*, Is. 5. 16. But frequently the ideal position is deserted and the ordinary *fut.* tenses, the *impf.* or *vav perf.*, are employed, Is. 5. 14, cf. v. 17, Ps. 85, 11, 12. Cf. Is. 13. 9, 10; 14. 24; 35, 2, 6; 46. 13; 47. 9; 52. 15; 60. 4.

Rem. 2. It seems but a variety of (c) when the perf. is used in questions expressing any lively feeling, as astonishment, indignation, incredulity, or the like. The speaker

imagines the act done, and expresses it in a tone conveying his feeling regarding it. Gen. 18. 12 *shall I have (had) pleasure!* 21. 7 *who would have said?* Ex. 10. 3; 16. 28, Jud. 9. 9 *shall I have abandoned!* Nu. 23. 10, 23, 1 S. 26. 9, 2 K. 20. 9, Jer. 30. 21, Ez. 18. 19, Hab. 2. 18, Ps. 10. 13; 11. 3; 39. 8; 80. 5, Job 12. 9. Cf. interchange of perf. and impf. Hab. 1. 2, 3, Ps. 60. 11.

Rem. 3. Owing to the want of participles expressing past time, the perf. has to be used in attributive or circumstantial clauses referring to past. Gen. 44. 4 *לֹא הִרְחִיקוּ* *not having gone far*; 44. 12 *הִחֵל* *beginning* at the eldest; 48. 14 *guiding* his hands, Gen. 21. 14; Nu. 30. 12 *without checking*, Deu. 21. 1, Jud. 6. 19; 20. 31, 1 S. 30. 2, 1 K. 13. 18, Job 11. 16 waters *passed away*; Is. 3. 9 *without concealment*. And so to express an action prior to the main action spoken of, Ps. 11. 2. Very compressed is the language, Jud. 9. 48 *מָה רָאִיתֶם עָשִׂיתִי* what *ye have seen me do*. If *me* had been expressed the consn. would have been an ordinary Ar. one. Lam. 1. 10, Neh. 13. 23; cf. impf. 2 S. 21. 4, Is. 3. 15.

Rem. 4. Another verb following on perf. is usually appended with *vav impf.*, but in animated speech asyndetous perfs. are often accumulated. Deu. 32, 15, Jud. 5. 27, Is. 18. 5; 25. 12; 30. 33, Lam. 2. 16.

Rem. 5. In some instances perf. appears to express a wish (precativè perf.). Job 21. 16 the counsel *בְּרַחֲמֶיךָ* *be far!* 22. 18. Lam. 1. 21 *הִבֵּאתִי* *bring thou*, where structure of verse requires ref. to fut; 3. 56 seq., where *v.* 55 continues 54; Ps. 18. 47. Is. 43. 9 *יִקְבְּצוּ* may be form of imper., and Ps. 7. 7 *לְוִיָּהּ* a circumst. clause. It would be strange if Heb. altogether wanted this usage, which is common to all the Shem. languages in some shape. Wright, ii. 3, Dillm. p. 406 foot, Noeldeke, p. 181, Del. Assyr. Gr. § 93. The position of the verb is freer in Heb., as is usual in comparison of Ar. The usage may be allied to perf. of confidence (Ps. 10. 16; 22. 22; 31. 6; 57. 7; 116. 16), the strong wish causing the act to be conceived as accomplished.

## THE SIMPLE IMPERFECT

§ 42. The simple impf. expresses an action incomplete or unfinished. Such an action may be conceived as nascent, or entering on execution (pres.), progressing, or moving on towards execution (impf.), or as ready, or about to enter upon execution (fut.). Connected with the last use is the use of impf. to express a great variety of actions which are *dependent* on something preceding, whether it be the will or desire of the speaker (juss., opt.), or his judgment or permission (potential), or on some other action, or on particles expressing *purpose* and the like (subjunctive).

The uses of the impf. are very various, and some of them rarer in prose writing; those usual in ordinary prose may be mentioned first.

§ 43. (a) The impf. expresses a *future* action, whether from the point of the speaker's present, or from any other point assumed. 1 S. 24. 21 יָדַעְתִּי כִּי מֶלֶךְ תִּמְלֹךְ I know that thou shalt be king; 2 K. 3. 27 וַיִּקַּח אֶת-בְּנוֹ אֲשֶׁר יִמְלֹךְ he took his son who was to be king; Gen. 2. 17; 3. 4; 6. 7; 37. 8; 43. 25 were to eat, 1 K. 7. 7, 2 K. 13. 14 was to die.

(b) The impf. is employed to express actions which are contingent or depending on something preceding. The shades of sense of impf. in this use of it are manifold, corresponding to Eng. *will* (of volition), *shall* (of command), *may* and *can* (of possibility or permission), *am to*, in the present; and to *would*, *should*, *might*, *could*, *was to*, in the past or indirect speech. Particularly (1) in interrogative sentences; (2) in dependent clauses with כִּי *that* and the like; and (3) after particles like אֵיךְ *how!* אולי *perhaps*, &c., and conditional particles like אִם *if*. Gen. 3. 2 מִפְּרֵי עֵץ-דֶּבֶן לֹא תֹאכְלוּ מִמֶּנּוּ we may eat; 3. 3 לֹא תֹאכְלוּ מִמֶּנּוּ ye shall not eat of it; Gen. 43. 7 הֲיָדוּעַ יֵדַע כִּי יֹאמַר were we then to know that he wou'd say? 27. 45 לָמָּה אֲשַׁכַּל שְׂנֵיכֶם why should I



*be bereaved of you both?* 44. 8 וְאִיךָ נִגְנַב *and how should we steal!* 2. 19 לְרֹאֵת מִה־יִּקְרָא לוֹ *to see what he would call it;* Jud. 9. 28 כִּי נַעֲבָדְנֹו מִי־שָׁכֶם *who is Shechem that we shou'd serve him?* Job 9. 29 אָנֹכִי אֲרֻשָׁע *I am (have) to be guilty!* Gen. 44. 34; 47. 15, Ex. 3. 11, Deu. 7. 17, Jud. 8. 6; 17. 8, 9 *wherever he might find,* 1 S. 18. 18; 20. 2, 5 *should sit,* 23. 13, 2 S. 2. 22; 3. 33 *should* Abner (*was A. to die!* 6. 9, 2 K. 8. 13, Ps. 8. 5, Job 7. 17. With אִלַּי Gen. 16. 2; 24. 5, Nu. 23. 27, 1 S. 6. 5, 1 K. 18. 5, 2 K. 19. 4, Am. 5. 15. With אִם *if,* Gen. 18. 26, 28, 30; 30. 31, Jud. 4. 8, Am. 6. 9. See Cond. Sent.—With Job 9. 29 cf. 10. 15; 12. 4, 1 S. 14. 43; 28. 1.

(c) In particular impf. follows *final* (telic) conjunctions, as לְמַעַן *in order that,* אֲשֶׁר *that,* לְבִלְתִּי *that not,* פֶּן *lest.* Ex. 4. 5 לְמַעַן יֵאֱמִינוּ *that they may believe;* Deu. 4. 40 אֲשֶׁר לְהַיְטִיב לְךָ *that it may be well with thee* (cf. next clause); Gen. 3. 3 לֹא תִגְעוּ בּוֹ פֶּן־תָּמֹתוּן *ye shall not touch it lest ye die.* Ex. 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 14. See Final Sent.

Rem. 1. The expression מִי יוֹדֵעַ *who knows?* differs little from *perhaps,* and is followed by impf., 2 S. 12. 22, Jo. 2. 14, Jon. 3. 9. In Est. 4. 14 אֲנִי is supplied before the verb.

§ 44. Frequentative impf.—The impf. expresses actions of general occurrence, such actions being independent of time. That which is nascent or ready to occur passes easily over into that which is of frequent or indefinite occurrence. This use of impf. is common in proverbial sayings, in comparisons, in the expression of social and other customs, and particularly of actions which, having a certain moral character, are viewed as universal, but also of actions which are or were customary in given circumstances without being necessary.

(a) Of actions for which Eng. uses the present. Gen.

10. 9 על־כֵּן יֹאמַר כְּנִמְרוֹד therefore *it is said*, as Nimrod ;  
 6. 21 מִכָּל־מֵאֲכָל אֲשֶׁר יֹאכֵל take of all food *which is eaten*  
 (edible); Pr. 10. 1 בֶּן חָכָם יִשְׂמַח־אָב *a wise son makes a*  
*father glad*. Particularly with כֵּן *so*, כְּאֲשֶׁר *as*, and similar  
 words. 1 S. 24. 14 יֵצֵא מִן־הָרָעִים יֵצֵא *as says* the proverb, Out of the evil *cometh forth evil*;  
 Jud. 7. 5 כְּאֲשֶׁר יִלֵּק הַכֶּלֶב *as a dog laps*; Gen. 29. 26  
 לֹא־יַעֲשֶׂה כֵּן בְּמִקְמֹנוּ *it is not so done* in our country. Some-  
 times this *is not* has the nuance of *ought not*. Gen. 20. 9  
 מַעֲשִׂים אֲשֶׁר לֹא־יַעֲשׂוּ *deeds which ought not to be done*,  
 cf. 34. 7, 2 S. 13. 12.—Gen. 50. 3, Ex. 33. 11, Deu. 1. 31, 44 ;  
 2. 11, 20; 28. 29, Jud. 11. 40; 14. 10, 1 S. 5. 5; 19. 24, 2 S.  
 5. 8; 13. 18; 19. 4, Am. 3. 7, 12, Hos. 2. 1 (cannot be counted).  
 Of a universal truth, Ex. 23. 8, Deu. 16. 19 a gift *blinds*, 1 S.  
 16. 7, 2 S. 11. 25 the sword *devours*, 1 K. 8. 46 no one *who*  
*sinneth not*, Ps. 1. 3–6. Of a characteristic or habit, Gen.  
 44. 5, Ex. 4. 14 *speaks* (can speak), Deu. 10. 17, 1 S. 23. 22,  
 2 S. 19. 36, 2 K. 9. 20 *drives* furiously, Is. 13. 17, 18 (the  
 Medes), 28. 27, 28, Ps. 1. 2, Job 9. 11–13. But also of an  
 event repeated or general within a limited area. 1 S. 9. 6  
 כֹּל אֲשֶׁר יִדְבַר בָּא יֵבֵא whatever *he speaks comes true*; 1 K.  
 22. 8 לֹא יִתְנַבֵּא עָלַי טוֹב *he never prophesies* good about  
 me. Ex. 13. 15; 18. 15, 2 K. 6. 12, Hos. 4. 8, 13; 7. 1–3,  
 14–16; 13. 2 *kiss* calves, Am. 2. 7, 8, Is. 1. 23; 14. 8, Mic.  
 3. 11.

(b) Of actions customary or general in the past. Gen. 2. 6  
 וַיִּמְעַל קָטָן וַיֵּאָדָה and a mist *used to go up*. 1 S. 2. 19 וַיַּעֲשֶׂה־לוֹ אִמּוֹ  
 תְּבוּאָה אֲנִיּוֹת and a little robe his mother *used to make for*  
*him*. 2 Chr. 9. 21 once every three years תָּבוֹאוּ תַרְשִׁישׁ  
 תָּבוֹאוּ תָּבוֹאוּ *came* the ships of Tarsh. This impf. may *distribute*  
 an action over its details or particulars; Gen. 2. 19 וְכָל־אֲשֶׁר  
 יִקְרָא־לוֹ הָאָדָם whatever *he called it*. Particularly under the  
 influence of a negative; 1 S. 13. 19 וְהָרֵשׁ לֹא יִמְצֵא a smith

was not to be found; Gen. 2. 25 וְלֹא יִתְבַּשְׁשׁוּ *they were not* (at any time) *ashamed*; 1 S. 1. 13 שָׁפְתֶיהָ נָעוּת וְקוֹלָהּ לֹא יִשְׁמָע *her lips moved, but her voice was not heard*. Ex. 21. 36, 1 K. 8. 8, 27 (cf. 22. 8 in *a*); 18. 10, 2 K. 23. 9 (contrast neg. impf. and pos. perf.), Jer. 13. 7. Cf. Rem. 1.

Rem. 1. Other exx. Gen. 6. 4; 29. 2; 31. 39, Ex. 8. 20, Nu. 11. 5. 9, Deu. 2. 11, 20, Jud. 5. 8; 6. 4, 5; 17. 6, 1 S. 1. 7; 13. 18; 14. 47 (*rd.* perhaps וַיִּשָּׁע); 18. 5; 23. 13; 25. 28, 2 S. 1. 22 *never returned*; 2. 28 *did not engage in the pursuit*; 12. 3, 31; 17. 17; 20. 18; 23. 10, 1 K. 5. 25, 28; 6. 8; 10. 5; 17. 6; 18. 10; 21. 6, 2 K. 3. 25; 4. 8; 13. 20, Jer. 36. 18, Ps. 106. 43, Job 1. 5, 1 Chr. 20. 3.

Rem. 2. This impf. is used, *e.g.*, 1. in describing a boundary line and naming its *successive* points, Jos. 16. 8, interchanging with *vav perf.*, 15. 3 and often. 2. In describing the course of an ornamentation, 1 K. 7. 15, 23 *ran round*, 2 Chr. 4. 2. 3. In stating the amount of metal that went to *each* of a class of articles, 1 K. 10. 16, 2 Chr. 9. 15; and so of the number of victims offered in a great sacrifice, 1 K. 3. 4, cf. 10. 5. 4. In describing the quantity which a vessel, &c., contained, 1 K. 7. 26. So the details of collecting and disbursing moneys, 2 K. 12. 12-17.—In 2 K. 8. 29 (9. 15) the preceding *plur.* “wounds” perhaps distributes the verb *wounded* (*perf.* 2 Chr. 22. 6), just as *the rest* does Joab’s action, 1 Chr. 11. 8, and *all the cities* David’s, 1 Chr. 20. 3, and *all the land* the effect of the flies, Ex. 8. 20, cf. Deu. 11. 24. So 2 S. 23. 10 of the people returning in parties or successively (*v.* 9 their dispersion). Jer. 52. 7, Ezr. 9. 4.

Rem. 3. Allied to § 44*a* above is the use of impf. to form attributive or adjectival clauses, descriptive of the subj. or obj. of a previous sentence. The restricted sphere of the ptcp. enlarges this usage. Gen. 49. 27 וְיִבְרָךְ אֶת בְּנֵי בִנְיָמִן *Benj. is a ravening wolf*; Is. 40. 20 עֵץ לֹא-יִרְקַב *a tree that doth not rot*; Hos. 4. 14 עַם לֹא-יִבִּין *an undiscerning people*; Is. 51. 2 שָׂרָה הַחַוּלָלָה *S. your mother (who bears you)*; *v.* 12 *man that dies* (*mortal man*). 55. 13, Ps. 78. 6, Job 8. 12, cf. Ex. 12. 34,

Nu. 11. 33, Zeph. 3. 17. Is. 30. 14 *unsparingly*, Ps. 26. 1 *without wavering*. Particularly in comparisons. Job 9. 26 **כַּנְּשֹׁר יַטֹּשׁ** as *an eagle swooping*; 7. 2 as a servant *that longeth*. Deu. 32. 11, Hos. 11. 10, Is. 62. 1, Jer. 23. 29.

§ 45. To express single unfinished or enduring actions in the *pres.* or *past* the ptc. is usually employed in prose, with a different shade of meaning. The impf., however, is often used after certain particles, as **אָז** *then*, **טָרַם** *not yet*, **בְּטָרַם** *before*. Ex. 15. 1 **אָז יָשִׁיר מֹשֶׁה** *then sang* Moses; Gen. 19. 4 **טָרַם יִשְׁכְּבוּ** *they were not yet lain down* when, &c. 27. 33 **וְאֵכַל בְּטָרַם תְּבוֹא** and I ate *before thou camest*. Deu. 4. 41, Jos. 8. 30; 10. 12; 22. 1, 1 K. 3. 16; 9. 11; 11. 7; 16. 21, 2 K. 12. 18; 15. 16.—Gen. 2. 5; 24. 45, 1 S. 3. 3.—Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 2. 15, 2 K. 6. 32, Jer. 1. 5. So sometimes after **עַד**, Jos. 10. 13, Ps. 73. 17. See Temporal Sent.

Rem. 1. The use of impf. with interrog. is peculiar. The interrogation not only brings the action into the present, but seems to give such force to the verb that the *finite* tense may be used. Gen. 32. 30 why **תִּשְׁאַל** *dost thou ask*? 37. 15 **מַה־תִּבְקֶשׁ** *what dost thou seek*? comp. the answer **אֲנֹכִי מִבְּקֶשׁ**. So question and answer Gen. 16. 8. 2 K. 20. 14 **מֵאַיִן יָבִיאוּ** *whence came they*? with the answer **בָּאוּ** *they came*. Gen. 44. 7, Ex. 2. 13; 3. 3, Jud. 17. 9; 19. 17, 1 S. 1. 8; 17. 8; 28. 16, 2 S. 1. 3, 1 K. 21. 7, Job 1. 7; 2. 2; 15. 7, Is. 45. 9, 10. In some cases the questions may be freq., Is. 40. 27. Perhaps also with other strong particles, like **הֲיִנָּה** 1 S. 21. 15, Gen. 37. 7? And necessarily when ptc. is resolved into a *neg.* clause, Jud. 20. 16, Lev. 11. 47.

Rem. 2. Such particles as *then* create a space or period with which the action is contemporaneous, into which the speaker throws himself, cf. 2 K. 8. 22 where *then* = *at that* (general) *time*. In poetry the usage is extended, and appears with such words as *day*, *time*. Job 3. 3 perish **יּוֹם אֲהַיָּךְ בּוֹ** *the day on which I was (am) born!* 6. 17, Deu. 32. 35. In other cases it may be doubtful whether contemporaneousness or immediate subsequence be expressed: Job 3. 11 why *died*

(die) I not *from the womb*, came I not out of the belly *and expired?* cf. *v.* 13. The pointing  $\text{וָאֵנוּעַ}$  would have been good prose (Jer. 20. 17), and so would *perf.* in first clause (Jer. 20. 18), but the one tense protects the other. Cf. the reverse order of events, Nu. 12. 12.

In elevated style this usage of impf. is common. The speaker does not bring the past into his own present, he transports himself back into the past, with the events in which he is thus face to face. Ex. 15. 5 the depths  $\text{יִכְסֵי־מַיִם}$  covered (cover) them; Deu. 32. 10  $\text{יָמְצָאֵהוּ}$  found (findeth) him; Ps. 80. 9 a vine from Eg.  $\text{תְּפִיעַ}$  thou bringest, thou drivest out the nations; Job 4. 15. 16 a breath  $\text{יִחַלֵּף הַכֶּמֶר}$  passes, my hair stands up; it stops, &c. So an instantaneous effect is graphically expressed. Ex. 15. 12 thou didst stretch thy hand  $\text{תִּבְלַעְמוּ אֶרֶץ}$  the earth swallows them, *v.* 14 the nations heard  $\text{יִרְגְּזוּן}$  they are terrified. Is. 41. 5, Hab. 3. 10, Ps. 46. 7; 77. 17; 69. 33; 78. 20. The Eng. pres. best renders this impf., our historical pres. being a similar usage. Nu. 23. 7 Balak  $\text{יִנְחֵינִי}$  bringeth me. Ps. 18. 7; 104. 6-8. Hitz. (Ps. 18. 4) so explains 1 K. 21. 6  $\text{כִּי אֶרְבֵּר בִּי}$ ; *כי* is recitativum. If reading right, Jud. 2. 1  $\text{אֶעֱלֶה}$  must rather express progressive bringing up. So perhaps 2 S. 15. 37  $\text{יָבוֹא}$  proceeded. In 1 K. 7. 8  $\text{יַעֲשֶׂה}$  is wanting in Sep.

Rem. 3. In the prophetic and higher style the impf. is often used of single actions where prose would express itself differently. There is also frequent interchange of perf. and impf., *e.g.* Is. 5. 12; 9. 17; 10. 28; 13. 10; 14. 24; 18. 5; 19. 6, 7; 42. 25; 43. 17; 49. 13, 17; 51. 6; 60. 4, Hos. 7. 1; 12. 11, Ps. 26. 4, 5; 52. 9; 93. 3. In early writing these changes have meaning, but in later poetry, especially in the historical psalms and Job, the significance is not always apparent, and the changes look part of an unconscious traditional style. Some scholars, however, diminish the difficulty by the assumption that the impf. often stands for *vav impf.* See § 51, R. 5.

Rem. 4. The impf. is frequently used for imper., even in the 2nd pers. Deu. 7. 5; 13. 5, Am. 7. 12, Hab. 3. 2, Ps. 17. 8; 64. 2; 71. 2, 20, 21; 140. 2.

THE CONVERSIVE TENSES. PERF. AND IMPF. WITH  
STRONG VAV

§ 46. The conversive tenses seem the result of two things: first, the feeling of the *connexion* of two actions, and that the second belongs to the sphere of the first, a connexion expressed by *vav*; and, second, that effort of the lively imagination already noticed under the simple tense-forms (§ 41 *b*, § 45, R. 2, 3), by which an impf. is interjected among perfs., and conversely, a perf. among impfs. These lively transportations of the imagination, which appear only occasionally in the case of the simple tenses, have in this instance given rise to two distinct fixed tense-expressions, the *vav conv. impf.* and the *vav conv. perf.* In usage the former has become the historical or narrative tense, and the latter the usual expression for the fut. or freq. when connected with preceding context by *and*. The actual *genesis* of these two tense-forms belongs, however, to a period lying behind the present state of the language. They are now virtually *simple* forms, having the meaning of the preceding tenses, impf. or perf., and it is doubtful if it is legitimate to analyse them, and treat *vav impf.* for ex. as *and* with an impf. in any of the senses which it might have if standing alone.—It is the shortened forms of impf. that are usually employed with *vav*, when these exist; but this is by no means universal.

IMPERFECT WITH STRONG VAV. VAV CONV. IMPF.

§ 47. *Vav conv. impf.* follows a simple perf. in any of the senses of the perf. In usage, however, it has become a tense-form in these meanings of the perf. in narrative style, though no perf. immediately precedes. If the connexion of *vav* and impf. be broken through anything such as a neg. or other word coming between, the discourse returns to the

simple *perf.* Gen. 1. 5 וַיִּקְרָא לְאֹר... וְלַחֲשׂוּךְ קָרָא Gen. 4. 4, 5 וַיִּשַׁע י' אֶל-הָבֶל וְאֶל-קַיִן לֹא שָׁעָה and Je. had respect to Abel, but to Cain he had not respect.

As to the kind of connexion between the preceding and *vav impf.* the latter may express either what is strictly consequential, or what is merely successive in time, or what is only successive in the mind of the speaker. In the last case the event or fact expressed by *vav impf.* may really be identical with the preceding event, and a repetition of it, or synchronous with it, or even anterior to it; the speaker expresses them in the order in which they occur to him, so that the *and* is merely connective, though the form retains its conversive meaning. Gen. 40. 23 וַיִּשְׁכַּחְהוּ . . . לֹא זָכַר he remembered not Joseph, and forgot him; Jud. 16. 10 וַיִּשְׁכַּחְהוּ בִי וַתְּדַבֵּר אֵלַי כְּזָבוֹתִים thou hast cheated me, and told me lies. With *vav perf.*, Jud. 14. 12 אִם הִגֵּד תְּגִידוּ לִי עֲשֵׂה if ye will tell it me, and find it out. After עֲשֵׂה to do, *vav impf.* is often merely explanatory, 1 K. 18. 13. לֹא עָשִׂיתִי וְאֶחָבֵא what I did and hid, &c. Gen. 31. 26, Ex. 1. 18; 19. 4, Jud. 9. 16, 1 K. 2. 5, 2 Chr. 2. 2, cf. Neh. 13. 17. 2 S. 14. 5 I am a widow וַיָּמָת אִישִׁי and my husband is dead. Jud. 2. 21 וַיָּמָת יְהוָה אֲשֶׁר עִזָּב יְהוָה וַיָּמָת which Joshua left and died. So *vav impf.* often merely sums up the result of a preceding narrative, Jud. 3. 30 וַתִּכְנַע מוֹאָב so Moab was subdued; 8. 28.

§ 48. (a) *Vav impf.* continues a *perf.* in sense of Eng. past; and it is usual in this sense in narrative, although no *perf.* actually precedes. Gen. 3. 13 הַנָּחָשׁ הִשְׁיֵאֲנִי וָאָכַל the serpent deceived me, and I ate. 4. 1; 7. 19, 1 S. 15. 24. With neg., Gen. 4. 5 unto Cain לֹא שָׁעָה וַיִּחַר לְקַיִן כָּמָד he had not respect, and C. was very angry. Gen. 8. 9, Jer. 20. 17, Job 3. 10; 32. 3 did not find an answer and condemn (so as to condemn). With interrog., Gen. 12. 19.—When

*vav* is separated from verb, Gen. 31. 33 וַיָּבֵא . . . וְלֹא מָצָא 41. 21, Jud. 6. 10.

(b) It continues perf. in sense of Eng. perf. with *have*. Gen. 3. 17 כִּי שָׁמַעְתָּ לְקוֹל אִשְׁתְּךָ וְתֹאכַל *hast hearkened and eaten*. 16. 5 וְאֶקַּל *and I am despised*; 32. 31. With interr., Deu. 4. 33 וַיִּהְיֶה עִם קוֹל א' וַיִּהְיֶה *has a people heard the voice of God and lived?* With neg. 1 S. 15. 19 לָמָּה וְלָמָּה לֹא שָׁמַעְתָּ בְּקוֹל י' וְתַעֲטַמ *why hast thou not obeyed, but hast flown upon the spoil?* 1 S. 19. 17, Job 9. 4.—Jos. 4. 9 he set up 12 stones וַיִּהְיוּ שָׁם *and they are there to this day*. Is. 50. 7, Jer. 8. 6. Gen. 32. 5, 1 S. 19. 5.

(c) In the sense of plup. Gen. 39. 13 כִּי עָזַב בְּגָדוֹ וַיִּנְגַס *had left his garment and fled*; 31. 34 וַיִּחַל לְקַחְהָ . . . וְתִשָּׁמֶם . . . now R. *had taken the Teraphim, and put them in the camel's saddle, and sitten down upon them*. Gen. 27. 1; 26. 18, Ex. 15. 19, Nu. 21. 26, Jos. 10. 1, Jud. 4. 11, 1 S. 30. 1, 2, 2 S. 18. 18, 1 K. 2. 41. Is. 39. 1 כִּי חָלָה וַיִּיחַזַק *heard that he had been sick, and was better*.

(d) After hypothetical or conditional perf. 1 S. 25. 34 לֹא יָבֵא וְתִבְאִי (so *rd.*) unless thou hadst made haste and come; Ex. 20. 25 כִּי חִרְבָּה הִנֵּפֶת עָלֶיהָ וְתִחַלְלָהָ *hast thou lifted up thy iron upon it, thou hast polluted it*. Pr. 11. 2 בָּא זְדוֹן וַיָּבֵא קָלוֹן *has pride come, shame has come* (when pride comes then, &c.), cf. 18. 3.—Nu. 5. 27, Ps. 139. 11, Pr. 18. 22, Job 9. 16; 23. 13. In Opt. Sent. Jos. 7. 7, Is. 48. 18.

Rem. 1. The *contrast* in such passages as Gen. 32. 31 רָאִיתִי א' וְתִנָּצַל נַפְשִׁי I have seen God and (yet) *my life is preserved* hardly lies in the *vav*, but is suggested by the two events. 2 S. 3. 8. Neither is it probable that the *vav* expresses an *inference*; Job 2. 3 וְהִסִּיתֵנִי is not, and so (so that) *thou settest me on*. The ref. is rather to Satan's insinuation, ch. 1. 9 seq.

Rem. 2. It is questionable whether *vav impf.* has the



sense of plup. except in continuance of a perf. of that meaning. When *and* introduces something *anterior* to the general narrative, it is usually disconnected with the verb, which is then preceded by its subj. (§ 39 c). There are a few peculiar cases, Ex. 32. 29, 1 S. 14. 24, 1 K. 13. 12, Is. 39. 1, Jer. 39. 11, Zech. 7. 2, Neh. 2. 9. There is nothing to show that Ex. 32. 29 is anterior, it seems parallel to *v.* 26, 27. In 1 S. 14. 24 Sep. has a different text in which וַיֵּאָל stands quite regularly. In 1 K. 13. 12 the sense requires hiph. וַיִּרְאוּ *and they showed*. Possibly Is. 39. 1 should *rd.* as 2 K. 20. 12 *כי שמע*, though the mere fact of a different reading is not conclusive. See Driver's exhaustive note p. 84.

§ 49 (a) Vav impf. continues a perf. of experience, expressing a common truth. Is. 40. 24 וַיִּבְשׂוּ בָהֶם נְשָׁף he blows upon them, *and they wither*; Job 7. 9 כָּלָה עָנָן וַיִּלָּךְ the cloud wastes away *and vanishes*. Nah. 3. 16, Job 14. 2; 24. 2, 11. So in continuance of a ptc. with this meaning. Am. 5. 8 וַיִּשְׁפְּכֵם לְמֵי הַיָּם וַיִּשְׁפְּכֵם who calleth the waters of the sea, *and poureth them*; 9. 5.—Gen. 49. 17, 1 S. 2. 6, Jer. 10. 13, Am. 6. 3, Mic. 7. 3, Nah. 1. 4, Ps. 34. 8, cf. *v.* 21, Job 12. 18, 22–25, Pr. 21. 22.

(b) In continuance of prophetic perf. Is. 9. 5 בֶּן נִתַּן לָנוּ וַיִּקְרָא אֶת הַמֶּלֶךְ וַיִּתְּנוּ עָלָיו וַיִּקְרָא a son has been given us, *and the government is laid upon his shoulder, and they have called*. Ps. 22. 30 אָכְלוּ וַיִּשְׁתַּחֲוּוּ all the fat of the earth *have eaten and worshipped*. In such cases the *fut.* is almost necessary in Engl. owing to our different way of thinking. Is. 5. 25; 24. 18; 48. 20, 21, Mic. 2. 13, Jer. 8. 16, Ps. 20. 9. After perf. of confidence, Ps. 109. 28. With no preceding perf., but stating the issue of actions just described, Is. 2. 9 וַיִּשְׁחוּ אָדָם וַיִּשְׁפַּל אִישׁ אֶת אִישׁ therefore men *are brought down, and man humbled* (punishment, not practice as A.V.), cf. 5. 15; 44. 12, 13. Job 5. 15, 16; 36. 7. Or confident expectation, Ps. 64. 8–10 וַיִּרֶם הַיָּרֵחַ *hath shot at them, &c.* 94. 22, 23; 37. 40.

§ 50. (a) Vav impf. continues any verbal form as inf. or ptcp. which is used in a sense equivalent to a perf., and even a simple impf. having reference to past time. Gen. 39. 18 **וַאֲקָרָא** when I lifted up my voice *and cried*; 35. 3 **לְאֵל הָעֵנָה אֲתִי וַיְהִי עִמָּדִי** who answered me, *and was with me*. See exx. § 96, and R. 2, and § 100 *e*. Gen. 27. 33; 28. 6, 1 K. 18. 18, Ps. 50. 16 (past is reviewed).—Ps. 3. 5 **קוֹלִי אֶל־יְיָ אֶקְרָא וַיִּעֲנֵנִי** I cried aloud unto Je., *and he heard me*. Ps. 52. 9; 95. 10, 1 S. 2. 29, 1 K. 20, 33, Deu. 2. 12, Jer. 52. 7, Hos. 11. 4, cf. Gen. 37. 18.

(b) Vav impf. may naturally follow anything which forms a starting-point for a development, though not a verb, such as a statement of time, a *casus pendens*, or the like. Gen. 22. 4 **בַּיּוֹם הַשְּׁלִישִׁי וַיִּשָּׂא אֶת־עֵינָיו** on the third day *he lifted up* his eyes; Is. 6. 1 **וַאֲרָאָהּ וַאֲרָאָהּ** **בַּשָּׁנָת מוֹת הַמְּלָכָה** 1 S. 4. 20; 21. 6, Hos. 11. 1, Ps. 138. 3. 1 K. 15. 13 **וַגַּם אֶת־מִ' וַיִּסְרָהּ מִגְּבִירָה** and also Maacha his mother *he removed* from being dowager, 12. 17. Hos. 13. 6 **כְּמִרְעִיתָם וַיִּשְׁבְּעוּ** the more their pasture, *the more they ate themselves full*. Gen. 22. 24, 2 K. 16. 14, Jer. 6. 19, Mic. 2. 13, Ex. 14. 20. After **הִנֵּה** Nu. 22. 11. In 2 S. 11. 12 **וּמִמְחֶרֶת** begins *v.* 13. Similarly after a clause stating the ground or reason. 1 S. 15. 23 **וַיִּמְאַסָּה מִמְּלָכָה . . . וַיַּעַן מֵאִסָּה** because thou hast rejected the word of Je. *he has rejected* thee from being king. 1 K. 10. 9, Is. 45. 4; 48. 5, Job 36. 9, Ps. 59. 16 (Hitz. וַיִּלְיֵנוּ), cf. 1 S. 2. 16. Pr. 25. 4 (inf. abs.).

And vav impf. regularly continues another vav impf., as Nu. 22. 21, 22 **וַיִּהְיֶה רָאָה א' . . . וַיִּלְךָ . . . וַיִּתְבַּשׂ בל'** and Balaam arose and saddled his ass, and went . . . and the anger of God was kindled.

§ 51. In such sentences as *and in course of time Cain brought*, or, *and when they were in the field Cain rose up*, i.e. when the circumstances, temporal or adverbial, under which the action was performed are stated, the language

prefers to use co-ordinate clauses, prefixing **וַיְהִי** and *it was*. Gen. 4. 3 **וַיְהִי כִּי יָבִיא אָדָם וְחַוְוָה בְּעֵץ הַיָּדָע** and *it was* in course of time *that* (and) *Cain brought*; 4. 8 **וַיְהִי בְּהִיוֹתָם בַּשָּׂדֶה** and *it was* when they were in the field *that C. rose up*. This construction is the usual one in prose narrative. See for variety of usage Gen. 12. 11, 14; 19. 34; 21. 22; 22. 20; 24. 52; 26. 8; 27. 1; 29. 13; 41. 8, Jud. 1. 14; 11. 4, 1 S. 10. 11; 11. 11 end, 2 S. 2. 23.

Rem. 1. Such a sentence as *and when they saw her they praised her* may be made in various ways. 1. . . . **וַיְהִי פְרָאֲתָם** . . . **וַיְהַלְלוּ**. 2. . . . **פְּרָאֲתָם** . . . **וַיְהַלְלוּ**. 3. . . . **וַיְהַלְלוּ** . . . **וַיִּרְאוּ**. The first is usual; the second with inf. back in the clause is classical, *e.g.* Gen. 32. 26; 34. 7 (35. 9); the third not unusual with *see, hear, and finish* **פָּקַח** (24. 19; 30. 1; 37. 21, Ex. 34. 33, 2 S. 11. 27), but also in other cases. Other forms are rarer, *e.g.* Gen. 27. 34 **וַיְהַלְלוּ** . . . **פְּרָאֲתָם** without *and* (cf. 2 S. 15. 10); or mainly late, as **וַיְהַלְלוּ** . . . **וַיִּכְרְאוּ** or **וַיְהַלְלוּ** . . . **וַיִּכְרְאוּ** with *and* at the beginning.

The secution to **וַיְהִי** is not always vav impf., though this is usual. These forms appear 1. **וַיְהִי** . . . **וַיִּבְנֵא ק'** 2. **וַיְהִי** . . . **וַיִּבְנֵא ק'** 3. **וַיִּבְנֵא ק'** . . . **וַיְהִי** 4. **וַיִּבְנֵא ק'** . . . **וַיִּבְנֵא ק'**. Exx. of 2, Gen. 40. 1, Ex. 16. 27, Deu. 9. 11, Jos. 10. 27, 1 S. 18. 30, 1 K. 11. 4; 14. 25; 15. 29; 17. 17. Of 3, Gen. 7. 10; 15. 12; 22. 1, Ex. 12. 29, 1 S. 18. 1, 2 S. 3. 6, 2 K. 2. 9. In 4 **הִנֵּה** is usually followed by ptcp. or nominal sent.

Rem. 2. Ex. of vav impf. after stative verb, Is. 3. 16, *are haughty and walk*; Ps. 16. 9. The impf. after **וַיִּזְכֹּר**, &c. referring to the past (§ 45) is also continued by vav impf. Jos. 8. 30, 31; 10. 12; 22. 1, 1 K. 3. 16; 11. 7 perf., 2 K. 12. 18. On the other hand, the secution of fut. perf. (§ 41 c) is usually vav perf. or simple impf., Jud. 9. 9, 1 S. 26. 9, Is. 4. 4; 55. 10, 11, Gen. 26. 10; 43. 9. So very often the proph. perf. (§ 41 b) and perf. of confidence is continued by vav perf., the ideal position not being maintained. Gen. 9. 13; 17. 20, Nu. 24. 17, Deu. 15. 6, 2 K. 5. 20, Is. 2. 11; 43. 14.

Rem. 3. In the brief language of poetry vav impf. some-

times expresses a dependence which is usually expressed by **כִּי**. Is. 51. 12, 13 **כִּי־אָתָּה וְהוֹיָאֵי** who art thou *that thou fearest?* Ps. 144. 3 with 8. 5. Cf. Is. 49. 7.

Rem. 4. Vav impf. express the *ingress* or entrance upon realisation of the second action in connection with the first. But the second is confined to the sphere of the first, and has not independent duration, as an unconnected impf. might have. Thus **וַיֹּאמֶר וַיְהִי** *he said, and it was*, is all bounded by one circle, so that *and it was* becomes in usage the expression of a finished fact, taking on the quality of the preceding perf. Hence vav impf. comes to stand independently in the sense of the perf. It may be interjected like the perf. amidst other forms (§ 41 *b*), Ps. 55. 18, 19, Hab. 1. 10, or stand unconnected with immediately preceding forms, Ps. 8. 6 *and thou didst let him want*, adding merely another fact; cf. 2 S. 19. 2, where *mourns* is a larger idea than “weeps” which it embraces (unless “mourns” were understood of successive fits of lamentation). The fact expressed by vav. impf. may be completed really or only ideally. Jer. 38. 9 *and he is dead* (must die) of hunger; Job 10. 8 *and thou hast swallowed me up*; 10. 22 *and it has shone* (its light is) as darkness. Cf. the instructive pass. Nu. 12. 12.

In such poetical passages as Job 4. 5; 6. 21; 14. 10, where vav impf. appears to follow a present, it is not the vav impf. but the preceding verbs that are peculiar. The vigorous poetical style expresses the completed acts *touch, see, die*, by the impf. (pres.), cf. 14. 10 *b*.—It is not always easy to perceive the significance of the changes in secution; cf. Am. 9. 5 with Ps. 104. 32, Hos. 8. 13, Mic. 6. 16, Ps. 42. 6 with *v*. 12, Job 7. 17, 18; 9. 20, Ps. 52. 9.

Rem. 5. The use of the impf., particularly in poetry, can hardly be accounted for by supposing that it expresses in every case some meaning distinctively belonging to the simple impf. This difficulty has induced some scholars to assume that the vav conv. forms may be broken up and still retain the conversive sense. Hitz. proceeds on these principles: 1. vav and the verb may be separated, so that **וְקָטַל . . . !** = **וְקָטַלְוּ** vav perf.; and **וְקָטַל . . . !**, **וְקָטַלְוּ . . . !** =

וַיִּקְטֹל, and so וַיִּקְטֹל . . . וַיִּקְטֹל. Job. 5. 11; 28. 25, Is. 29. 16, Ps. 22. 22; 27. 10; 44. 10, Job 3. 25<sup>b</sup>; 4. 11, Jer. 44. 22.<sup>1</sup> 2. The simple impf. forms without vav may be equivalent to the convers. forms where the latter might have stood, viz. at the *head* of the clause, so that וַיִּקְטֹל, וַיִּקְטֹל = וַיִּקְטֹל and וַיִּקְטֹל = וַיִּקְטֹל, Ps. 8. 7; 18. 12; 44. 11; 81. 8; 138. 3; 139. 13, Hos. 6. 1. 3. The simple impf. forms (without vav in the clause) may be equivalent to the convers. forms in the middle of a clause, just because there the vav conv. forms could not stand, the vav necessarily falling away! Ps. 32. 5; 60. 12; 114. 3. Cf. Hitzig on Ps. 32. 5; 30. 9; 39. 4; 116. 3, Jer. 15. 6; 44. 22.

The exx. cited by Ew. indicate that he proceeds virtually on the same principles. 1. Ps. 69. 22 impf. disjoined from vav (in secution to vav impf.). 2. Ps. 78. 15 no vav but impf. at head of the clause where vav conv. impf. might have stood. So v. 26, 49, 50. 3. Ps. 81. 7 no vav in the clause and impf. (after perf.) not at the head. So Ps. 106. 18; 107. 6, 13. Driver admits of two cases: 1. Separation of vav by tmesis, but only with strictly *modified* form (וַיִּקְטֹל &c.). And 2. strictly modified form at head of clause without vav. If the principle be admitted at all, however, it will be necessary to go further, because the strictly modified forms are so few, and even they are not always employed.

In regard to 1, 3 of Hitz. above, it is certain that the presence or absence of a preceding vav has no effect on the usage of impf. in the middle of a clause.

It is not unnatural that in rapid and vigorous speech the vav might drop off when the verb stands at the head of a clause, particularly among other vav impf. forms, as Ps. 78. 15, 26. Comp. Ps. 106. 17 with Nu. 16. 32; 26. 10; Hos. 6. 1, Pr. 7. 7. Cf. Ps. 18. 12, 14, 16, 38, 39, 44, with the same verses in 2 S. 22.

Rem. 6. In some cases vav impf. is pointed as simple vav, e.g. Is. 10. 13 וַאֲסִיר, וַאֲוִיר, 43. 28 וַאֲחַלל, 48. 3; 51. 2;

<sup>1</sup> Hitz. extends the principle to prose, e.g. Deu. 2. 12, Jos. 15. 63, 2 S. 2. 28 (on Job 20. 19).

57. 17; 63. 3-5, Zech. 8. 10, Ps. 104. 32; 107. 26-29. In most of these cases the peculiarity belongs to the *first* pers. In some of them the vav has evidently conversive force, *e.g.* Is. 43. 28; 51. 2; in others, *e.g.* Is. 10. 13, it may be doubtful whether the impf. be not a graphic pres. or freq. There seems no doubt that according to the Massor. tradition the strong vav received in some instances a lighter pronunciation. On similar light vav with Juss. cf. § 65, R. 6.

Rem. 7. Strong vav is also used with Cohort. This form had no doubt originally a wider sense as an intensive. In some cases a certain force or liveliness may still appear in coh. with vav. conv., *e.g.* Gen. 41. 11 וַיִּחְלְמוּ and *why! we dreamed*, 32. 6, Ps. 3. 6; but often any additional emphasis is not to be detected, the form being partly rhythmical, 2 S. 22. 24, or probably, since coh. and juss. make up a single tense-form, partly used as the natural parallel to the juss. forms of vav impf. The use of strong vav with coh. is sporadic. It is rare in the prophets, and most common in the personal narratives in Ezz., Neh., and Dan.

#### PERFECT WITH STRONG VAV. VAV CONV. PERF.

§ 52. *Vav perf.* follows a simple impf. in any of its uses, and has the same use. It has, however, in practice become a tense-form, used in the sense of impf., particularly as fut. and freq., although no impf. precedes. When a neg. or other word must come between the *vav* and perf., the discourse returns to the simple impf. Is. 11. 6 וְרֵי זֵאֵב עִם-כֶּבֶשׂ וְנֶמֶר עִם-גְּדִי וְרִבְצֵי and the wolf shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; Hos. 2. 9 וּבִקְשָׁתָם לֹא תִמְצָא and she shall seek them, and shall not find them. Gen. 12. 12, 1 S. 1. 11.

§ 53. (a) *Vav perf.* continues impf. in the sense of fut., and its use in this sense is general, although no impf. immediately precedes. 1 K. 22. 22 אֵצֶא וְהָיִיתִי רוּחַ שָׁקֶר and I will go out and be a lying spirit; Jud. 6. 16 אֶהְיֶה עִמָּךְ

וְהִכִּיתָ *I will be with thee, and thou sha't smite* Midian. With interrog. Ex. 2. 7 וְקָרָאתִי וְקָרָאתִי shall I go *and call*? Jud. 15. 18, Ru. 1. 11, 1 S. 23. 2. With neg. Jer. 22. 10 לֹא יָשׁוּב עוֹד וְרָאָה he shall no more return, *and see* his native land. Gen. 18. 18; 24. 7, 38, 40; 40. 13, 19; 46. 33; 50. 25.

(b) It continues the impf. when it is contingent or dependent on something foregoing, and in general in the senses mentioned § 43 *b*. *E.g.* of volition, 1 S. 17. 32 עֲבֹדָה וְנִלְחָם וְנִלְחָם thy servant *will go and fight*. Of command, Ex. 20. 24 מִזְבֵּחַ אֲדָמָה תַעֲשֶׂה לִּי וְזָבַחְתָּ an altar of earth *shalt thou make me, and sacrifice* upon it; *v.* 9.—Gen. 37. 26 what gain בְּיָנִיחַ אֶת־אָחִינוּ וְכִסִּינוּ אֶת־דַּמּוֹ that we *should kill* our brother, *and cover* his blood? 1 S. 29. 8.—Gen. 27. 12 וְיִמְשְׁנֵנִי וְהִייתִי כְּמִתְעַתֵּעַ perhaps he *may feel me, and I shall be* as one that mocks him. 2 K. 19. 4, Nu. 22. 11, 2 S. 16. 12.—2 K. 14. 10 וְלָמָּה תִּתְגַּרְרָה בְּרַעְיָהּ why *shouldst thou provoke* misfortune *and fall*? Jer. 40. 15.—Gen. 39. 9 אֵיךְ אֶעֱשֶׂה . . . וְהִטָּאתִי . . . how *should I do* this great evil *and sin*! 2 S. 12. 18 how *shall we tell* him, *and he will take on* (how if . . . he will, &c.).—Jud. 1. 12 וְנָתַתִּי לוֹ אֲשֶׁר יַכֶּה קִס וְלָכְרָה . . . וְנָתַתִּי לוֹ whoever *smites* Kirjath Sepher, *and takes it*, I will give, &c. Gen. 44. 9. After עַד, Gen. 29. 8, Jud. 16. 2, 1 S. 1. 22, 2 S. 10. 5, Hos. 5. 15. After בְּטָרֶם Ex. 1. 19, 1 S. 2. 15 in a *freq.* sense. See Cond. Sent.

(c) It continues an impf. following telic particles. Gen. 32. 12 וְהִכִּינוּ וְהִכִּינוּ lest he come *and smite me*. Is. 28. 13 וְנִשְׁבְּרוּ וְנִשְׁבְּרוּ that they may go, *and fall and be broken*, &c. With וְלֹא that *not* Deu. 19. 10; 23. 15.—Gen. 3. 22; 19. 19, Ex. 1. 10, Deu. 4. 16, 19; 6. 15, 1 S. 9. 5, Is. 6. 10, Hos. 2. 5, Am. 5. 6.—Gen. 12. 13, Nu. 15. 40, Deu. 4. 1; 6. 18.

Rem. 1. It is rarer that impf. with simple *vav* is used instead of *vav perf.* after the particles in *b, c*, as Ps. 2. 12 **וְחָאֲבָדוּ** **פְּרִיאַנְהוּ** lest he be angry *and ye perish*. In most of the cases the verbs are parallel (just as in very many other cases they are asyndetous), e.g. Is. 40. 27 (**לְמַה**); Ex. 23. 12, Is. 41. 20 (**לְמַעַן**). And **אִילֵי** *perhaps* has often almost the force of a wish, and *vav* with impf. expresses purpose. Jer. 20. 10 (cohor.), Nu. 22. 6, 1 K. 18. 5.

§ 54. *Vav perf.* continues an impf. expressing what is customary or general (freq. impf.) in pres. or past. (a) Ex. 1. 19 **וַיִּלְדוּ** **הַמִּיּוֹלְדֹת** **תְּבוֹא** **בְּטַרְסָם** before the midwife comes they are delivered; Hos. 7. 7 **כָּלֵם** **יַחֲמוּ** **בַתַּנּוּר** they all get heated like an oven, and devour their judges; Is. 36. 6 **אִישׁ** **עָלָיו** **וּבָא** **בְּכַפּוֹ** on which one leans, and it goes into his hand; Am. 5. 19 **כַּאֲשֶׁר** **יָנוּס** **הָאִישׁ** **מִפְּנֵי** **הָאֲרִי** **וּפָגְעוּ** **הַדָּב** as a man flees from a lion, and a bear meets him. Ex. 18. 16, Deu. 5. 21; 11. 10, Is. 29. 8, 11, 12, Jer. 17. 5-8; 20. 9, Ez. 29. 7, Mic. 2. 1, 2, Pr. 4. 16; 16. 29; 18. 10, 17.

(b) Very commonly in the past. Gen. 2. 6 **וַיֵּעַל** **הַמַּיִם** a mist used to go up, and water; 2. 10 **וַיִּפְרָד** **וַיְהִי** from there it separated itself, and became four heads; 1 S. 2. 19, 20, and a little robe **וַתַּעֲשֶׂה** **לּוֹ** his mother used to make for him, and bring it up to him every year. Gen. 6. 4; 29. 2, 3; 31. 8; 38. 9, Ex. 17. 11, Nu. 21. 8, 9, 1 K. 18. 10. This use of *vav perf.* is very common in graphic descriptions of past events that were customary or habitual, and in giving the details of a scene. Gen. 29. 2, 3 (watering of the flocks), Ex. 33. 7-11 (procedure with the Tabernacle), Jud. 2. 18, 19 (what happened when a Judge was raised up), Jud. 6. 2-6 (details of a Midianite raid), 1 S. 1. 4-7 (Elkanah's case with his two wives), 1 S. 2. 13-16 (practice of the priests), 1 S. 17. 34-36 (David's



experiences with wild beasts), Am. 4. 7, 8 (a drought), 1 K. 5. 6-8 (Solomon's menage).

Rem. 1. (1) The story is generally introduced by *וְהָיָה* and it used to be, followed by *אִם* or *כִּי* with perf. (simple perf. Nu. 11. 8), sometimes without *וְהָיָה* (Jud. 2. 18); or by freq. impf. Ex. 33. 7. (2) Details are often introduced or a new start made in the narrative by *וְהָיָה*. (3) When vav is disjoined from the verb the simple freq. impf. is employed. (4) The writer does not always consistently continue vav perf. or freq. impf., but falls into simple narrative with vav impf., &c., 1 S. 2. 16, Jud. 6. 4; 12. 5, 6. The passage 1 S. 17. 34 seq. is freq., *וַיִּקַּם* having the force of a vigorous supposition (when he rose up).

The use of vav perf. as freq. is exceedingly free; it may occur in any connexion, introducing an additional trait or an entirely new fact. Is. 6. 3 *וַיִּקְרָא זֶה אֶל־זֶה* and one cried (continuously) to the other; 2 S. 12. 16 *וַיָּבֹא וְלָן וַיִּשְׁכַּב* and he went in and lay all night (the child died on 7th day). 1 S. 7. 16 *וַיֵּלֶךְ* and he used to go yearly (following a historical narrative); 1 K. 9. 25 *וַיַּעֲלֶה שְׁלֹשׁ* and Sol. offered thrice a year (a new point). 1 S. 16. 23; 27. 9, 1 K. 4. 7, 2 K. 3. 4, cf. Gen. 37. 3.

§ 55. Vav perf. continues verbal forms belonging to the sphere of impf., or equivalent to it in meaning, as (a) imper., coh., juss.; (b) infin.; (c) ptep.

(a) 1 S. 8. 22 *וְהִמְלִכְתָּם וְשָׁמְעוּ בְקוֹלָם* listen to their voice, and appoint a king; 1 K. 2. 31 *וַיִּפְגַּע־בּוֹ וַיִּקְבְּרֵתוֹ* fall upon him, and bury him. Gen. 6. 14; 19. 2; 45. 19, Ex. 18. 19-22, 1 S. 12. 24; 15. 3, 18, 2 S. 19. 34, 1 K. 2. 36; 17. 13, Jer. 25. 15. So after inf. abs. as general imper. (§ 88 b), Deu. 1. 16; 31. 26, Jer. 32. 14. Cohort., Gen. 31. 44 *נִכְרְתָה בְרִית לֵעֵד וְהָיָה לְעֵד* let us make a cov. and it shall be a witness; Ru. 2. 7. After juss., Ex. 5. 7 *יֵלְכוּ וַיִּקְטְפוּ תִבְנִין* let them go themselves, and gather straw. 1 K. 1. 2; 22. 13. Gen. 1. 14; 28. 3.

(b) Infin.—In ref. to fut., 2 K. 18. 32 *עַד־בָּאִי וְלִקְחֵתִי*

till I come *and take* you; Jud. 8. 7 אֶת־זֶבַח בְּיָדִי בָּתַת י' אֶת־שָׂמִי when Je. gives Zebah into my hand *I will thrash*, &c. Gen. 27. 45, Ex. 1. 16; 7. 5, Jud. 6. 18, 1 S. 10. 2, 8, 1 K. 2. 42, 2 K. 10. 2, 3. So inf. abs. for finite verb, Is. 5. 5; 31. 5. After inf. in *freq.* sense, Am. 1. 11 וְשָׁחַת וְאָחִיו אָחִיו עַל־רַדְפּוֹ אָחִיו וְשָׁחַת and *stifled his compassions*; Jer. 7. 9, 10 הֲגִנֵּב רֶצַח הֲגִנֵּב רֶצַח וְנָאֵף . . . יִבְאֵתוּם *do ye steal, murder, commit adultery . . . and then come and stand before me!* 23. 14.

(c) Ptcp.—In ref. to fut., Ex. 7. 17 . . . הִנֵּה אֲנֹכִי מִכָּה לְדָם וְנִהְפְּכוּ לְדָם behold *I will smite* the waters, *and they shall be turned* into blood. So *v.* 27, 28; 8. 17; 17. 6, Deu. 4. 22, Jos. 1. 13, 1 S. 14. 8, 1 K. 2. 2; 13. 2, 3; 20. 36, Jer. 21. 9; 25. 9. In a contingent or *freq.* sense, Ex. 21. 12 מִכָּה אִישׁ וּמָת any one who smites a man *so that he dies*; 2 S. 14. 10 הַמְדַבֵּר אֵלַי וְהֵבֵאתוֹ אֵלַי whoever speaks to thee *bring him to me* (it is scarcely necessary to read וְהֵבֵאתוֹ, cf. Jer. 2. 27, Song 5. 9, Jos. 2. 17, 20). 1 S. 2. 13, 14 כָּל־אִישׁ זָבַח וְזָבַח וְיָבֵא whenever any one sacrificed the priest's man *would come . . . v.* 14. Nu. 21. 8, 2 S. 17. 17, Mic. 3. 5.

§ 56. Vav perf. may follow anything which supplies the ground or condition of a new development. Hence it forms the apodosis to temporal, causal, and conditional sentences or their equivalents, *casus pendens*, &c. Gen. 3. 5 בְּיוֹם עֵינֵיכֶם וְנִפְקְחוּ on the day ye eat *your eyes shall be opened*. Obad. 8. Hos. 1. 4 וּפָקַדְתִּי מְעַט עוֹד yet a little, *and I will visit*; and often with עוֹד, Ex. 17. 4, Is. 10. 25; 21. 16; 29. 17, cf. 16. 14; 18. 5, 1 S. 2. 31, 1 K. 13. 31.—Is. 6. 7 וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה וְעוֹנֶה this has touched thy lips, *and thine iniquity shall depart*. Ps. 25. 11 לְמַעַן שְׁמָחָה וְסָלַחְתָּ for thy name's sake *pardon*. Is. 3. 16, 17; 37. 29, Nu. 14. 24, Jud. 11. 8, 1 K. 20. 28, 2 K. 19. 28.—*Casus pendens*, Is. 9. 4 כָּל־סַאֲוֹן סַאֲוֹן . . . יִבְרָחְתָּ for every boot of him that trampeth in the fray . . . *shall be* for burning; 10. 26

וּמָטָהוּ עַל־הַיָּם וּנְשָׂאוֹ and his rod upon the sea, *he shall lift it up*. Nu. 14. 31, 1 S. 25, 27, 2 S. 14. 10. After הִנֵּה. Nu. 14. 40 הִנְנוּ וְעָלִינוּ; Jer. 23. 39 הִנְנִי וְנִשְׂיִתִּי (so *rd.* = וּנְשָׂאתִי). Ez. 34. 11. Cf. Gen. 47. 23. In all the above uses of vav the apod. has a certain emphasis.

And, of course, vav perf. continues another vav perf. Gen. 3. 22 פָּוִישְׁלַח . . . וְלָקַח . . . וְאָכַל . . . וְחָי . . . Deu. 11. 18-20.

§ 57. When there is an adverbial clause the phrase וְהָיָה *and it shall be*, or, *was* (freq.), is often prefixed, particularly when the actions are *fut.* or *frequentative*. Ex. 22. 26 וְהָיָה וְהָיָה כִּי־יִצְעַק אֵלַי וְשָׁמַעְתִּי *and when he shall cry unto me, I will hear*; Nu. 21. 9 וְחָי . . . וְהָיָה אִם־נִשְׁךְ אֶת־אִישׁ וְהָבִיט . . . וְחָי . . . *and it was if a serpent had bitten a man, he looked . . . and lived*; Jud. 6. 3 וְהָיָה אִם־זָרַע יִשׂ וְעָלָה מִדְּיָן *and it was when Israel had sown, Midian used to come up*. Gen. 24. 14; 27. 40, 44. 31, Ex. 1. 10; 4. 8, 9; 17. 11; Deu. 17. 18, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 3. 9; 16. 16, 1 K. 1. 21; 11. 38.—Gen. 30. 41; 38. 9, Jud. 19. 30, 1 S. 16. 23, 2 S. 14. 26; 15. 5. If *and* be disjoined from verb the impf. must be used, Gen. 12. 12; 30. 42. But frequently impf. without *and* is employed, Gen. 4. 14, Ex. 33. 7-9, 1 S. 2. 36; 17. 25, 2 S. 15. 35, 1 K. 2. 37; 19. 17, 2 K. 4. 10, Is. 2. 2; 10. 27; 14. 3, 4.

Rem. 1. In § 56 the time designations are sometimes very terse; Ex. 16. 6 עָרַב וַיִּרְעָתֶם *at evening, then ye shall know*. Cf. Nu. 16. 5 בֹּקֶר וַיִּרְעַע *in the morning he will show*. Jud. 16. 2. Pr. 24. 27 אַחֲרַי וּבְנִיתָ *afterwards, then build thy house*, 1 K. 13. 31. The causal connection also may be very slightly expressed. Gen. 20. 11 there is no fear of God here וְהָרַגְנִי *and they will kill me*. Ru. 3. 9 I am Ruth וּפָרַשְׁתָּ *therefore spread thy skirt*. 2 K. 9. 26 I saw the blood of Naboth yesterday וּשְׁלַמְתִּי *and I will requite thee*. Is. 5. 8 till there be no place וְהִשְׁבַּתְתֶּם *and ye be let dwell alone*. 2 S. 7. 9, 14; 14. 7, Gen. 26. 10, 22, Deu. 6. 5, Jud. 1. 15, Pr. 6. 11; 24. 33, 34. Am. 5. 26, 27, *and* (therefore) ye shall

take up (the unexpressed ground is the exaggerated cultus in contrast to *v.* 25).

Vav perf., however, has acquired the force of a representative of the impf., and may occur in a fut. or freq. sense in any connection. Josh. 22. 28, Is. 2. 2, Jud. 13. 3, 1 S. 15. 28, 1 K. 2. 44. Ex. 6. 6, 2 S. 16. 13. Peculiar Am. 7. 4 וְאִכְלָהּ and it *would* (or *will*, is in act to—the imminent act made pres.) *devour*. The act was not begun.

Rem. 2. The two most common forms of § 57 are Hos. 1. 5 וְהָיָה בַיּוֹם הַהוּא וְשָׁבַרְתִּי I *will break*; and Hos. 2. 23 וְהָיָה בַיּוֹם הַהוּא אֶעֱנֶה I *will answer*, cf. *v.* 18. The latter common in Is. (see exx. at end of § 57). Am. 8. 9, Zeph. 1. S, with 12.

Rem. 3. In later style וְהָיָה sometimes agrees with *subj.*, Nu. 5. 27, Jer. 42. 16; cf. *v.* 17, instead of being used impersonally.

#### PERF. AND IMPF. WITH SIMPLE VAV (COPULATIVE)

§ 58. In the more ancient and classical language *vav* with perf. is almost invariably conversive. In the declining stages of the speech the *vav* of the form וְקָטַל is often simply copulative, *and he killed*; while in post-biblical language the *vav* convers. disappears. In the classical language, however, *vav* with perf. occasionally expresses an action not consequential or successive to what precedes, but co-ordinate with it.

(a) When the second verb merely repeats the idea of the first, being synonymous, or in some way parallel with it. 1 S. 12. 2 וְאֲנִי זָקֵנְתִי וְשִׁבְתִּי I am old *and grey*; Is. 1. 2 וְרִמַּמְתִּי וְגִדַּלְתִּי בְּנִים I have nourished *and brought up* children. Gen. 31. 7 he has cozened me, *and changed* (changing) my hire. Deu. 2. 30, Nu. 23. 19, 1 K. 8. 47, 2 K. 19. 22, Is. 29. 20; 63. 10, Ps. 20. 9; 27. 2; 38. 9, Job 1. 5, Lam. 2. 22, 1 Chr. 23. 1. This differs little from the asyndetous construction. Jos. 13. 1, Lam. 2. 16, Jud. 5. 27.

(b) When the second verb expresses a contrast. 1 K. 3. 11 **לֹא שָׁאַלְתָּ יָמִים . . . וְשָׁאַלְתָּ** thou hast not asked long life . . . *but hast asked*, &c. Jer. 4. 10, thou saidst, Ye shall have peace **וְנִגְעָה חֶרֶב עַד־הַנְּפֶשׁ** *whereas the sword reaches to the life*. 1 S. 10. 2 he has lost thought of the asses **וְדָאָג לָכֶם** *and is concerned about you*. 2 K. 8. 10, Pr. 9. 12. And, in general, when an action is thrown out of the stream of narrative, and invested with distinct importance and independence. Gen. 21. 25 **וְהוֹכַח אֲבִי** and Abr. *chid with Abimelek*. Gen. 34. 5 *held his peace*, so 2 K. 18. 36. 1 K. 21. 12 (the *two* points in Jezebel's letter are carried out). 2 K. 18. 4, where, perhaps, each of the acts is emphasised. Is. 1. 8 *and is left*, 22. 14; 28. 26.

(c) But there are many cases where *vav* with perf. appears in simple narrative, and is merely copulative. 1 K. 12. 32; 13. 3; 14. 27; 2 K. 14. 7, 10; 21. 4; 23. 4, and often. The usage becomes more common as the language declines, and comes under the influence of Aramaic. Even in early style the form **וְהָיָה** *and it was* is not quite rare. Am. 7. 2, 1 S. 1. 12; 10. 9; 17. 48; 25. 20, 2 S. 6. 16. In Gen. 38. 5 *rd.* **וְהָיָה** with Sep.

Rem. 1. The perf. with *vav* seems occasionally to resume and restate briefly an event previously described in detail; Jud. 7. 13 **וַנִּפֹּל**, 1 K. 20. 21, Gen. 15. 6? The two cases of **וַיִּנְעַל** Jud. 3. 23, 2 S. 13. 18 are curious. In 2 S. *v.* 18 states how the *two* injunctions of *v.* 17 were literally carried out. In 1 K. 11. 10 **וַיִּצְוָה** has almost plup. sense. In 1 K. 6. 32, 35 **וַיִּקְלַע** is freq., distributing the act over several objects; § 54 *b.* In 2 S. 16. 5 the consn. is unusual, two nominal clauses might have been expected. In some cases the text is faulty, as Is. 38. 15 **וַאֲמַר**.

§ 59. The impf. with simple *vav* (copulative) is common in all periods of the language, especially in animated speech. The use of the simple impf., and especially its repetition,

gives the various actions more independence and force than if the ordinary secution with *vav perf.* had been adopted. Gen. 49. 7 וְאֶפְצֵם . . . וְאֶחְלַקְם *I will divide them . . . and I will scatter them*; Hos. 5. 14 אֶטְרֶף וְאֶלֶדְךָ. Sometimes with force of contrast, Hos. 6. 1 טָרַף וְיִרְפֵּאנוּ he has torn, *but he will heal us*. 8. 13; 13. 8, Is. 5. 29. The asyndetous consn. is only slightly more vivid. Ex. 15. 9, Hos. 5. 15; 6. 3; 9. 9; 10. 2 (common in Hos.). In later style impf. with simple *vav* is used where earlier style would have used *vav perf.*, Ps. 91. 14; and in conditional sentences, Is. 40. 30.

THE MOODS. IMPERATIVE, JUSSIVE, AND  
COHORTATIVE.

§ 60. The imper. is used, as in other languages, to express a *command, advice* (often *ironical*, 1 K. 2. 22, Am. 4. 4), *permission, or request*. Besides the ordinary form one strengthened by ה may be used, to which or to the ordinary form the precative particle נָא is often added; Gen. 27. 26 הִגִּידִי נָא לִי וְשָׁקְהִלִי *come here and kiss me!* 24. 23 תִּגִּידִי נָא לִי *tell me!* Ex. 20. 12, 2 S. 18. 23, Nu. 23. 7.

The imper. is only used in 2nd pers.; for other persons the impf. (juss., coh.) must be employed; Gen. 18. 4 יִקְחֵנָּה מֵעַט מַיִם *let some water be brought*. Even for the 2nd pers. the impf. is often used, § 45, R. 4. Gen. 44. 33, 1 K. 1. 2.

The imper. cannot be used with negative particles. The impf. must be used, whether with לֹא, expressing a *command*, or with אַל, expressing oftener *dissuasion, deprecation*. In the latter case the juss. is very common. Gen. 45. 9 רְדֵה אֵלַי אֲלֵי *come down to me, delay not*; Deu. 9. 7 זָכֵר אֶל־תְּשַׁכַּח *remember, forget not*. Gen. 18. 3; 26. 2; 37. 22, Deu. 31. 6, 2 K. 18. 26–32, Is. 6. 9, Jer. 4. 3, 4. Ex. 20. 3 *seq.*

Rem. 1. While the lengthened imper. originally expressed some subjective emphasis on the part of the speaker,

it is often difficult to see any difference between the forms in usage, comp. Jud. 9. 8 with *v.* 14, 1 S. 9. 23. The extended form seems more courteous than the abrupt shorter form, but euphony always exerts an influence. In some cases the longer form has become fixed, as *חַיְשָׁה* *hasten*, *עֹרָה* *awake*, *הַבִּי־שָׁה* *bring near*, *הִשְׁבַּעְהָ* *swear*, *הִקְשִׁיבָה* *listen* (exc. Job 33. 31), and others.

Rem. 2. The imper. is sometimes interjected in descriptions of the fut., the speaker himself taking part in the events described, and directly addressing the subject of them. This imper. is equivalent to a strong subjective expression of fut., e.g. Is. 54. 14 *רְחֵקִי* *be far* = *thou shalt be far*, Ps. 110. 2, Job 5. 22, 1 S. 10. 7, Is. 37. 30; 65. 18.

Rem. 3. In higher style the plur. imper. is used when no definite subj. is addressed; Is. 13. 2 *שִׂאֲרִינִס* *lift up a signal!* = let a signal be lifted up! 14. 21, and often.

Rem. 4. A number of imper. may follow one another, particularly in animated speech. Gen. 27. 19, Jer. 5. 1. Various forms appear. 1. *לֵךְ אָמַר* *go, say*, Deu. 5. 27, 2 S. 7. 3, 1 K. 18. 8, 19, 41, 44; 19. 5, Hos. 1. 2. 2. *לֵךְ וְאָמַר* *go and say*, 1 K. 22. 22, &c. 3. *לֵךְ וְאָמַרְתָּ*, Deu. 12. 28, Jud. 4. 6, 2 S. 7. 5, 1 K. 19. 11, Is. 6. 9. 4. *הֲלוֹךְ וְאָמַרְתָּ*, Jer. 2. 1; 3. 12, and often in Jer., 2 S. 24. 12, 2 K. 5. 10.

Not uncommon formulas are, 1 K. 20. 7 *דַּעֲרִינָא וְרָאִי*, *v.* 22 sing., Jer. 2. 19. Different order, Jer. 5, 1 *וְרָאִינָא וְדַעֲו*, cf. both forms, 1 S. 23. 22, 23.

§ 61. Jussive and Cohortative.<sup>1</sup>—Besides the ordinary impf. there are two modified forms of it, the so-called Cohortative and the Jussive. The former, used in the *first* person, expresses the *desire, will, or intention* of the speaker when he himself is subj. of the action; the juss., used in second and third pers., expresses the speaker's *desire, will, or command* when others are the subj. of the action. The

<sup>1</sup> The impf. &c. of an Ar. verb. in 3rd pers. is as follows :—

	<i>Impf.</i>	<i>Subj.</i>	<i>Juss.</i>	<i>Energic.</i>
3 s.	yaqtulu	yaqtula	yaqtul	yaqtulanna, yaqtulan,
3 pl.	yaqtul <sup>ana</sup>	yaqtul <sup>u</sup>	yaqtul <sup>u</sup>	<i>p.</i> yaqtula.

first form is called by some the Intentional; others embrace both under the name Voluntative.

When special cohort. and juss. forms exist they are generally used to express the senses just noted, but by no means uniformly, the simple impf. being often found where the modified forms might have been employed. Job 3. 9 **אֱלֹהֵי יָרָאָה** with 20. 17 **אֱלֹהֵי יִרְאֶה**.

§ 62. Use of Cohort.—The coh. or intentional is used to express the *will* of the speaker in ref. to his own action, Deu. 12. 20 **בָּשָׂר אֲכָלָה** *I would eat* flesh; 17. 14 **אֲשִׁימָהּ** **גְּלָתָהּ וְנִעַבְדָּהּ א'** *I will set* a king over me; 13. 7 **נָא אֲחֵרִים** *we will go and serve* other gods. The particle **נָא** is often added, Gen. 18. 21 **אֲרָדָה נָא** *I will go down*, Ex. 3. 3, Jud. 19. 11, 13, Is. 5. 1. The cohort. form is only occasional with neg., 2 S. 24. 14 **וּבְיַד אָדָם אֲלֵי אֶפְלָה** . . . but into the hand of man *let me not fall*; Jer. 17. 18; 18. 18, Jon. 1. 14, Ps. 25. 2; 69. 15. When there are several verbs one may have coh. form and the others not, or all may have it. Comp. Is. 1. 24, Gen. 24. 57, Ps. 26. 6 with Gen. 22. 5; 33. 12, 2 S. 3. 21, Hos. 2. 9; 6. 3, Ps. 27. 6.—Thus when the speaker is free the coh. expresses intention or determination, or it may be desire; when he is dependent on others it expresses a wish or request. Gen. 11. 3, 4, 7; 12. 2, 3; 33. 14; 50. 5, Nu. 21. 22, Deu. 2. 27, Jud. 12. 5, 1 S. 28. 22, 2 S. 16. 9, 1 K. 19. 20.

§ 63. Use of Jussive.—The juss. is used—(a) to express a command; 1 S. 10. 8 **שִׁבְעַת יָמִים תֵּוָחַל** seven days *thou shalt wait*. Particularly in neg. sentences, Deu. 3. 26 **אֲלֵי-תוֹסֵף דַּבֵּר אֵלַי עוֹד** *speak to me no more*; Hos. 4. 4 **אִישׁ אֲלֵי-יִרְבֵּה וְאֲלֵי-יִכָּח אִישׁ** *let none contend and none reprove*. If there be several neg. clauses **לֹא** is often used after the first, 1 K. 20. 8 **אֲלֵי-תִשְׁמַע וְלֹא תֵאָמֵר** *listen not, nor consent*, Am. 5. 5; but in impassioned language **אֵל**



is retained, Hos. 4. 15, Ob. 12-14.—Gen. 22. 12; 30. 34; 33. 9; 45. 20, Deu. 15. 3.

(b) To express advice or recommendation; Jud. 15. 2 her sister is prettier *תְּהִינָא לָהּ תַּחֲמִיָּה* *have her* instead of her; Gen. 41. 33 *יִרְא פְּרָעָה אִישׁ וַיִּשְׂיֵתְהוּ* (so Baer) *let Ph. look out a man and place him*; v. 34. Ex. 8. 25, 1 K. 1. 2; 22. 13.

(c) To express a wish, request, or entreaty; 1 S. 1. 23 *תִּשְׁבֶּנָּא וַיְקַם יְיָ* *may Je. fulfil his word*; 1 K. 17. 21 *תִּשְׁבֶּנָּא הַנְּפֹשׁ הַיֶּלֶד הַזֶּה* *may the soul of this child return*; Gen. 18. 30 *אַל תִּחַר לְאָדָנִי* *be not angry, Lord*. Gen. 13. 8; 19. 7; 26. 28; 30. 24; 31. 49; 44. 33; 45. 5, Ex. 5. 21, Nu. 23. 10, 1 S. 24. 16, 2 S. 19. 38, 1 K. 20. 32.

Rem. 1. In a few cases the coh. appears in 3rd pers., Deu. 33. 16 (*rd. תבואה?*), Is. 5. 19, Ps. 20. 4, Job 11. 17. On the other hand a few cases occur of juss. in 1st pers., 1 S. 14. 36, 2 S. 17. 12, Is. 41. 23 (Kth.), 28. These facts might suggest that coh. was at one time a complete tense-form (like Ar. *energic*), and that the same was true of juss. At present the fragmentary forms supplement each other.

Rem. 2. Except in neg. sent. the juss. of 2nd pers. is rare, the imper. being used. in 2nd pers. 1 S. 10. 8, Ez. 3. 3 (Sep. points *Ḳal*), Ps. 71. 21. It is also rarely that the juss. is used after *לֹא*; Gen. 24. 8, 1 Sam. 14. 36, 2 S. 17. 12; 18. 14 (coh.), 1 K. 2. 6, Ez. 48. 14. Deu. 13. 1.?

Rem. 3. The form *יִסֶּף* &c. (hiph. of *יסף*) occurs with no juss. sense, e.g. Nu. 22. 19, Deu. 18. 16, Hos. 9. 15; Jo. 2. 2, Ez. 5. 16. So Gen. 4. 12 (hardly from being apod. of a condition). There seems a confusion with *Ḳal* of *אסף* as a *פֶּאֶ*; cf. 2 S. 6. 1, Mic. 4. 6, Ps. 104. 29.

On some anomalous uses of juss. and coh. cf. § 65, R. 5. 6.

## THE MOODS WITH LIGHT VAV

§ 64. Imper. with simple vav.—The imper. with simple vav following another imper. expresses the certain *effect* of the first, or it may be its *purpose*. The first imper. in this case virtually expresses a condition which carries with it the second as a consequence. Gen. 42. 18 *וַעֲשׂוּ וַחַיּוּ* *do this and live*; 2 K. 5. 13 *רָחַץ וְשָׂהַר* *wash and become clean*; Is. 45. 22 *וְהִרְשָׁעוּ אֵלַי וְהִנָּשְׁעוּ* *look unto me, and be saved*. Sometimes the certain *issue* rather than strict consequence is expressed, as in the ironical concession, Is. 8. 9 *הִתְאַזְרוּ* *gird yourselves, but (ye shall) be confounded*. 2 K. 18. 31, Am. 4. 4; 5. 4, 6, Jer. 25. 5; 27. 12, Ps. 37. 27. Without *vav*, Hos. 10. 12, Song 4. 16, Pr. 20. 13.

§ 65. Juss. and coh. with simple vav.—The coh. and juss. with simple vav are greatly used to express *design* or *purpose*; or, according to our way of thought, sometimes *effect*. If the purpose-clause be neg. *וְלֹא* with indic. is almost always used.

(a) After an imper., or anything with imper. sense, as coh. or juss. Gen. 27. 4 *וְאָבְלָה לִי וְאִכְלָהּ* *bring to me that I may eat*; Ex. 14. 12 *חַדַּל מִמֶּנּוּ וְנַעֲבֹדָה אֶת־מִצְרָיִם* *leave us alone, that we may serve Egypt*; Jud. 6. 30 *הוֹצֵא אֶת־בְּנִי וְיָמָת* *bring out thy son, that he may die*; Ex. 32. 10 *וְיִחַר־אַפִּי לִי וְנִיחָהּ* *let me alone, that my anger may burn*; Gen. 42. 2 *שָׂבְרוּ־לָנוּ וְנָחִיָּה וְלֹא נָמוּת* *buy corn for us, that we may live, and not die*; 1 S. 5. 11 *וְיָשָׁב וְלֹא יִשְׁלַחַנִי* *send away the ark that it may return, and not kill me*; 2 S. 13. 25 *אֲלֵ־נָא נִלְוֵהְךָ כְּלָנוּ וְלֹא נִכְבֵּד עָלֶיךָ* *let us not all go, that we be not burdensome to thee*. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) After clauses expressing a wish or hope. Jud. 9. 29 *מִי יִתֵּן אֶת־הָעָם הַזֶּה בְּיָדִי וְאֶסְרֶיהָ* *would that this people were in my hand, that I might (then I would) remove Abim.*

Is. 25. 9, Jer. 8. 23; 9. 1; 20. 10 (after אֹרְלִי, cf. coh. Ex. 32. 30), Ps. 55. 7, Job 6. 9, 10; 13. 5; 22. 28; 23. 3-5; 16. 20, 21 my eye drops (= a prayer) *that he would vindicate*.

(c) After neg. sentences. Nu. 23. 19 וְיִכְזֹב לֹא אִישׁ אֵל God is not a man, *that he should lie*; cf. inf. 1 S. 15. 29. Ps. 51. 18 לֹא תִחְפֹּץ זָבַח וְאֶתְנָה thou desirest not sacrifice, *that I should give it*. 2 K. 3. 11, Is. 53. 2, Ps. 49. 8-10; 55. 13. Without *and*, Job 9. 33 there is no daysman, *that he might lay his hand upon us both*. So *v.* 32.

(d) After interrog. sentences. 1 K. 22. 20 מִי יִפְתָּה who will entice Ahab *to go up?* Am. 8. 5 מָתַי יַעֲבֹר הַחֹדֶשׁ וְנִשְׁבִּירָה שֶׁבֶר when will the new moon be over, *that we may sell corn?* Ex. 2. 7, 1 S. 20. 4, 1 K. 12. 9 (cf. inf. *v.* 6), 2 K. 3. 11. Is. 19. 12; 40. 25; 41. 26, 28, Jer. 23. 18 (*rd.* last word וְיִשְׁמַע, cf. *v.* 22), Hos. 14. 10 (Jer. 9. 11), Jon. 1. 11, Lam. 2. 13, Job 41. 3, Est. 5. 3, 6.

Instead of vav with juss. or coh. the more vigorous imper. with vav may be found in the above cases, *a-d*. Gen. 20. 7; 45. 18, Ex. 3. 10, 2 S. 21. 3, 1 K. 1. 12, 2 K. 5. 10; 18. 32; Ps. 128. 5, Job 11. 6, Ru. 1. 9.

Rem. 1. Additional exx. of § 65*a*. Gen. 13. 9; 18. 30; 19. 20; 27. 21; 30. 25, 28; 42. 20, Ex. 8. 4; 14. 15, 16, Nu. 14. 42; 21. 7; 25. 4, Deu. 1. 42; 5. 28, 1 S. 9. 27; 11. 3; 15. 16; 17. 10; 18. 21; 28. 7, 2 S. 14. 7; 16. 11, 1 K. 13. 6, 18; 18. 27, 2 K. 5. 8; 6. 22, Is. 2. 3; 5. 19; 55. 3, Jer. 37. 20; 38. 24, Hos. 2. 4, Ps. 45. 12; 81. 9, 11; 83. 5; 90. 14, Job 13. 13.

In the cases *a-d*, Ar. uses *fa* with subjun. Occasionally Heb. uses vav with volunt. to express design even after the indic. in the past, as Lam. 1. 19 בָּקְשׁוּ אֶכֶל וְיִשְׁבְּרוּ they sought food *that they might revive* their soul (cf. inf. *v.* 11). Is. 25. 9, 1 K. 13. 33, 2 K. 19. 25.

Rem. 2. The idea of *design* expressed by the consn. is illustrated by its interchange with ל and inf., *e.g.* 1 K. 12. 6 inf. with *v.* 9 juss., 1 K. 22. 7 with *v.* 8, cf. Deu.

17. 17 with *v.* 20. *Effect* is rather expressed by *vav* perf., וְהָיָה not יְהִי, though the distinction is not always apparent; comp. 1 S. 15. 25 coh. with *v.* 30 *vav* perf. Ex. 8. 12, 1 S. 24. 16, 2 S. 21. 6, 1 K. 1. 2. The juss., however, does not express effect simply *so as that*, apart from design; though there is a tendency to put design into the action rather than the agent, and this might explain some cases of juss.; cf. § 149, R. 3.—On the other hand, in negative sent. *vav* perf. often expresses the effect or consequence of the action, the whole compound expression (first verb and its consequence *vav* perf.) being under the neg.; Deu. 7, 25, 26 וְלֹא-תִחַמְדָּהּ וְלֹא-תִבְיֵא וְהָיִיתָ . . . לֹא תִחַמְדָּהּ thou shalt not covet *and take*, thou shalt not bring it to thy house *and so become* a curse. Ex. 33. 20, Deu. 19 10; 22. 4, Is. 28. 28, Ps. 143. 7.

Rem. 3. The neg. apod. is usually subordinated by לֹא (or לֹא) with *ordinary* impf. The form וְאֵל rather co-ordinates its clause to the preceding one, Deu. 33. 6, Gen. 22. 12, Jud. 13. 14, Ps. 27. 9, though some cases may seem dubious, Nu. 11. 15, 1 S. 12. 19, Ps. 69. 15, cf. both neg. Pr. 27. 2.

Rem. 4. The *vav* is occasionally omitted. Ps. 61. 8 וְיִנְצְרוּהוּ פֶן יִנְצְרוּהוּ (imp. *pi.* מָנַה) enjoin *that they keep him*. Ex. 7. 9, Is. 27. 4, Job 9. 32, 33, 35, Ps. 55. 7; 118. 19; 119. 17. In Ps. 140. 9 *rd.* perhaps יְרִמֵּנו and attach to *v.* 10.

Rem. 5. Some uses of coh. are peculiar. (a) It is not unnatural that the coh. or intentional should be used to express an action which one resigns himself to do, though under external pressure—a subjective *I must*. Is. 38. 10 אֲלֶכְהָה, Ps. 57. 5, Jer. 3. 25? (b) Its use is also natural when a narrator recalls and repeats dramatically his thoughts and resolutions on a former occasion, as the Bride recites the resolutions she formed in her dreams, Song 3. 2, cf. 5. 2. So perhaps Ps. 77. 4, 7, Hab. 2. 1, Job 19. 18? But Ps. 66. 6 שָׂמְנוּ נִשְׂמְחָה שָׂמְנוּ there *did we rejoice*, can hardly be so explained (though impf. might be according to § 45, R. 2). Other cases occur where its usual sense cannot be attached to coh. The form, however, is but a fragment of a mood, which possibly had originally a wider range of meaning. There is also a tendency in the later stages of a language

to use the stronger forms without the special force they have in earlier times. Thus the coh. seems sometimes to be merely an emphatic impf., and rhythm may occasionally have dictated the form. Jer. 4. 19, 21; 6. 10, Ps. 42. 5; 55. 3, 18; 88. 16, Is. 59. 10.—In several cases after ער, Pr. 12. 19, Ps. 73. 17. Cf. Lam. 3. 50, where juss. יִרְא is parall. to יִשְׁקִי, not as Ps. 14. 2.

Rem. 6. The use of juss. forms, especially in later books, is full of difficulty. According to Mass. pointing (the strict moods being omitted) the following forms are in use:—

perf. 1a	הִקְטִיל	impf. 1b	יִקְטִיל	simple perf. and impf.
2a	וַיִּקְטֵל	2b	וְהִקְטִיל	regular convers. forms.
3a	וְהִקְטִיל	3b	וַיִּקְטִיל	vav copulative.
		4b	יִקְטֵל, וַיִּקְטֵל	the modified form

with or without simple vav used in the senses of the simple impf., *e.g.* in descriptions of past and present (= 1b), and as vav perf., &c. (= 2b, 3b). While 3a is in the main late (§ 58), 3b is common at all times in animated speech. The difficulty lies with 4b; *e.g.* Job 13. 27 וְתִשָּׂם בַּפֶּרֶךְ רַגְלִי *and thou settest my feet in the stocks* (the form preserved in the quotation, 33. 11). Ps. 11. 6, Is. 12. 1, Pr. 15. 25, Job 18. 9, 12; 20. 23, 26, 28; 27. 22, &c. Again, Joel 2. 20 וְעֹלָה בְּאֲשׁוֹ וְעֹלָה צְחָנְתּוֹ וְהִעֲלָה חִסְמוֹ his smell shall come up *and his stink shall ascend*, where וְהִעֲלָה = וְעֹלָה or וְהִעֲלָה; Zeph. 2. 13 וַיִּטֵּן יָדוֹ וַיִּשְׁטֹחַ אֶת יָדוֹ וַיִּנְטֵהוּ or וַיִּפֹּהוּ. I K. 8. 1; 14. 5, Mic. 3. 4; 6. 14, Lev. 15. 24; 26. 43, Ez. 14. 7, Is. 35. 1, 2; 58. 10, Dan. 8. 12; 11. 4, 10, 16–19, 25, 28, 30, &c.

It is perhaps well to endeavour to fit some known juss. sense on each case as it is met with, though it may prove a waste of ingenuity. Further, while the general principles of Syntax may be common to all the Shem. languages, appeals to analogies from cogn. languages are often precarious. The reader for ex. who calls in the use of Ar. *au*, or, with subj. in the sense of *unless*, or *else*, to explain the juss. Is. 27. 5 אִם יִחַזְקוּ אוֹ יִשְׁרְשׁוּ or *that* (unless) *he take hold*, will be disconcerted to find in the next verse a juss. יִשְׁרְשׁוּ in a plain affirmative sentence.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Appeal to Ar. *au* in Is. 27. 5 is all the more precarious, inasmuch as the indic. is permissible after *au*. Cf. a case Noeld. *Carm. Arab.* 5. 7.

As many juss. forms cannot be understood in a juss. sense, many scholars are inclined to go behind the Mass. tradition, and point according to what is supposed to be classical usage. Two main lines of emendation present themselves: 1. to point ׀ or ׀ (vav conv.) in a number of cases where Mass. has ׀ with juss. forms. *E.g.* Job 34. 37 ׀׀׀ for ׀׀׀, Is. 63. 3 ׀׀׀ for ׀׀׀. Pr. 15. 25, Job 15. 33; 20. 23; 27. 22, &c. 2. To substitute indicative (defectively written) for juss. of Mass. *E.g.* Mic. 3. 4 ׀׀׀׀ for ׀׀׀׀׀. Deu. 32. 8, Ps. 85. 14, Job 34. 29, &c. In cases where there is consonantal shortening in the form only the first method is available; in cases where there is mere vowel difference either method may be used, *e.g.* Job 13. 27 ׀׀׀׀׀ may be read ׀׀׀׀׀ or ׀׀׀׀׀ as may seem necessary. 3. These two principles may need to be supplemented by more or fewer of the assumptions referred to, § 51, R. 5.

Unfortunately even these very wide operations on the Mass. text fail to explain all the instances. Cases like Jo. 2. 20, Dan. 11. 4, 16, Lev. 15. 24, Ez. 14. 7, &c. remain. In these cases the juss. seems used as an ordinary impf., and the question is raised how wide the usage may be. While therefore it is of course legitimate to subject any case of Mass. pointing to criticism, sporadic emendations, so long as uncertainty remains on the *general* question, afford little satisfaction.

The state of the question being understood the following cases may be looked into. Exx. of שׁוּב Is. 12. 1, Job 10. 16, Ecc. 12. 7, Dan. 11. 10, 18, 19, 28. שׁוּבִים Zeph. 2. 13, Ps. 85. 14, Job 13. 27; 24. 25; 33. 11, Dan. 11. 17. נִיּוֹל Is. 35. 1, 2; 61. 10, Zech. 10. 7, Pr. 23, 25, &c. הִיָּה Gen. 49. 17, 1 S. 10. 5, Lev. 15. 24, Ps. 72. 16, Job 18. 12; 20. 23; 24. 14. חוֹק *hiph.* Is. 27. 5; 42. 6, Job 18. 9. רָעַם *hiph.* 1 S. 2. 10, 2 S. 22. 14, Job 37. 4, 5; 40. 9 (no-where in indic.). שֶׁלֶךְ *hiph.* Job 15. 33; 27. 22, Dan. 8. 12, cf. Ps. 68. 15. סָתַר *hiph.* Mic. 3. 4, Job 34. 29. מוֹת Is. 50. 2, Job 36. 14. חוּם Ps. 72. 13 and often. מָטַר *hiph.* Ps. 11. 6, Job 20. 23. רוּם Nu. 24, 7, 1 S. 2. 10, Mic. 5. 8.—Nu. 24. 19, Deu. 28. 8, 21, 36; 32. 8, 18, 1 K. 8. 1, Is. 27. 6; 63. 3, Hos. 14. 7, Mic. 6. 14; 7. 10, Jer. 13. 10 (cf.

coh. 3 25; 4. 19, 21), Nah. 3. 11, Zech. 9. 5, Mal. 2. 12? Ez. 14. 7 with Jo. 2. 20, Zeph. 2. 13, Ps. 12. 4; 25. 9; 47. 4; 58. 5; 90. 3; 107. 29, Job 10. 17; 17. 2; 20. 26, 28 (cf. 36. 15); 23. 9, 11; 27. 8; 33. 21, 27; 34. 37; 38. 24; 40. 19, Pr. 12. 26; 15. 25, Lam. 3. 50, Dan. 11. 4, 16, 25, 30.

The frequency with which certain words appear anomalously in the juss., and the place of others in the clause, suggest that rhythm sometimes dictated the form (Job 23. 9, 11). The fact that the anomalous juss. is often at the head of the clause has little meaning, as this is the usual place of the verb.—Pointing like Ex. 22. 4 כִּי יִבְעֹר־אֵשׁ seems due to the accentual rhythm, and no more implies an intermediate יִבְעֹר than כִּי יִנָּקֵת implies anything but כִּי יִנָּקֵת. Cf. Job 39. 26; 22. 28, Ps. 21. 2; 104. 20?

---

## GOVERNMENT OF THE VERB

### THE ACCUSATIVE

§ 66. Verbs subordinate other words to themselves in the *accusative* case. This accus. is of various kinds. Besides the acc. of the object, verbs may subordinate words to themselves in a freer way, in what may be called the adverbial accus., e.g. in definitions of *place* and *time*. Again, the action of the verb may reach its object not directly, but through the medium of a preposition. Very many so-called prepositions, however, are really nouns, and stand themselves in the adverbial *acc.*

The accus. termination *a* in the Shemitic speeches is probably the remains of a demonstrative particle (Eth. *ha* or *a*), which indicated the *direction to* of the verbal action or the verbal state, and this demonstrative nature of the case explains its very wide usage.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> With this idea of *direction to* of the verbal action or *bearing on* of the condition expressed by the verb is to be compared the use of prep. הַ with *obj.* in Aram. and later Heb.

The chief accusatives are these—(1) The acc. of *absolute object* or infin. abs., with which may be connected the *cognate acc.* (2) The acc. in definitions of *time, place, and measure.* (3) The acc. of *condition*, or state of subject or object of the verbal action, including acc. of *manner* of the action. (4) The acc. of *specification*, or, as it is called, of *respect.* (5) The acc. of the direct *object* of transitive verbs. (6) Certain other accusatives, less common or doubtful in Heb., as the acc. of *motive* or purpose of the action; the acc. after היה *to be*, &c.; and that after certain particles as הִנֵּה *behold*, &c.

### 1. The Absolute Object

§ 67. (a) Any verb, transitive or intransitive, may subordinate its own inf. abs. or *nomen verbi* in the acc., with the effect of adding force to the predication. Gen. 2. 17 מוֹת תָּמוּת *thou shalt die*; 18. 18 הָיוּ יְהִיָּה לְגוֹי גָדוֹל *he shall be a great nation*; Is. 6. 9 שְׁמָעוּ שְׁמָעוּ *hear ye indeed*. This acc. mostly precedes the verb, but may follow it, and does so always in the case of *imper.* and *ptcp.* See Inf. Abs. § 86.

(b) Cognate accus. The cognate noun may be subordinated in the same way as an inner acc. in order to strengthen the verb; 1 S. 1. 6 וְקַעֲסָתָהּ צָרָתָהּ גַּם־כַּעַם *and her rival (fellow-wife) continually aggrieved her*; Lam. 1. 8 יִבְשׂוּ בַשָּׂת הַחַטָּא הַחַטָּא יִרְשָׁלַם *Jer. sinned (a sin)*; Is. 42. 17 יִבְשׂוּ בַשָּׂת הַבְּטָחִים בַּפֶּסֶל *they shall be ashamed (with shame)*. 1 K. 1. 12, Is. 21. 7, 24. 16; 66. 10, Mic. 4. 9, Hab. 3. 9, Ez. 25. 12, Zech. 1. 2, Job 27. 12, Ps. 14. 5; 106. 14.

More frequently the cognate acc., instead of strengthening the action absolutely, expresses a concrete instance of the effect or product of the action; 2 K. 12. 21 וַיִּקְשְׂרוּ קִשְׁרָה וַיַּקְשְׂרוּ *and they made a conspiracy*, so 15. 30; Gen. 40. 8 חֲלֹם חֲלַמְנוּ *we have dreamed a dream*. Ex. 22. 5, Josh. 7. 1; 22. 20, 31. Usually this acc. is strengthened either (1) by a *gen.*, or (2) by one or more *adj.* 1 S. 20. 17 אֶהְבֵּת נִפְשׁוֹ אֶהְבֵּוּ *and they loved his life*.



he loved him with his love for his own soul; Jer. 22. 19  
 יִקָּבֵר אֶת-חַלְוֵי קְבִירַת חֲמוֹר he shall be buried with the burial of an  
 ass; 2 K. 13. 14 אֶת-חַלְוֵי חָלָה he was sick of his disease.  
 Lev. 26. 36, Deu. 16. 18, Josh. 9. 9, 2 S. 4. 5, Is. 14. 6;  
 27. 7; 45. 17, Jer. 30. 14, Zech. 7. 9, cf. Ps. 139. 22. With  
*adj.*, Gen. 27. 34 וַיִּצְעַק צְעָקָה גְדֹלָה וַיִּמְרָה עַד-מָאֹד he cried  
 with an exceeding loud and bitter cry. Gen. 12. 17; 50. 10,  
 Deu. 7. 23, Josh. 22. 31, Jud. 21. 2, 1 S. 17. 25, 2 S. 13. 15, 36,  
 1 K. 1. 40, 2 K. 4. 13, Jer. 8. 5; 14. 17, Zech. 1. 14, 15; 8. 2,  
 Jon. 1. 10, Neh. 2. 10.

Rem. 1. When abs. obj. is inf. cons. it is generally  
 introduced as a comparison, with  $\text{כִּי}$ , Is. 19. 14; 34. 4, cf.  
 noun, 30. 14; but acc. simply (as Ar.) also occurs, Is.  
 24. 22; 33. 4.

Rem. 2. The cognate acc. may be *plur.*, Gen. 12. 17;  
 30. 8, 37, Ez. 16. 38. Occasionally too a noun from a  
 different root but cognate in sense is used, Is. 14. 6 (clause  
 instead of *gen.*), Jer. 20. 11; 31. 7, Zech. 8. 2. Cf. Ps.  
 13. 4 *sleep* (the sleep of) *death*; Ps. 76. 6, Pr. 3. 23.

Rem. 3. Perhaps it should be considered a form of  
 cognate acc. when verbs of *expression* (speak, cry, weep,  
 &c.) or of conduct subordinate the organ of expression or  
 acting in the acc., 2 S. 15. 23 all the land נָדוּל קוֹל בְּכִים *were*  
*weeping with a loud voice*, Prov. 10. 4 עֹשֶׂה בְרִדְמִיָּה he who  
*works with a slack hand*. Deu. 5. 19, 1 K. 8. 55, Is. 19. 18,  
 Ez. 11. 13, Ps. 12. 3; 63. 6; 109. 2, Ezr. 10. 12. Cf. Jer.  
 25. 30 with a *hêdad*.

## 2. Free Subordination to the Verb of Words in the Acc.

§ 68. Acc. of time.—Definitions of time are put in acc.  
 (a) In answer to the question *when?* Hos. 7. 5 יוֹם מְלִכְנוּ *יום*  
*on the day* of our king; 2 S. 21. 9 תְּחִלַּת קִצִּיר שְׁעָרִים *in the*  
*beginning* of barley harvest; Ps. 127. 2 יִתֵּן לְיָדָיו שְׁנָא *he giveth*  
*to his beloved in sleep*. Gen. 14. 15; 27. 45; 40. 7,  
 Hos. 1. 2; 7. 6, Ps. 91. 6 (*at noon*; elsewhere with prep. *ב*);

Ps. 119. 62 חֲצוֹת לַיְלָה *at midnight*; Ps. 5. 4; 6. 11. (b) In answer to *how long?* Gen. 3. 14 כָּל-יְמֵי חַיֶּיךָ *all the days* of thy life; Hos. 3. 4 יָמִים רַבִּים וַיָּשְׁבוּ *many days* shall they abide. Or, *how many?* of time; Gen. 7. 4, 24; 14. 4; 15. 13.—Gen. 21. 34; 27. 44.

§ 69. Acc. of place.—Definitions of place are put in acc. (a) In answer to the question *where?* In prose this is usual with the words בֵּית *house*, פֶּתַח *door*, and some others, but chiefly when the definition of locality is general, prepositions being used when it is more precise. This acc. is also generally defined more fully by a following *gen.* Gen. 24. 23 הֲיֵשׁ בֵּית-אָבִיךָ מָקוֹם is there room *in thy father's house?* 2 S. 9. 4 הֲנִהְיֶה בֵּית מְכִיר he is *at the house of M.*; Gen. 18. 1, 10 וְהוּא יֹשֵׁב פֶּתַח-הָאֹהֶל as he sat *at the door of the tent.*—Gen. 38. 11; 45. 16, Ex. 33. 10, Josh. 1. 4, 15; 12. 1; 23. 4, 1 K. 19. 13, 2 K. 2. 3, Is. 3. 6, Jer. 36. 10. Gen. 28. 11 *at the place of his head*, 1 S. 26. 7; Ru. 3. 8, 14 *at the place of his feet.* Without a following *gen.*, Ru. 2. 7. Proper names compounded with בֵּית are similarly construed, 2 S. 2. 32, Hos. 12. 5. Comp. Jer. 27. 18 with *v.* 21.

(b) In answer to *whither?* Gen. 27. 3 צֵא הַשָּׂדֶה go out *to the field*; 45. 25 וַיָּבֹאוּ אֶרֶץ כְּנָעַן and they came *to the land of C.* The ה of direction is frequently appended, Gen. 24. 16 וַתֵּרַד הָעַיִנָּה and she went down *to the fountain*; 12. 5; 39. 1, 12; 42. 38; 43. 17. Of course prepp. (אל, עד, &c.) may be used before noun of *place*, and must be used with names of *persons*, to which, too, the ה local cannot be appended; Gen. 45. 25 וַיָּבֹאוּ אֶרֶץ כְּנָעַן אֶל-יַעֲקֹב *to the land of C. to Jacob* (cf. Jer. 27. 3). The prep. is used also with creatures, Gen. 31. 4 הַשָּׂדֶה אֶל-צֹאֲנוֹ *to the field to his flock.*—Gen. 13. 10; 24. 27, Ex. 4. 9; 17. 10, Josh. 6. 19, 24, Jud. 1. 26; 19. 18, 1 S. 1. 24; 17. 17, 20, 2 S. 20. 3, Is. 14. 11,

Jer. 16. 8; 18. 2, 3, Nah. 2. 6.—In Ez. 11. 24; 23. 16 נְשִׂרִים is now name of the country; Jer. 50. 10; 51. 24, 35.

(c) In answer to *how far?* Gen. 7. 20, 1 K. 19. 4, Ez. 41. 22, Jon. 3. 4.

Rem. 1. In elevated speech and poetry words are put in acc. in answer to *where?* more freely, 1 K. 8. 43 *in heaven*, Is. 16. 2 *at the fords*, 15. 8; 45. 19 *in a waste* (in vain), 2 Chr. 33. 20. In 1 S. 2. 29 טַעַן is corrupt in some way. Job 22. 12, Ps. 92. 9, *height* is scarcely acc. of place but concrete for adj. as predicate, thou *art height* = high; cf. Ps. 10. 5, Is. 22. 16. In the frequent אֲתֵּפְנִי, 1 S. 1. 22; 2. 11, 17, 18, Ex. 34. 23, &c., אַח is prep.

Rem. 2. The acc. *whither?* is also used freely; Gen. 31. 4 *called Rachel to the field*, 31. 21 set his face *to mount* Gilead, Is. 10. 32 wage his fist *toward the mount*, Is. 40. 26, Ps. 55. 9, Job 5. 11, Ps. 134. 2, Lam. 5. 6.—The force of the ה of direction has in many cases become enfeebled, e.g. עָשָׂה = *there*; so it is used with prep. of motion *to* Josh. 13. 4, Ez. 8. 14, Ps. 9. 18; and even with prep. *in* and *from*, Josh. 15. 21, Jer. 27. 16. In later style it becomes a mere ornate ending, Ps. 116. 14, 15, 18; 124. 4; 125. 3, though perhaps for sake of rhythm earlier, Hos. 8. 7; 10. 13, Ps. 3. 3.

Rem. 3. When questions *how long?* *how far?* &c. are answered in *numbers*, it is strictly the numeral that is in acc. The case of the thing enumerated will depend upon the numeral, being e.g. in *gen.* after numeral, עֶשְׂרֵת מַנִּים *ten times*, Gen. 31. 7, or in apposition with it, or possibly in the acc. of specification after it, as אַרְבָּעִים יוֹם *forty days*. See § 37, R. 6. Possibly under this acc. comes the use of אֲסַפֵּר *according to the number*, Job 1. 5, Jer. 2. 28, Ex. 16. 16. Or it is acc. of limitation.

Rem. 4. The verb בּוֹא *to come*, when = *come upon* in a hostile sense, has often acc. *suff.* of person in poetry and later style, Is. 28. 15, Job 15. 21; 20. 22, Ps. 35. 8; 36. 12. With *noun* Is. 41. 25 (though בִּים has been suggested), Ez. 38. 11. In a favourable sense, Ps. 119. 41, 77. Similarly אָחָה *to come upon*, Job 3. 25.

§ 70. Acc. of condition.—Any word describing the *condition* of the subject or object of an action during the action is put in the acc.; and so words describing the *manner* of the action. (a) Gen. 15. 2 וְאֵנֹכִי הוֹלֵךְ עֲרִירִי seeing. *I go childless*; Is. 20. 3 וַיְהִי עָרוֹם וַיְהִי עָרְוֹת עַבְדִּי הַלֵּלֵךְ my servant has *walked naked and barefoot*; Prov. 1. 12 נִבְלָעִים הַיָּיִם let us *swallow them up alive* (1 K. 20. 18). Or even when no verb is used, 2 S. 12. 21 הִי הַיֶּלֶד חַי בְּעֵבֹר הַיֶּלֶד for the sake of the child *when alive* (1 K. 14. 6 her feet *as she came*). In general an indef. adj. or ptcp. descriptive of a definite word (pron. or def. noun) may be considered in the acc. of condition. Exx. with subj., Gen. 25. 8, 25; 37. 35, Deu. 3. 18, Josh. 1. 14, 1 S. 19. 20, 1 K. 22. 10, 2 K. 18. 37; 19. 2, Am. 2. 16, Job 1. 21; 19. 25; 24. 10, Ps. 109. 7, Ru. 1. 21. Exx. with obj. Gen. 3. 8; 21. 9; 27. 6, 1 K. 11. 8, Is. 20. 4; 57. 20, Hag. 1. 4, Ps. 124. 3, Job 12. 17.—So even nouns that approach the nature of adj., Gen. 38. 11 abide *a widow* (in widowhood), 44. 33 let him abide *as a servant*; perhaps Is. 21. 8 he cried *like a lion*, Job 24. 5, *as wild-asses*.—With Jon. 1. 6 מַה־לָּךְ נֹרְדָם what meanest thou *sleeping?* cf. Kor. 74. 50.

(b) Words describing the *manner* of the action are in acc. Certain words have become real adverbs, as מְאֹד *very* (lit. in strength), הַזֶּם *in vain, for nought*, הַרְבֵּה *much, very*, הַיָּטֵב *well, very, &c.* But *adjs.* in general may be used adverbially, and (in poetical style particularly) nouns. Zeph. 1. 14 מֵרַחֵם גְּבוּרָה מֵרַחֵם גְּבוּרָה *bitterly* crieth the hero; Ez. 27. 30 וַיִּזְעֻקוּ וַתִּמְרָה and they shall cry *bitterly*; 1 S. 12. 11 וַתִּשְׁבּוּ בְטַח and ye dwelt *in confidence*, Hos. 14. 5 אֶהְבֶּם נְדָבָה I will love them *freely*, 1 S. 15. 32 וַיֵּלֶךְ אֵלָיו אַגַּג מְעֵדְנֹת and Agag came to him *cheerfully*.

§ 71. Acc. of specification.—When to the general statement of the action there is added the point of its incidence, or the respect in which it holds, this secondary limitation is put in the acc., Gen. 3. 15 הוּא יְשׁוּפֶה רֹאשׁ he shall bruise

thee *on the head*; 37. 21 לֹא נִכְנֹוּ נַפְשׁוֹ let us not smite him *as to life* (mortally), 1 K. 15. 23 הָיָה אֶת־רַגְלָיו לִיזוֹן he was diseased *in his feet*. Gen. 17. 25; 41. 40, Deu. 33. 11; 19. 6, 11, Jud. 15. 8, 2 S. 21. 20 (1 K. 19. 21), Jer. 2. 16, Ps. 3. 8; 17. 11, Job 21. 7. Prov. 22. 23.

Rem. 1. In § 70a the Ar. consn. is assumed as the type. For ex. (a) רָאוּ אִישׁ יֹצֵא they saw *a man coming out*. (b) רָאוּ הָאִישׁ הַיֹּצֵא ' they saw *the man who was coming out*. (c) רָאוּ הָאִישׁ יֹצֵא they saw *the man coming out*. In a, b, *coming out* is adj. in agreement with *a man, the man*, but in c it is acc. of condition to the obj. *the man*. It is possible, however, that in such cases as Job 27. 19 he lieth down *rich, rich* might be nom. in appos. to subj. in *lieth down*; Job 15. 7; 19. 25, 2 S. 19. 21 (so Hitz.). Eth. seems to use App. while Ar. has acc. The sing. in such cases as Is. 20. 4, Job 12. 17; 24. 10 (cf. pl. Jer. 13. 19) favours acc. of condition.—The word of condition is naturally an adj. or ptcp. expressing a temporary state, or at least a state which might have been different, and so some nouns as Gen. 38. 11; 44. 33 may be similarly used. With Is. 21. 8, cf. karra zaidun 'asadan, Zeid charged *like a lion*. With Gen. 38. 11 cf. Kor. 11. 75, and with 2 S. 12. 21 Ḥamas. 392, l. 3. Other exx. of nouns, Gen. 15. 16 *as the fourth generation*, Deu. 4. 27 *as a few men*, 2 K. 5. 2 *in bands*, Am. 5. 3, Is. 65. 20 *a hundred years old*, Jer. 31. 8 *as a great assembly*, Zech. 2. 8 *as open villages*, Ps. 58. 9. The text of 1 S. 2. 33 die אֲנָשִׁים *as men* (in manhood) is doubtful; Sep. *by the sword of men*.

Rem. 2. The acc. of *manner* of the action of an adj. may be *mas.* or *fem.*, Is. 5. 26 (Joel 4. 4), sing. or plur., esp. fem. plur. Ps. 139. 14, Job 37. 5. If a noun: (1) in principle any noun may be used, Mic. 2. 3 רֹמְהָ, Ps. 56. 3 מְרוֹם *haughtily*,<sup>1</sup> Is. 60. 14 שָׁחוּחַ *bowing down*, Prov. 31. 9 צָרַק *in*

<sup>1</sup> Ye shall not walk רֹמְהָ *to height*, i.e. so that there shall be height (to your walking), rather than *so that ye shall be high* (be height to you). Heb. refers such adverbial modifications rather to the *action* (Ar. more to the *subj.*).

*righteousness*, Jud. 5. 21 עָזָה *in power*; Lev. 19. 16, Nu. 32. 14, Is. 57. 2. (2) The noun may be *plur.*, Lam. 1. 9 פָּלְאִים she came down *wonderfully*, Hos. 12. 15 תַּמְרוּרִים *bitterly*, Ps. 58. 2; 75. 3, cf. 1 S. 15. 32 above. (3) The acc. may extend to a phrase, Josh. 9. 2, 1 K. 22. 13 פָּה אֶחָד *unanimously*, cf. Zeph. 3. 9; Lev. 26. 21, 23, 24, Pro. 7. 10, 2 S. 23. 3 ruling אֶת יְרֵאָה *in the fear of God*. Ps. 83. 6 is a mixed consn. for לֵב אֶחָד (1 Chr. 12. 38). See § 140, R. 1. This usage of the noun is mostly poetical, prose rather employs a prep., לְבַטָּח *confidently*, but בַּטָּח Jud. 8. 11, &c., Lam. 1. 5 שָׁבִי *into captivity*, elsewhere בִּשְׁבִי; Ps. 119. 78, 86 לְשָׁקֶר *falsely, in vain*, usually לְשָׁקֶר 1 S. 25. 21. Jer. 23. 28, Ps. 73. 13, 119. 75, Job 21. 34. Comp. Is. 30. 7 with 49. 4; 65. 23. Ps. 119. 75 אֶמְוֶנָה with 2 K. 12. 16.

Rem. 3. The acc. of restriction (§ 71) is usually an indef. noun, Gen. 3. 15; 37. 21, Ps. 3. 8. The phrase *smite in the bowels* is usually אֶל-הַחֹמֶשׁ, 2 S. 2. 23; 4. 6; 20. 10. In 3. 27 אֶל may have fallen out. The acc. 1 K. 15. 23 *in his feet* is בְּרַגְלָיו, 2 Chr. 16. 12, as is usual, cf. 2 S. 2. 18, Am. 2. 15 (so Arab. *fi rijlaih*). The acc. of respect is little used after adjs. in Heb., the gen. consn. being employed; cf. § 24, R. 5. The place of acc. of resp. is often taken by a prep., 1 K. 22. 24 עַל-הַלְחָי, Mic. 4. 14.

Rem. 4. The acc. of *motive*, so common in Arab., perhaps appears Is. 7. 25 יְרֵאָה שְׁמִיר *for (out of) fear of thorns*.—Possibly also הָיָה when = *become*, takes acc. after it, Hos. 8. 6 the calf of Sam. יִהְיֶה שִׁבְבִים *shall become splinters*. The frequent use of prep. *l* makes this consn. probable; cf. Jer. 26. 18. So Eth.; the Ar. use is wider. And so perhaps verbs of similar meaning, as הָפַךְ *to turn* (also niph.), Jer. 2. 21, Lev. 13. 3, 4, 10.

### 3. The Acc. of the direct Object

§ 72. Many verbs govern the direct acc. in *Ḳal*; and many of those intrans. in *Ḳal* govern acc. in the Caus. (hiph. &c.). Of the latter kind are בֹּא *come*; hiph. *bring*, &c.

Before the direct acc., when also *def.*, the particle אֵת is

common. It is greatly used before persons, and especially before pronouns, which it assumes as suff. in the case of the pers. pron. It is also used, however, before things. Gen. 2. 15 וַיִּקַּח אֶת־הָאָדָם he took *the man*; 2. 24 יָעֻז אֶת־אָבִיו shall leave *his father and his mother*; 4. 11 לְקַחַת אֶת־דַּמִּי אֶחָיִךְ to receive *thy brother's blood*; 40. 4 וַיִּשְׁרַת אֹתָם and he served *them*; 41. 10 וַיִּתֵּן אֹתִי and he put *me*. Though the use of אֵת is common, it is very often wanting, and is much less employed in poetry and elevated condensed style than in the broader prose writing. It is altogether wanting for ex. in the poems, Ex. 15., Deu. 32., Jud. 5., 1 S. 2., and other poetical passages.

Rem. 1. The direct obj. when a pron. is often appended to the verb. as suff., esp. in earlier style, Gen. 4. 8 וַיַּהַרְגֵהוּ and slew *him*; in later style אֵת with suff. has greater currency. But אֵת must be used in these cases: (a) when for the sake of emphasis the obj. is to be placed before the verb; Jud. 14. 3 אֶתְּךָ קָחֵלִי get *her* for me. Gen. 7. 1; 24. 14; 41. 13, 1 S. 8. 7; 21. 10, Hos. 2. 15. (b) When obj. is governed by inf. abs., which is too inflexible to receive suff.; Gen. 41. 43 וַיִּנְתֹּן אֹתוֹ and set *him* over, &c., 1 S. 2. 28, Jer. 9. 23, Ez. 36. 3. (c) When the verb, whether fin. or infin., has already a nearer suff. either of subj. or obj.; 2 S. 15. 25 וַיְהִי אֵתִי אֲנִי אֹתוֹ he will let *me* see *it*; Gen. 29. 20 בְּאַהֲבָתוֹ אֶתְּךָ because of *his* loving *her*. Gen. 19. 17; 38. 5, Deu. 7. 24, 1 S. 1. 23; 18. 3, 2 K. 8. 13—the form Deu. 31. 7 is unusual, cf. 1. 38; 19. 3. Similarly when subj. of inf. cons. is a noun, Deu. 22. 2. In Ar. and Eth., as in Ital., the verb can have two suff., a nearer and more remote.

Rem. 2. When several obj. under the same verb are coupled with *and* אֵת is usually repeated before each of them, esp. if they be distinct from one another, Gen. 1. 1. But usage fluctuates, the newer broader style multiplying אֵת. Gen. 8. 1; 10. 15–18; 12. 5, 20; 15. 19–21; 21. 10.

Rem. 3. The use of אֵת with any acc. except that of direct obj. is rare. (a) Of time, *how long?* Ex. 13. 7, Deu.

9. 25; *when?* Lev. 25. 22. (*b*) Of place, *whither?* Nu. 4. 19, Jud. 19. 18, Ez. 21. 25. (*c*) Of restriction, Gen. 17. 11, 14, 25 (not 24), 1 K. 15. 23.

Rem. 4. To the rule that אֵת is used only before def. obj. there are apparent exceptions. First, it is used with undefined obj. (*a*) In poetry, which greatly dispenses with the art.; e.g. in the case of words denoting a *class*, Is. 41. 7; 50. 4, Pr. 13. 21. (*b*) In prose with words which are of the nature of pronoun, e.g. כָּל all, Deu. 2. 34, 2 S. 6. 1; אֲחֵר another, Jer. 16. 13. So with אֶחָד one; and Num. in general have a certain definiteness of their own, Gen. 21. 30, Nu. 16. 15, 1 S. 9. 3, 2 S. 15. 16. Comp. the usage with *man*, *woman*, in the sense of *any one*, Ex. 21. 28, Nu. 21. 9, cf. Lev. 20. 14. In some other cases the phrase though put indefinitely has a particular reference, e.g. 2 S. 4. 11 a *righteous man* (Ishbosheth), 1 S. 26. 20 a *flea* (one who is, &c.), i.e. David. In 2 S. 5. 24 a *known* kind of divine rustling is referred to, and *art.* of 1 Chr. 14. 15 might be accepted were it not the habit of Chron. to correct anomalies. 2 S. 18. 18 *pillar* might be cons. before rel., but text is uncertain (Sep.). 1 S. 24. 6 *of the robe* has prob. fallen out after *skirt* (Sep.). On 1 K. 12. 31; 16. 18, cf. § 22, R. 3.

Secondly, אֵת seems used otherwise than before the obj. (*a*) Some of the cases are only apparent. For ex. a neut. verb used impersonally with prep. and subj. is felt to have the force of an act. vb.; 2 S. 11. 25 אֶת־הַדָּבָר אֲלֵי־יָרֵעַ בְּעֵינַיִךָ = *take not amiss* the thing; so 1 S. 20. 13 (rd. יִיטֵב) Neh. 9. 32 אֶת־הַחֵלֶלֶת לִפְנֵיךָ אֵת בְּלִי־הַחֵלֶלֶת אֲלֵי־מַעַט = *regard not as little*; so even the noun מַעַט with prep. לְ, Josh. 22. 17. Similarly לְ הָיָה = *to have*, Josh. 17. 11; cf. the Eth. usage with prep. *ba*, in, with, as *baya* is *with me* = *I have*, followed by acc. (Dill. p. 343). (*b*) In some cases a particle like *behold*, or a verb like *thou hast*, *seest*, may float before the writer's mind under whose regimen the noun falls, as Ez. 43. 7 אֶת־מְקוֹם פְּסָאִי 7 *behold* (Sep. *thou seest*) the place of my throne. But in many cases אֵת seems merely to give emphasis or demonstrative distinctness to the subj., particularly the emph. which an *additional* or new thing has, or which is natural in *resuming* things already spoken of. 1 S. 26. 16 where is



the spear *ואת־צַפְחַת* and *the cruse?* 1 S. 17. 34 there came the lion *ואת־הַיּוֹב* and *the bear too* (the verbs are frequent.). Ex. of resumption, Jud. 20. 44, 2 S. 21. 22, 1 K. 2. 32, Ez. 14. 22, Zech. 8. 17. Other ex. Nu. 3. 26; 5. 10, 2 K. 6. 5, Jer. 27. 8; 36. 22, Ez. 17. 21; 35. 10; 44. 3 (47. 17–19?), Neh. 9. 19, 34, Hag. 2. 17, Zech. 7. 7, Ecc. 4. 3, Dan. 9. 13. Cf. Ez. 43. 17 after prep.; 1 S. 30. 23 text obscure (Sep.).

§ 73. Classes of verbs governing acc. of obj.—(a) As in other languages active verbs take acc. of obj., as *נתן* *give*, *לקח* *take*, *שים* *put*, *רדה* *pursue*. But so also many verbs properly *stative*, as *אהב* *love*, *שנא* *hate*, *חפץ* *desire*, and even *יכל* *to be able* (Is. 1. 13, *prevail over* Ps. 13. 5). So *בכה* *to weep for*, *bewail*.

(b) The causative of verbs intrans. in *Kal*, as *בוא* *come*, *hiph. bring*, *יֵצֵא* *go out*, *hiph. bring out*, *עָלָה* *ascend*, *hiph. bring up*, *יָרַד* *go down*, *hiph. bring down*, &c.

(c) Verbs of *fulness* and *want*, as *מָלֵא* *be full of*, *שָׂבַע* *be satisfied with*, *הָסֵר* *to want*, *שָׁנַל* *be bereaved of*. Is. 1. 11 *שָׂבַעְתִּי עֲלוֹת אֵילִים* I am sated with *burnt-offerings of rams*; v. 15 *יְדִיכֶם דְּמַיִם מָלְאוּ* your hands are full of *blood*; Deu. 2. 7 *לֹא הָסַרְתָּ דְבָר* thou didst want nothing. Gen. 18. 28; 27. 45, Ex. 15. 9. The acc. here is perhaps properly one of specification.—Pr. 25. 17 *שָׂבַע* with acc. of person, so *מָלֵא* Ex. 15. 9.

(d) Verbs of *putting on* and *putting off* clothes, as *לָבַשׁ* *put on*, *פָּשַׁט* *strip*, *עָטָה* *be clothed with* (more poetical). 1 K. 22. 30 *וְאַתָּה לָבַשׁ בְּגָדֶיךָ* but *don thou thy robes*; 1 S. 19. 24 *וַיִּפְשַׁט גַּם הוּא בְּגָדָיו* he, too, *stripped himself of his clothes*; 28. 14 *וְהוּא עָטָה מְעִיל* *wearing a robe*. Gen. 38. 19, Deu. 22. 5, 1 S. 28. 8, Is. 49. 18, Lev. 6. 4, Song 5. 3. Is. 59. 17, Ps. 109. 29. For *put off* *הִסִּיר* is often used.

(e) Verbs signifying to *inhabit*,  *dwell in*, as *יָשַׁב* *dwell in*, *שָׁכַן* *id.*, *גִּוַר* *dwell with*, Is. 44. 13, Jer. 17. 6, Ps. 37. 3, Jud.

5. 17, Is. 33. 14, 16, Ps. 94. 17. In poetry even acc. of person, Ps. 5. 5; 120. 5.—The consn. with prep. is more usual in prose.

(f) Verbs of *speaking*, as דִּבֶּר *speaking to*, עָנָה *answer, hear*, קָרָא *call*, צִוָּה *command*, &c. But consn. with prep. is also common in most of these cases.

Rem. 1. The verbs בָּוא *go in*, יָצָא *come out*, may also be construed with acc., Jer. 10. 20 בָּנֵי יִצְחָאִי my children *have gone out from me*, 2 K. 20. 4, Jos. 8. 19. So הֵלֵךְ in the sense of *go through, walk in* (different from acc. of goal, *whither?*) Deu. 1. 19; 2. 7, Is. 50. 10 (darkness), Job 29. 3.

Rem. 2. Under (c) may be classed such verbs as שָׂרַץ *to swarm with*, Ex. 7. 28, פָּרַץ *to multiply greatly*, cf. Pr. 3. 10. נָזַל *to flow with*, Jer. 9. 17, and similar verbs, as שָׂטַף *to overflow with*, Is. 10. 22; יָרַד *go down (flow) with*, Jer. 13. 17, Lam. 3. 48, Ps. 119. 136; הֵלֵךְ *go (flow) with*, Jo. 4. 18; נָטַף *to drop*, Jud. 5. 4, Jo. 4. 18, Song 4. 11; and others. Also עָלָה *to come up (be overgrown) with*, Is. 5. 6 וְעָלָה שָׁמִיר וְעָלָה יֵשׁוּבִית it shall come up *in thorns and briars*; 34. 13.

Rem. 3. Under (d) come such verbs as אָזַר *to gird (oneself) with*, 1 S. 2. 4; הִזִּיר *to gird on*, 1 S. 25. 13, Is. 15. 3; עָרָה *to deck (oneself) with*, Hos. 2. 15, Is. 61. 10, Job 40. 10; and others which mostly occur with two acc.

Rem. 4. The pron. suff. is usually direct obj., but sometimes indirect, Zech. 7. 5 אָנִי צִמַּמְתִּי אָנִי did ye fast *for me?* Job 31. 18 בָּאָב נִרְלִי גָּמַל grew up *to me* as a father. This kind of consn. (instead of prep.) is easier with suff., e.g. Job 6. 4 array *against me*, Neh. 9. 28 cry *unto thee*, Is. 44. 21 forgotten *of me*, Jer. 20. 7, 1 K. 16. 22, 2 Chr. 28. 20. In Is. 65. 5 rd. pi. קִדְשְׁתִּיךָ stand back! *I shall sanctify thee!* cf. Ez. 44. 19.—So with reflex. vb. Ps. 109. 3, though such verbs may take direct acc., Gen. 37. 18, Jos. 18. 5, Jud. 19. 22, Is. 14. 2. Ps. 42. 5 אֶרְדָּם is explained by Hitz. *in Rücksicht auf sie*; perhaps pi. אֶרְדָּם.

Rem. 5. The pron. obj. is often omitted contrary to our idiom, particularly after vbs. of *giving, bringing, putting, telling*, and others. Gen. 2. 19 וַיָּבֵא and brought *them*, 1 S. 17. 31 וַיִּגְדּוּ they told *them*, 1 S. 19. 13 וַתִּשֶׂם she put *them*. Gen. 12. 19; 18. 7; 27. 13, 14; 38. 18, Deu. 21. 12.—Different

is the case where certain verbs by a brachylogy may omit their obj. *e.g.* נשא lift up, sc. קול, Is. 3. 7; 42. 2. ל נשא forgive, sc. עון, Is. 2. 9, Gen. 18. 24. ברית sc. ברית 1 S. 20. 16, 2 Chr. 7. 18. הפיל sc. גורל lot, 1 S. 14. 42, Job 6. 27, cf. Jud. 18. 1. שים sc. לב Job 4. 20, so בונן Job 8. 8. נטר to retain, sc. אף anger, Jer. 3. 5, Ps. 103. 9. שלח sc. יד 2 S. 6. 6. הקשה sc. ערף neck, Job 9. 4, cf. Jer. 7. 26. So סלא אחרי sc. ללכת to go, Jos. 14. 14. In 1 S. 24. 11 eye seems om., but perh. *rd.* 1st pers. with Sep. Syr. Cf. 2 K. 10. 13.

Rem. 6. Sometimes the obj. is regarded as the *instrument* or *means* by which the action is realised, and construed with prep. ב. Ex. 7. 20 בַּמִּטָּה to lift up *with* the rod, Lam. 1. 17 בְּרִיחָהּ she stretches out *with* her hands. Jer. 18. 16 to wag *with* the head; Job 16. 10 to open *with* the mouth, Ps. 22. 8; Job 16. 9 to gnash *with* the teeth; Jer. 12. 8 to give forth *with* the voice. Cf. Pr. 6. 13. So the phrase קרא בשם to call *with* the name = *invoke* Gen. 4. 26, *proclaim* Ex. 34. 5, &c.

Rem. 7. The direction of the action upon obj. is sometimes indicated by prep. ל, particularly with ptc. and inf. whose rection is weaker than that of fin. vb. Is. 11. 9 לִים מְכַסִּים *covering the sea*, cf. different order, Hab. 2. 14. Am. 6. 3, Is. 14. 2. The caus. (hiph., pi.) not uncommonly reaches its obj. by ל, Nu. 32. 15, 1 S. 23. 10 (2 S. 3. 30), Is. 29. 2, Am. 8. 9, Hos. 10. 1, cf. Jer. 40. 2, Ps. 69. 6; 73. 18, Job 11. 6.—In later style ל is used in all the senses of את, *e.g.* (a) direct obj. 1 Chr. 16. 37; 25. 1; 29. 22, Ezr. 8. 16, 24. (b) resumptive (or appos.) 1 Chr. 5. 26, 2 Chr. 2. 12; 23. 1, Ps. 136. 19, 20. (c) giving prominence to preposed subj.

#### 4. Verbs with two Acc. of the Object

§ 74. Many verbs and forms of verbs govern two objects. There are several cases. First, when the two obj. (generally a pers. and a thing) have no relation to one another, and could not stand as subj. and pred. in a simple proposition, as, he showed *him the place*. Secondly, when the two obj.

are so related that in a simple sentence the one might be pred. of the other, as *man is dust*; he made *man* (of) *dust*. Thirdly, in a wider way, when the action is performed upon the main obj. through the medium of some other thing, this *means* as coming also under the action of the verb is considered a remoter *obj.*, as, they stoned *him* (with) *stones*.

§ 75. To the first class belong—(a) The causatives of verbs transitive in the  $\aleph$ al; Deu. 8. 3 וַיִּאֱכַלְךָ אֶת־הַמָּן he fed thee with manna; Jud. 4. 19 הִשְׁקִינִינָא מְעַט־מַיִם give me a little water to drink; 4. 22 אֶרְאֶךָ אֶת־הָאִישׁ I will show thee the man. So הוֹדִיעַ to show, 1 S. 14. 12; הָבִין, הוֹרָה, to show Is. 28. 9; הַנְחִיל make to inherit, Deu. 3. 29; 31. 7; לָמַד to teach, Jud. 3. 2, Deu. 4. 5; הִשְׁמִיעַ cause to hear, 2 K. 7. 6, Song 2. 14. 2 K. 6. 6; 11. 4. An ex. of three acc. 2 K. 8. 13 showed me thee king, &c.

(b) The caus. of verbs of plenty and want (§ 73 c). Gen. 42. 25 בָּרְאוּ אֶת־קִלְיָהֶם הֵמָּלְאוּ they filled their sacks with corn; 26. 15. 1 K. 18. 13 וְאֶבְלַנְתִּים לָחֶם וּמַיִם I supported them with bread and water, Gen. 47. 12, Is. 50. 4. השביע to satisfy with, Ps. 132. 15. חָפַר to make want, Ps. 8. 6. רָוָה to water with, Is. 16. 9. Cf. Jud. 19. 5, Ps. 51. 14; 104. 15, Lam. 3. 15. Some cases may belong to a.

(c) The caus. of verbs of clothing with, stripping off (§ 73 d). Under this may come verbs of covering, girding, surrounding with, overlaying or plating with, crowning, &c. 1 S. 17. 38 וַיִּלְבֹּשׁ אֶת־דָּוִד מְדִיו he put his garments on David, Gen. 41. 42, Ps. 132. 16, 18. Gen. 37. 23 וַיִּפְשְׁטוּ אֶת־קִנְיָתוֹ אֶת־יֹסֵף they stripped Joseph of his coat. Nu. 20. 26, 28, Is. 22. 21. If the action be performed on oneself one acc. may be represented by reflex., 1 S. 18. 4 וַיִּתְּפֹשֶׁט אֶת־הַמְּעִיל he stripped himself of the robe. Comp. § 73, R. 4.

(d) Verbs of asking, answering, calling, commanding in

the sense of *intrusting to*, &c. (§ 73 *f*). Is. 58. 2 **יִשְׁאַלְוּנִי** they ask *me for judgments* of righteousness. 1 K. 12. 13 **וַיַּעַן אֶת־הָעָם קָשָׁה** he returned *the people a harsh answer*, 1 S. 20. 10. So the phrase **הָשִׁיב דָּבָר**, Gen. 37. 14 **וַהֲשִׁבֵנִי דָּבָר** and return *me an answer* (or, bring *me word*), 2 S. 24. 13, 1 K. 12. 6. 1 S. 21. 3 **הַמְלִךְ צִנְיָנִי דָּבָר** intrusted *me with a matter*. So **שָׁלַח** in this sense, Ex. 4. 28, 1 K. 14. 6. To *call*, Gen. 41. 51, 52. Is. 45. 11, Ps. 137. 3. 1 K. 18. 21.

Similarly the verbs in § 73, R. 1; **הוֹלִיךְ** Hos. 2. 16, Deu. 8. 2, Lam. 3. 2.

§ 76. When two nouns might form the subj. and pred. in a simple affirmation they become under a verb a double obj. acc. There are two cases: e.g. *man is dust*;—he made *man* of *dust* (so-called acc. of *Material*); and, *the stones are an altar*;—he built *the stones* into *an altar* (so-called acc. of *Product*). The nearer obj. is usually *def.* and the more remote *indef.* Such verbs are those of *making, placing, putting, appointing*, and verbs of the mind as to *see, know, consider, think, find*, &c. Gen. 2. 7 **וַיַּצֵּר אֶת־הָאָדָם עֶפְרָר** he made *the man* (out of) *dust* of the ground. Deu. 27. 6 **וַיִּבְנֶה אֶת־הָאֲבָנִים שְׁלֵמוֹת תְּבָנָה אֶת־מִזְבֵּחַ יְיָ** (of) *whole stones* shalt thou build *the altar* of Je. Gen. 27. 9, Ex. 20. 25; 25. 18, 28; 38. 3, 1 K. 7. 15, 27.—1 K. 18. 32 **וַיִּבְנֶה אֶת־הָאֲבָנִים מִזְבֵּחַ** he built *the stones* into *an altar*. Is. 3. 7 **לֹא תִשְׁמְנֵנִי קִצִּין עִם** appoint *me* not *a ruler* of a people, 5. 6; 28. 15, Gen. 28. 18, Ex. 32. 4, 1 S. 28. 2, Mic. 4. 13; 6. 7. Deu. 1. 15 **וַאֲתָנּוּ אֹתָם וְאֵשֶׁתִּים** and I made *them heads*, 1 K. 14. 7, Is. 3. 4. Gen. 15. 6 **וַיִּחְשְׁבֶהָ לוֹ צְדָקָה** he counted *it righteousness* to him.

The same consn. occurs with *adj.* and *ptcp.*, which then forms a predicate acc. (tertiary pred.). Gen. 7. 1 **אֶתְּךָ רָאִיתִי וְיָתִיב** *thee* have I perceived *righteous*, Deu. 28. 25 **וְיָתִיב**

Je. shall make *thee defeated*, v. 7. Jer. 22. 30, Is. 53. 4; 26. 7. 2 K. 14. 26.

§ 77. More generally, when in reaching the main obj. the verb brings some other thing under its action, both are put in acc. of obj. Is. 5. 2 וַיִּטְעֵהוּ שִׁיקָהּ he planted *it* with *choice vines*, Jud. 9. 45 וַיִּזְרְעֶהָ מֶלַח he sowed *it* with *salt*. Mic. 7. 2 hunts *his brother* with *a net*, Mal. 3. 24 smite *the earth* with (into) *a curse*, Ps. 64. 8 shoot *at them* with *arrows*; Ps. 45. 8 anointed *thee* with *oil*; 2 K. 19. 32 (קדם *pi.*); Ps. 88. 8. Jos. 7. 25 וַיִּרְגְּמוּ אֹתוֹ אֲבָנִים they stoned *him* with *stones*, Lev. 24. 23, 2 Chr. 24. 21; also with ב *instrum.*, and so סָקַל *to stone* always, Jos. 7. 25, Deu. 13. 11, 1 K. 21. 13.—Pr. 13. 24.

§ 78. Besides the double obj. verbs may have two acc. of different kinds, as obj. and *cog. acc.*, 1 K. 2. 8 קָלַלְנִי קָלְלָהּ cursed *me* with a bitter *curse*, 2 K. 17. 21, 1 K. 8. 55; acc. of *condition*, Gen. 27. 6 מִדְּבַר אֲבִיךָ I heard *thy father speaking*; acc. of *restriction*, Gen. 37. 21 smite *him* as to *life* (mortally); acc. *loci*, 37. 24 they cast *him* הַבֹּרָה *into the pit*, &c.

Rem. 1. Under § 75 *b* may come verbs of *giving, granting, &c.*, נתן, חנן *to grant* Gen. 33. 5; *to bless with* Gen. 49. 25, 28; *to requite with* שלם 1 S. 24. 18, Ps. 35. 12.

Rem. 2. Under § 75 *c* might be classed כסה *pi. to cover*, Mal. 2. 13, Ps. 104. 6; אור *pi. to gird* Ps. 18. 33, חנר *to gird* Ex. 29. 9; סבב *surround with* 1 K. 5. 17, עטר *pi. to surround with, crown* Ps. 5. 13; 8. 6; 103. 4; ספן *to ciel with* 1 K. 6. 9; צפה *pi.*, חפה *pi. to overlay with* 1 K. 6. 20, 21, 22, Ex. 25. 11, 28, 2 Chr. 3. 4–9; טוח *to daub with* Ez. 13. 10. Song 3. 10 paved *with love*. Some of these cases might be classed under § 77.

Rem. 3. Under § 76 come such verbs as עשה *make, build*, בנה *build, make, put*, Jos. 9. 27; 11. 6, 1 K. 14. 7. שים *put*, 1 S. 28. 2, 2 K. 10. 8, Is. 28. 15, Ps. 80. 7; 105. 21. שית *put* Is. 5. 6, Ps. 21. 7; 88. 9; 110. 1. ברא *create*, Is. 65.

18. הפך *to turn into* Ps. 114. 8. Ex. of so-called acc. of product, 1 K. 11. 30 rent *it* into 12 *pieces*, Am. 6. 11 smite *the house* into *fissures*, Hab. 3. 9 cleave *rivers* into *dry ground*, Ps. 74. 2. Ar. Gram. regards such cases as acc. of specification.

Rem. 4. The affinity of the consn. § 76 to the usage of Apposition (§ 29) is evident. The two obj. are virtually in Appos. 2 Chr. 2. 15.

Rem. 5. For second obj. ל is frequently used, esp. with persons, Gen. 2. 22 built the rib לְאִשָּׁה into a woman; 12. 2 I will make thee לְגוֹי a nation. With שִׁים Is. 14. 23; 23. 13; 28. 17. So חשב *to reckon* Gen. 38. 15, 1 S. 1. 13, and usually; *to turn into* Am. 6. 12, &c. And prep. for 2nd acc. is common in other cases, as *to satisfy with* ב Is. 58. 11, Lam. 3. 15; *to smite on the cheek* עַל, Mic. 4. 14; *to overlay with* ב, Jer. 10. 4, 2 K. 19. 1.

Rem. 6. Ecc. 7. 25 לָדַעַת רָשָׁע בְּסֵל to know *wickedness* (to be) *folly*, is an ex. of verb of the mind. The consn. with כִּי *that* is more usual. Ar. Gr. draws a distinction between verbs like *to see*, &c. as verbs of *sense* and as verbs of the mind. In both cases they take 2 acc., but the 2nd acc. differs. I saw *him sleeping* (verb of sense), *sleeping* is acc. of condition; in the other case it is 2nd obj., *perceived him* (to be) *sleeping* = that he was sleeping, pred. acc.

Rem. 7. Two acc. appear in the phrase עָשָׂה כָּלָה *to make* (to be) *a full end*, utterly destroy, Neh. 9. 31 לֹא עָשִׂיתָם כָּלָה, Nah. 1. 8, Jer. 30. 11, though אַת seems prep. Jer. 5. 18. Strong consns. occur in poetry, Ps. 21. 13, put *them the back* שָׁבָם, 18. 41 make *them the back* עָרַף, *i.e.* cause them to turn the back (in flight) to one. Ex. 23. 27.

Rem. 8. Sentences beginning with כִּי, אֲשֶׁר, אֲשֶׁר *that, how that*, after *tell, show*, &c. form virtually a 2nd obj. § 146. And so words with ב *as, for*, Gen. 42. 30 held us בְּמַרְגְּלִים *spies*, Ps. 44. 12.—Unique perhaps is הִנְיִד with 2 acc., Ez. 43. 10. 2 S. 15. 31 *rd.* גִּלְדוּר; 2 K. 7. 9 בֵּית is acc. *loci*; Job 26. 4 אֶת־מִי = *by whose help* (inspiration), as Gen. 4. 1, according to parallel clause.

## 5. Construction of the Passive

§ 79. When *one obj.* is governed by the act. this may become subj. of the pass., as in other languages. But frequently the pass. is used, as we say, impersonally (3 sing. mas.), and governs in the same way as the act.—the idea being that the pass. expresses an action of which the agent is unknown, or, not named. 1 K. 2. 21 אֶת־אֲבִישַׁג יִתֵּן *let Abishag be given*; Jer. 35. 14 הוֹקֵם אֶת־דְּבָרֵי יְהוֹנָדָב the commands of Jon. *are performed*; Gen. 40. 20 יוֹם הַלֵּדָתָא לֹא יֵאָכַל אֶת־פְּרֵעָה the day Ph. *was born* (inf.). Ex. 21. 28 אֶת־בְּשָׂרוֹ shall not be eaten. Gen. 4. 18; 27. 42, Ex. 10. 8, Deu. 12. 22, Jos. 9. 24, 2 S. 21. 6, 11, 1 K. 18. 13, 2 K. 5. 17, Hos. 10. 6, Am. 4. 2, Jer. 38. 4.

§ 80. When *two obj.* are governed in the act. the nearer of the two usually becomes subj. of the pass., and the more remote is retained in accus. Is. 6. 4 וְהַבַּיִת יִמְלֵא עָשָׁן and the house was filled *with smoke*; Ex. 1. 7, Is. 2. 7, 8; 38. 10. Gen. 31. 15 הֲלוֹא נִחְשַׁבְנוּ לּוֹ are we not counted *for strangers* by him? Cf. 15. 6, Is. 40. 17. Mic. 3. 12 צִיּוֹן שָׂדֵה תִּחְרַשׁ Zion shall be ploughed *into a field*; Is. 6. 11; 24. 12. 1 K. 6. 7 הַבַּיִת נִבְנָה מִשְׁלֵמֹת אֲבָן was built *of unhewn stones*, Ezr. 5. 8, cf. Deu. 27. 6.—Gen. 17. 11, Ex. 13. 7; 25. 31, Lev. 6. 9, Jud. 18. 11, 1 K. 7. 14; 14. 6 (cf. Ex. 4. 28); 22. 10, Ps. 80. 11, Pr. 24. 31. So cog. acc. Jer. 14. 17.

§ 81. The connexion between the real personal agent and pass. vb. is usually expressed by prep. ל. Gen. 14. 19 בְּרוּךְ לַאֲלֵהֵם עֲלֵיוֹן blessed *by God*; 31. 15 נִחְשַׁבְנוּ לּוֹ we are counted *by him*; Is. 65. 1 לֹא בִקְשָׁנִי I was to be found *by those who sought me not*. Gen. 25. 21, Ex. 12. 16, Jos. 17. 16, 1 S. 15. 13, Jer. 8. 3, Neh. 6. 1. More rarely by מִן (*from, of source*), Hos. 7. 4 מִן הַבֵּצֶרֶת מֵאִפָּה an oven heated *by a baker* (text doubtful), Lev. 21. 7; cf. Jud. 14. 4,



Mal. 1. 9, Job 4. 9, 1 Chr. 5. 22. Prep. מן is usual of *cause* or means, not personal. Gen. 9. 11 יִכְרַת מִמֵּי הַמַּבּוּל be cut off *by the waters* of the flood, Ob. 9, Job 7. 14. Prep. ב (through, of instrum.) is also used of persons, Gen. 9. 6 בְּאָדָם דָּמוֹ יִשְׁפָּד through men shall his blood be shed.

Rem. 1. More rarely the remoter obj. becomes subj. of pass., Lev. 13. 49 וְהִרְאָה אֶת־הַפֶּהּ and it shall be shown *to the priest*, cf. Ex. 26. 30. So Ar. can say, 'u'tiya zeidan dirhamun, a dirhem was given Zeid, though usually, Zeid was given a dirhem (zeidun dirhaman).

Rem. 2. It is seldom that both acc. of act. are retained in pass., Nu. 14. 21, Ps. 72. 19. Such impers. use of pass. is easier when the act. governs one acc. and prep., Gen. 2. 23 לֹאֵת יִקְרָא אִשָּׁה *this shall be called woman* (acc.), Is. 1. 26, Nu. 16. 29. Of course all acc. except that of the *obj.* must be retained in pass.

Rem. 3. The exx. given above show that the use of acc. after pass. is classical, though the usage perhaps increased in later style. It is common with יָלַד *to bear*, Gen. 4. 18 (J); 21. 5; 46. 20, Nu. 26. 60. The consn. of this word in some cases is uncertain, Gen. 35. 26 (Sam. *pl.*), cf. 36. 5, 1 Chr. 2. 3, 9; 3. 1, 4. Other exx. Gen. 21. 8, Nu. 7. 10. Ex. 25. 28; 27. 7, Lev. 16. 27. Nu. 11. 22; 26. 55 (cf. *v.* 53); 32. 5. Gen. 17. 5; 35. 10. Gen. 17. 11, 14, 24, 25 (acc. of restriction). In some cases where noun with אַת precedes the pass. the אַת may merely give definiteness to the subj., Jud. 6. 28; and in other cases אַת may be resumptive, Jos. 7. 15.

Rem. 4. The pass. *be heard* in sense of *answered* is niph. of עָנָה, Job 19. 7, Pr. 21. 13. Pass. of שָׁמַע does not seem used in this sense with personal subj. (cf. Del. N.T. Matt. 6. 7).

## SUBORDINATION OF ONE VERB TO ANOTHER

§ 82. There are two cases—(a) When the first verb expresses the *mode* of the action denoted by the second. In this case the second verb expresses the real action, and the first has to be rendered adverbially. Gen. 31. 27 נְהַיְבֵאתָ

הִקְשִׁיתָ לְשֹׂאֵל לָבְרָחָה thou hast fled away *secretly*; 2 K. 2. 10 הִקְשִׁיתָ לְשֹׂאֵל thou hast asked *a hard thing* (lit. *done hardly as to asking*); Ex. 8. 24 לֹא־תִרְחִיקוּ לְלָקֶט ye shall not go *far away*; Ps. 55. 8. Jer. 13. 18 הִשְׁפִּילוּ שִׁבּוֹ sit down *low*. 1 S. 1. 12; 2. 3; 16. 17, 2 S. 19. 4, 1 K. 14. 9, 2 K. 21. 6, Is. 23. 16; 29. 15; 55. 7, Jer. 1. 12; 16. 12, Hos. 9. 9, Am. 4. 4, Jon. 4. 2, Ezr. 10. 13, 2 Chr. 20. 35. The consn. is common with שׁוּב *to do again*, הִרְבָּה, הִגְדִּיל, &c.

(b) When the two verbs express distinct ideas. Gen. 11. 8 וַיַּחְדְּלוּ לְבִנּוֹת הָעִיר and they *gave up building* the city; 1 S. 18. 2 וְלֹא נָתַנוּ לָשׁוּב וְלֹא he did not *allow him to return*. 1 S. 17. 39 *rd.* perhaps וַיֵּלֶא לְלָקֶט.

§ 83. Modes of connection.—(a) The second verb is subordinated to the first in *inf. cons.*, with, or less commonly without, ל, or still less commonly in *infin. abs.* See *exx.* above, and cf. § 90 c.

(b) The verbs are *co-ordinated* in the same tense-form with *vav*. Gen. 24. 18 וַתִּמְהַר וַתִּפְּדֵה she *hasted to let down* her pitcher; 44. 11. 2 K. 6. 3 הוֹאֵל־נָא וְלֵךְ *consent to go*; Jud. 19. 6. Gen. 25. 1 וַיִּקַּח אִשָּׁה אַבְרָם and *took another wife*; 1 K. 19. 6 וַיִּשָּׁב וַיִּשְׁכַּב and he *lay down again*; 2 K. 1. 11, 13. Instead of the same tense the equivalent *vav conv.* form may be used, Hos. 2. 11 אָשׁוּב אֶקְחָהּ *I will take back again*. Gen. 27. 42, 2 S. 7. 29, 1 S. 20. 31, Is. 6. 13, Mal. 1. 4, Job 6. 9.—Jos. 7. 7, Is. 1. 19, Est. 8. 6, Dan. 9. 25.

(c) The verbs are co-ordinated without *vav*, *asyndetously*. Esp. in imper.; 2 K. 5. 23 קַח כְּפָרִים הוֹאֵל *please take* two talents; 1 S. 3. 5 שָׁכַב שׁוּב *lie down again*; v. 9, Gen. 19. 22, Deu. 2. 24. Jos. 5. 2, Is. 21. 12, Jer. 13. 18, Ps. 51. 4.—*Impf.* Hos. 1. 6 לֹא אוֹסִיף עוֹד אֲרַחֵם *I will no more pity*; Gen. 30. 31 אֲשׁוּבָה אֲרַעָה צֹאנֶךָ *I will keep thy flock again*; 1 S. 2. 3 אַל־תִּרְבּוּ תִּדְבְּרוּ *speak not always*. Mic.

7. 19, Lam. 4. 14, Ps. 50. 20; 88. 11; 102. 14, Job 10. 16; 19. 3; 24. 14. Or with equivalent *vav conv.*, Is. 29. 4 וְשַׁפְּלֵתָּ וְשַׁפְּלֵתָּ thou shalt speak low out of the ground (1 S. 20. 19 rd. תִּפְקַד וְשַׁלַּשְׁתָּ תִּפְקַד shalt be greatly missed a third time, cf. v. 18).—*Perf.* Ps. 106. 13 שָׁכְחוּ מִיָּדָם speedily they forgot. Hos. 5. 11; 9. 9, Zeph. 3. 7, Zech. 8. 15.—*Ptcp.* Hos. 6. 4; 13. 3.—The vigorous הָיִיתִי . . . אֲכַלְנִי Gen. 31. 40 reminds of Ar. *kuniu . . . ya'kuluni*;—more usually with inchoative *pendens*, as Gen. 24. 27. § 106.

Rem. 1. The second verb is occasionally subordinated in *impf.*, Is. 42. 21 הִפֵּץ לִמְעַן צְדָקוֹ יִגְדִיל Je. was pleased to make great; Job 32. 22 לֹא יִדְעֵתִי אֲכַבֶּה I am not good at flattering; Is. 47. 1 לֹא תוֹסִיפִי יִקְרָאוּ לָךְ thou shalt no more be called. Lev. 9. 6, Nu. 22. 6, Lam. 1. 10. The consn. is more common in Syr., Noeld. § 267.

Rem. 2. In a few instances the *ptcp.* or an *adj.* is subordinated (*acc.*). Is. 33. 1 פְּהַתִּימָה שׁוֹרֵר when thou art done destroying; 1 S. 3. 2 יָעִינָו הַחֲלוֹ בְּהוֹת his eyes had begun to be dim. 1 S. 16. 16, Hos. 7. 4, Jer. 22. 30, Neh. 10. 29. So probably a noun, Gen. 9. 20, N. began (as) a husbandman (*acc.*). The consn., and N., the husbandman, began and planted (was the first to plant, or, planted for the first time, Gen. 10. 8, 1 S. 14. 35; 22. 15), is rather unnatural, though cf. the appos. Gen. 37. 2. In this sense “begin” is usually followed by *inf.*, but cf. Ezr. 3. 8.—“One of them” says—

“Or (nae reflection on your lear),

Ye may commence a shaver,” &c.

Rem. 3. The *asyndetous consn.* § 83c is very common in Syr., Noeld. § 337. In Ar. the older and classical consn. was with *fa*, and, Wr. ii. § 140; de Lag. *Uebersicht*, p. 209 *seq.*, does not alter this fact.

Rem. 4. Such words as לָךְ, לָכָה come, קוּם arise, are used almost as interjections though construed regularly, Is. 22. 15 לָךְ־בֹּא, 1 K. 1. 13 לָכִי וּבֹאִי v. 12, Gen. 19. 15, 1 S. 9. 5. The *mas.* לָכָה is even used to a woman, Gen. 19. 32. Both verbs often merely confer liveliness on the real action, Hos. 5. 15; 6. 1, Gen. 19. 35, Ps. 88. 11. Some fixed compound

phrases express only a *single* idea, as וַיַּעַן וַיֹּאמֶר *answered and said*, וַתֵּלֶד וַתְּהַר *conceived and bore* = *she bore*, Gen. 21. 2. Text 1 S. 1. 20 is probably quite right. Comp. 1 Chr. 4. 17 where ותהר alone is used for the whole phrase.

Rem. 5. In some instances the modifying verb stands second, Jer. 4. 5 קָרְאוּ מְלֵאוּ קוֹלְכֶם *cry with full voice*, cf. 12. 6 קָרְאוּ מְלֵא. Is. 53. 11, Jo. 2. 26.

## THE NOMEN ACTIONIS OR INFINITIVE

### 1. *Infinitive Absolute*

§ 84. The infin. abs. as an abstract noun expresses the bare idea of the verbal action, apart from the modifications which subject-inflections or tense-forms lend to it. Used along with the inflected form it gives emphasis to the expression of the action, and, when used alone, graphically represents the action in its exercise, continuance, prevalence, and the like, sometimes almost with the force of an exclamation.

Construction of inf. abs.—Expressing the bare notion of the verb the inf. abs. refuses to enter into close construction, receiving neither suffixes nor prep. It may, however—

(a) Be the subj. in a nominal sent., esp. when the pred. is טוב *good*, or לא טוב (in poet. בֵּל טוב) *not good*, but also otherwise. Pr. 28. 21 הַקְּרַפְּנִים לֹא-טוֹב *to be partial* is not good. 1 S. 15. 23, Jer. 10. 5, Pr. 24. 23; 25. 27, Job 25. 2. In Job 6. 25 it is subj. to a verbal sent.

(b) Or the obj. of a verb. Is. 1. 17 לִמְדוּ הַיָּשִׁיב *learn to do well*; 42. 24 לֹא אָבוּ הַלֹּדֵךְ *they willed not to walk*. Is. 7. 15; 57. 20, Pr. 15. 12, Job 9. 18; 13. 3. Rarely in gen. Is. 14. 23 בְּמִטְאָטֵיטָה הַשְׂמֵד *with the besom of destruction*. Pr. 1. 3; 21. 16. Cf. Rem. 1.

(c) It may govern like its own finite verb, e.g. acc., Hos. 10. 4 כָּרַת בְּרִית *making covenants*; Is. 22. 13 הָרַג בְּקֹר *kill* oxen and slaying sheep. Is. 5. 5; 21. 5;

59. 4, 13, Pr. 25. 4, 5. Or prep., Is. 7. 15 **מָאוֹס בָּרַע וּבָחַר** to refuse *evil* and choose *good*. It is not followed by *gen.* either of noun or pron.

Rem. 1. 1 S. 1. 9 is the only ex. of inf. abs. with prep. (text dubious). The inf. abs. tends, however, to become a real noun (Job 25. 2, Lam. 3. 45), and may take prep. when so used, Is. 30. 15, and also when used adverbially, Neh. 5. 18. The inf. cons. hiph. is occasionally pointed like inf. abs., *e.g.* Deu. 32. 8, Jer. 44. 19, 25, which introduces some uncertainty (Deu. 26. 12, Neh. 10. 39 should perhaps be read *pi.*). Inf. abs. as obj. seems to occur first in Is.

§ 85. Use of inf. abs.—The inf. abs. is used *first*, along with the forms of its own verb, to add emphasis. In this case it stands chiefly before its verb, but also after it. *Secondly*, it is used adverbially to describe the action of a previous verb. And, *thirdly*, it is used instead of the finite or other inflected forms of the verb.

§ 86. Use along with its own verb.—(a) When *before* its verb the kind of emphasis given by inf. abs. may be of various kinds, *e.g.* that of strong *asseveration* in promises or threats; that of *antithesis* in adversative statements; the emphasis natural in a *supposition* or *concession*; and that of *interrogation*, particularly when the speaker is animated, and throws into the question an intonation of surprise, scorn, dislike, &c. Such shades cannot be reproduced in translation. Occasionally such a word as *indeed*, *surely* (Gen. 2. 17), *forsooth* (37. 8), *of course* (43. 7), *at all* (Hos. 1. 6), &c., may bring out the sense, but oftenest the kind of emphasis is best expressed by an intonation of the voice.

Ex. of *asseveration*: Gen. 2. 17 מוֹת תָּמוּת *thou shalt (surely) die!* 16. 10; 18. 10, 2 S. 5. 19. Frequently in injunctions; Ex. 21. 28 וְסָקַל הַשּׂוֹר the ox *shall be stoned*, 23. 4, Deu. 12. 2, and often. *Antithesis*: Jud. 15. 13 לֹא כִי אָסַר נֶאֱסַרָה וְהָמַת לֹא נִמְיָתָה *nay, we will bind*

*thee, but we will not kill thee.* 2 S. 24. 24, Deu. 7. 26; 13. 10; 21. 14, and often, 1 S. 6. 3, 1 K. 11. 22, Am. 9. 8, Is. 28. 28, Jer. 32. 4; 34. 3. *Supposition* (very common): Ex. 21. 5 **הָעֶבֶד יֹאמַר וְאָם יֹאמַר** *but if the slave should say.* Jud. 11. 30, Ex. 22. 3, 11, 12, 16, 22, Jud. 14. 12, 1 S. 1. 11; 20. 6, 9, 21, 2 S. 18. 3. *So concession*: Gen. 31. 30 **וְעַתָּה הֲלֹךְ הַלָּקְחָתְךָ** *well, thou hast gone off because, &c. (but why steal my gods?).* 1 S. 2. 30. *In questions*: Gen. 24. 5 **הֲהָשִׁיב אֶת־בְּנִי** *am I, then, to bring back?* 37. 8, 10 **הֲמִלְכָה עָלֵינוּ** *shalt thou rule (forsooth) over us?* 43. 7 **הֲיָדָעָנוּ כִּי יֹאמַר** *were we (then) to know?* Nu. 22. 30, 37, 38, Jud. 11. 25, 1 S. 2. 27, 2 K. 18. 33, Is. 50. 2, Jer. 26. 19, Ez. 14. 3; 18. 23, Zech. 7. 5.

The peculiar emphasis of inf. abs. is well felt when a speaker gives a report regarding circumstances, or repeats (directly or indirectly) the words of another, or his own thoughts. Gen. 43. 3, 7, Jud. 9. 8; 15. 2, 1 S. 10. 16; 14. 28, 43; 20. 3, 6, 28; 23. 22, 2 S. 1. 6. Also when restrictive particles, **אֲדָה**, **רַק**, are used, Gen. 27. 30; 44. 28, Jud. 7. 19.

(b) In negative sent. inf. abs. precedes the neg. Is. 30. 19 **לֹא־תִבְכֶּה בְּכֹךָ** *thou shalt not weep.* Jud. 15. 13 above, Ex. 8. 24; 34. 7, Deu. 21. 14, Jud. 1. 28, 1 K. 3. 27, Am. 3. 5, Jer. 6. 15; 13. 12. With **אֵל**, 1 K. 3. 26, Mic. 1. 10. Exceptions occur mostly when a denial is given to previous words, Gen. 3. 4, Am. 9. 8, Ps. 49. 8.

(c) When placed after its verb inf. abs. has often the same force as when before it. 2 K. 5. 11 **אָמַרְתִּי אֵלַי יֵצֵא** *I thought, He will (certainly) come out unto me.* Nu. 23. 11, 2 S. 3. 24; 6. 20, Jer. 23. 39, Dan. 11. 10, 13. In this case inf. abs. is sometimes strengthened by **גַּם**. Gen. 46. 4 **וְאָנֹכִי אֵעֲלֶה גַם־עִלָּה** *I will also bring thee up;* 31. 15, Nu. 16. 13. Inf. abs. always stands after *imper.* and *ptcp.*, Nu. 11. 15 **הָרַגְנִי כִּי־הָרַגְתָּ** *kill me rather (at once);* Jer. 22. 10

בָּכוּ לְהִלֵּךְ *weep, indeed, for him that is gone away.* Jud. 5. 23, Is. 6. 9. With ptc. Jer. 23. 17, Is. 22. 17, Jud. 11. 25?

But inf. abs. after its verb suggests an indefinitely prolonged state of the action, and therefore expresses continuance, prevalence, &c. Nu. 11. 32 וַיִּשְׁטְחוּ לָהֶם שָׂטוֹחַ *and they went spreading them out* (the quails). Jer. 6. 29. This use is clearer when another inf. abs. is added; Jud. 14. 9 וַיֵּלֶךְ הַלֵּוֹד וְאָכַל *he went on, eating as he went*; Gen. 8. 7 וַיֵּצֵא יָצוּא וָשׁוּב *and it went (always) out and back.* 1 S. 6. 12, 1 K. 20. 37, 2 K. 2. 11, Is. 19. 22. This use is akin to the adverbial use, cf. 2 K. 21. 13, where *rd.* probably מָחָה וְהָפִיץ, with larger accent at *dish.* This inf. *before* the verb, Is. 3. 16, cf. Ps. 126. 6.

Rem. 1. Exx. like Gen. 43. 3, 7, Am. 9. 8 hardly prove that infin. abs. intensifies the action in the same sense as the *pi.* With 1 S. 20. 6 cf. *v.* 28. In Gen. 19. 9 the inf. after verb may emphasise the assumption *to be judge* on the part of one who was a stranger rather than the *habit* of judging. Jos. 24. 10.

Rem. 2. The inf. abs. is oftenest of the same conjug. as the finite, whether before or after it, *e.g.* *Kal* Gen. 2. 16, *niph.* Ex. 22. 3, *pi.* Gen. 22. 17, *pu.* 40. 15, *hiph.* 3. 16, *hoph.* Ez. 16. 4, *hith.* Nu. 16. 13. But as the *nomen actionis* of the *Kal* expresses the abstract idea of the verb in general, it may be joined with any other conjug., *e.g.* with *niph.* Ex. 21. 20; *pi.* 2 S. 20. 18; *pu.* Gen. 37. 33; *hiph.* 1 S. 23. 22, Gen. 46. 4; *hoph.* Ex. 21. 12 (and always in this phrase *shall be put to death*); *hithpo.* Is. 24. 19. Other combinations are rarer, *e.g.* inf. *hoph.* with *niph.* 2 K. 3. 23, and with *pu.* Ez. 16. 4; inf. *pi.* with *hiph.* 1 S. 2. 16. Occasionally the inf. is from another verb, cognate and similar in sound, Is. 28. 28, Jer. 8. 13; 48. 9 (Zeph. 1. 2?). If text right in Jer. 42. 10, שׁוּב, the weak *yod* has fallen away, cf. Jud 19. 11, 2 S. 22. 41.

Rem. 3. Instead of inf. abs. the abstract noun is some-

times used; Is. 35. 2, Jer. 46. 5, Mic. 4. 9, Hab. 3. 9 (last two cognate stems), Job 27. 12, cf. Is. 29. 14, both inf. and noun.—Occasionally the form of inf. cons. is used, Nu. 23. 25, Ru. 2. 16, Jer. 50. 34, Pr. 23. 1 (all due to assonance with following verb), Ps. 50. 21, Neh. 1. 7.—2 K. 3. 24 *הכוח* text amiss (but cf. § 96, R. 4), Ez. 11. 7 *rd. אוציה*. Cf. however, Jos. 4. 3; 7. 7, Ez. 7. 14.

Rem. 4. The verb *הלך* with its inf. abs. is followed: (a) mostly by another inf. abs. as above in *c*, e.g. 2 S. 3. 16. *וילך הלך ויבנה*, Jos. 6. 9, 2 K. 2. 11; but (b) also by ptcp. 2 S. 18. 25 *וילך הלך וקרב*, Jer. 41. 6, cf. 2 S. 16. 5; and (c) by a finite tense, 2 S. 16. 13 *וילך הלך ויקלל*, Jos. 6. 13, 1 S. 19. 23, 2 S. 13. 19, cf. Is. 31. 5.

But *הלך* is often used in a metaphorical sense to express *progress, continuance, &c.* in an action or condition, which is expressed by ptcp. or adj. Gen. 26. 13 *וַיִּגְדַּל וַיֵּלֶךְ הַלֶּךְ he grew ever greater*. Jud. 4. 24, 1 S. 14. 19, 2 S. 5. 10, 1 Chr. 11. 9. In the same sense the ptcp. *הִלְךָ* is used in a predication. 2 S. 3. 1 *וַיִּדְוֶה הַלֶּךְ הַלְּךָ D. waxed stronger and stronger*. Ex. 19. 19 *always waxed louder*. 1 S. 2. 26 (17. 41 in a literal sense), 2 S. 15. 12, 2 Chr. 17. 12, Est. 9. 4, Pr. 4. 18.

Used adverbially with inf. abs. of other verbs inf. abs. of *הלך* expresses the same idea of progress or endurance. Gen. 12. 9 *וַיִּסַּע הַלֶּךְ וַיָּסוּעַ he continued always journeying*; 8. 3 *always receded more and more*, cf. *v.* 5.

§ 87. Adverbial use of inf. abs.—The inf. abs. is used to describe adverbially the manner, degree, &c., of the action expressed by a previous verb. This inf. is itself without *and*, but other inf. may be subjoined to it. Deu. 9. 21 *וַאֲכַתְּ וַאֲחַטְּ* and *I beat it, grinding it small*; 1 S. 3. 12 *אֶקִּים אֶת כָּל־אֲשֶׁר דִּבַּרְתִּי מֵהַחֵל וְכֵלֵה* I will fulfil all that I have spoken, *from beginning to end*. Gen. 21. 16; 30. 32, Nu. 6. 23, Jos. 3. 17; 6. 3, 11, 1 S. 17. 16, 2 S. 8. 2, Is. 57. 17, Mic. 6. 13, Zech. 7. 3, Jer. 3. 15; 12. 17; 22. 19. Cf. Gen. 30. 37 *בְּחֻשָׁף*. Some inf. abs. (chiefly hiph.) have become



almost simple adverbs, as **הַיָּטֵב** *well, very*, **הַרְבֵּה** *much, very*, **הַרְחֵק** *far*, Gen. 21. 16, Jos. 3. 16.

Rem. 1. Here belongs the phrase of Jer., *e.g.* 7. 13 **וַאֲדַבֵּר . . . הַשְּׂכֵם וְדַבֵּר** I spoke, *earnestly speaking*, in which inf. of first verb is repeated; 11. 7; 25. 4; 29. 19; 32. 33; 35. 14, 15. As adverbial inf. is without *and*, delete vav in 26. 5.—Instead of inf. of first verb there is finite form, Is. 57. 17, cf. 31. 5. In Hos. 10. 4 the inf. might exegese **וַדְּבַרוּ דְבָרִים**, giving examples of their idle or swelling words; or they may express actions on the same line as their talk.

§ 88. Inf. abs. instead of inflected forms.—(a) When circumstances, personal relations, &c., have already been suggested by an inflected verbal form, it is often thought sufficient to subjoin further actions in the bare inf. form. This inf. may follow any inflected form, and, unlike the adverbial inf., is introduced by *and*. Jud. 7. 19 **וַיִּתְקְעוּ וַיִּשְׁבְּרוּ** they blew with the trumpets, *and broke* the pitchers; 1 K. 9. 25 **וַיִּקְרַע וַיִּשְׂרֹף** and Solomon offered sacrifices (freq.) *and burnt incense*; Jer. 14. 5 **גַּם-אֵילַת בְּשָׂדֶה יִלְדָה וְעֹזֹב שָׂדֵה יִקְנֶה וְכָתוּב בְּסֵפֶר וְחָתוּם** even the hind calves, *and forsakes* (her young); Jer. 32. 44 **וַיִּקְרְאוּ וַיִּשְׁבְּרוּ וַיִּתְּנוּ עֵדִים** they shall buy fields, *and subscribe deeds, and seal them, and take witnesses*. The usage becomes more common in later style. Cf. Rem. 1.

(b) The bare inf. abs. is used without a preceding inflected form when the verbal action or state in itself, apart from modifications of time, person, &c., is to be forcibly presented, *e.g.* in injunctions which are general; in descriptions of prevailing conduct or condition of things; but also in any case where the action in itself, apart from its conditions, is to be vividly expressed. Ex. 20. 8 **זָכוֹר אֶת יוֹם הַשַּׁבָּת** *remember* the sabbath day!—Hos. 4. 2 **אָלֶה וְכַחֵשׁ וְרָצַח וְגַנֵּב וְנָאֵף** *false swearing, and murder, and theft, and adultery* (they

practise)!—1 K. 22. 30 **בְּמִלְחָמָה וּבֵא בְּתַחַשׁ** *disguise myself* (will I), *and go* into the battle! 2 K. 4. 43 **כֹּה אָמַר וְיָאָכַל וְיִהְיֶה** *thus saith Je., Eat* (shall ye) *and leave over!*

(c) So in other cases where the action in itself, apart from its circumstances, is to be stated, the inf. abs. is sufficient. Is. 20. 2 **וַיֵּשֶׁב עָרֹם וַיְהִי** he did so, *walking naked and barefoot*, Is. 5. 5. Particularly when the action is first indicated by *this*. Jer. 9. 23 **בְּזֹאת יִתְהַלֵּל** *in this* let one glory, *in understanding and in knowing me*; Is. 58. 6 is not *this* the fast that I like, **פָּתַח חֲרָצוֹת רָשָׁע** *to loose* the bonds of wickedness, &c. (three inf., cf. *v.* 7). Gen. 17. 10; Deu. 15. 2, Is. 37. 30, Zech. 14. 12.

Rem. 1. Exx. of *a*. After perf., 1 S. 2. 27, 28, Hos. 10. 4, Jer. 19. 13; 22. 14, Hag. 1. 6, Zech. 3. 4; 7. 5, 1 Chr. 5. 20, 2 Chr. 28. 19, Ecc. 4. 1, 2; 9. 11, Est. 9. 6, 12, 16, cf. 17, Dan. 9. 5.—After impf., Jer. 32. 44; 36. 23. With *ו* or, Lev. 25. 14, Nu. 30. 3, Deu. 14. 21.—After vav impf., Gen. 41. 43, Ex. 8. 11, Jer. 37. 21, 1 Chr. 16. 36, Neh. 8. 8.—Vav perf., Zech. 12. 10.—Inf., 1 S. 22. 13, Jer. 7. 18, cf. 32. 33.—Ptcp., Hab. 2. 15, Est. 8. 8.

Rem. 2. Exx. of *b*. Inf. abs. as imper., Ex. 12. 48; 13. 3, Deu. 1. 16; 5. 12; 31. 26, Jos. 1. 13, 2 K. 3. 16, Zech. 6. 10. So **הֲלוֹךְ** *go!* 2 S. 24. 12, 2 K. 5. 10, and often in Jer., 2. 2; 3. 12, &c. Is. 14. 31? (**נָמוֹן** inf. abs.).—Of prevailing conduct or condition, Is. 21. 5; 22. 13; 59. 4, 13, Jer. 7. 9; 8. 15; 14. 19, Ez. 21. 31, Hag. 1. 9.—Exx. of *c*, Jer. 3. 1 (**וְשׁוֹב**), Ez. 23. 30, 46, Job 40. 2, Pr. 17. 12; 25. 4, 5.

Rem. 3. Like inf. cons. (§ 96), inf. abs. when used for finite may be continued by fin. form, Is. 42. 22; 58. 6.

Rem. 4. A force akin to that of inf. abs. is sometimes obtained by repeating the verb in another form. Ps. 118. 11, Zeph. 2. 1, Hab. 1. 5, Is. 29. 9 (Hos. 4. 18). But in some of these places text is doubtful.

Rem. 5. When inf. abs. is used for finite verb the *subj.*

is occasionally expressed with it, Deu. 15. 2, Lev. 6. 7, Nu. 15. 35, 1 S. 25. 26, Is. 42. 22, Ps. 17. 5, Job 40. 2, Pr. 17. 12, Ecc. 4. 2, Est. 9. 1. Gen. 17. 12, 13 make it probable that כְּלוּזָרַר *v.* 10 is subj. and not acc. after pass.

Rem. 6. In § 86 (cf. § 67) and § 87 the inf. abs. is no doubt in acc. ; possibly also in § 88, cf. Kor. 2. 77.

## 2. The Infinitive Construct

§ 89. The inf. cons. has the qualities both of noun and verb, being used like a gerund, admitting prepp. and suffixes, and yet having the government of its verb. As *nomen verbi* it does not of itself express tense; the time is either indefinite or suggested by the context and circumstances. It is too little of a noun to take the *art.*, § 19.

§ 90. Cases of inf. cons. itself.—(a) The inf. cons. may be *nom.* as subject to a nominal sentence, especially when the pred. is “good” or “not good” (§ 84 a), but also otherwise, Gen. 2. 18 לֹא טוֹב הֵיטוֹת הָאָדָם לְבַדּוֹ *man's being alone* is not good ; Is. 7. 13 הַמְעַט מִכֶּם הִלְאוֹת אַנְשִׁים is *wearying men* too little for you? Gen. 29. 19; 30. 15, Ex. 14. 12, Jud. 9. 2; 18. 19, 1 S. 15. 22; 23. 20; 29. 6, 2 S. 18. 11, Is. 10. 7, Mic. 3. 1, Ps. 118. 9, Pr. 10. 23; 13. 19; 16. 6, 12, 16, and often.

(b) It may be in *gen.* by a noun or prep. Gen. 2. 4 בְּיוֹם יְהוָה עָשׂוֹת יְהוָה in the day of *Jehovah's making*; 14. 17 אַחֲרֵי שׁוּבוֹ מִהַכּוֹת *after his returning from smiting*. Gen. 2. 17; 21. 5; 24. 30; 29. 7, Is. 7. 17, Hos. 2. 5, 17. Also, though rarely, after an adj. or ptcp. in *cons.*, Is. 56. 10, Jer. 13. 23, Ps. 127. 2, Pr. 30. 29. In a few instances כָּל *all* precedes inf. cons., Gen. 30. 41, 1 K. 8. 52, Ps. 132. 1, 1 Chr. 23. 31.

(c) It may be in *acc.* as obj. to an active verb. 1 K. 3. 7 לֹא אֲדַע צֵאת נְבִיאָה I know not *how to go out or come in*. Gen. 8. 10, Ex. 2. 3, Deu. 2. 25, 2 K. 19. 27, Is. 1. 14; 11. 9, Jer. 15. 15, Am. 3. 10, Ps. 101. 3. The acc. sign אֶת occurs before inf. 2 K. 19. 27 (Is. 37. 28). The inf. cons. with

prep. ל, which expresses the direction of the action of governing verb, has in usage greatly superseded the simple inf. when *obj.*; Gen. 18. 29 וַיִּסָּף עוֹד לְדַבֵּר, 11. 8; 13. 16. This inf. with ל has become almost a simple verbal *form*, and appears often as subj. in the nominal sent., 1 S. 15. 22, 2 S. 18. 11, Is. 10. 7 with 28. 19, Mic. 3. 1, Ps. 118. 8, Pr. 21. 9 with 25. 24. Cf. Hab. 2. 14.

Rem. 1. It is usually the whole clause rather than the mere inf. that is grammatical subj.; comp. the forcible phrase 2 S. 14. 32. The inf. cons. is too little nominal to be subj. to a verb: in 2 S. 22. 36 *rd.* with Ps. 18. 36 וַעֲנֹתֶךָ; 1 K. 16. 31 הִנְגַל is ptcp., cf. 1 S. 18. 23. In 2 S. 24. 13 נָסַךְ is loosely appended to preceding words. Is. 37. 29 שְׁאַנְנֶךָ if text right may be an ex., or adj. used substantively (vocalisation varies). Ps. 17. 3 וַפְתִּי if inf. is scarcely subj. to following verb. On the other hand the fem. inf. tends to be a real noun, and may be subj. to a verb, Pr. 10. 12.—It is rare that the mas. form of inf. is construed as fem. (neut.), 1 S. 18. 23, Jer. 2. 17 with 2. 19.

Rem. 2. Deu. 25. 2 בְּנֵי הַבֹּזֹת *worthy of a beating* (adjudged the bastinado) is peculiar, cf. 1 S. 20. 31.

§ 91. Government by inf. cons.—(a) The agent or subj., which usually immediately follows inf., is in the *gen.* Gen. 2. 4 עֲשׂוֹת יְהוָה יהוה's making; 19. 16 עָלָיו י' בְּחַמְלַת י' in Jehovah's pitying him. Gen. 16. 16; 24. 11, Ex. 17. 1, Deu. 1. 27, 1 K. 10. 9. So with suff., Gen. 3. 19 עַד שׁוֹבֶךָ אֶל־הָאָרֶץ until thy returning to the ground, 3. 5; 39. 18.

When separated from inf. by intervening words the subj., with a looser construction, must be supposed to be in the *nom.*; Is. 20. 1 בְּשַׁלַּח אֹתוֹ קַרְגֹּן when Sargon sent him. Gen. 4. 15, Nu. 24. 23, Deu. 4. 42, Jos. 14. 11, Jud. 9. 2, 1 S. 16. 16, 2 S. 18. 29, Is. 5. 24, Jer. 21. 1, Ez. 17. 10, Ps. 51. 2; 56. 1; 76. 10; 142. 4, Pr. 1. 27; 25. 8, Job 34. 22.

(b) The inf. cons. puts its *obj.* in the same case as the verb does from which it is derived, *i.e.* acc. or *gen.* through

a prep. 1 S. 19. 1 לְהַמִּית אֶת־דָּוִד *to kill David*; Deu. 10. 15 לְאַהֲבָה אֹתָם *to love them*; Nu. 22. 11 לְהִלָּחֵם בּוֹ *to fight with him*. Gen. 2. 4, Deu. 2. 7, 1 K. 12. 15; 15. 4, Gen. 19. 16, Deu. 30. 20, Is. 7. 1. The inf. may take two acc. like its verb, Gen. 41. 39, Deu. 26. 19, Jos. 10. 20.

(c) When subj. and obj. are both expressed the usual order is: inf., subj., obj. Gen. 41. 39 אֶתְּרִי הוֹדִיעַ א' אִתְּךָ *after God's showing thee*; Hos. 3. 1 אֶת־בְּנֵי יִשְׂרָאֵל *as Je. loveth the children of Israel*; and with pron. as subj. Gen. 39. 18 בְּהִרְיָמִי קוֹלִי *when I lifted up my voice*. Gen. 11. 11, 13; 13. 10; 24. 30; 39. 19, 1 K. 11. 24; 13. 23, 31, Is. 10. 15, Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, 11, 13, &c.

\* Rem. 1. The subj., especially when a pron., is often omitted: (a) when clear from the context, Gen. 24. 30 בָּרָאָה *when he saw*; 19. 29, Deu. 4. 21, 1 K. 20. 12, Ez. 8. 6. (b) When general and indeterminate, Gen. 33. 10 בָּרָאָה *as one sees*; Jud. 14. 6, 1 S. 2. 13; 18. 19, 2 S. 3. 34; 7. 29, Is. 7. 22; 10. 14.—Gen. 25. 26, Ex. 27. 7; 30. 12, Nu. 9. 15; 10. 7, Zeph. 2. 2, Zech. 13. 9, Ps. 42. 4 with *v.* 11, Job 13. 9; 20. 4. The *obj.* is also often omitted, when a pron., in the same circumstances. § 73, R. 5.

Rem. 2. The subj. is probably *nom.* in some cases where it is not separated from inf. (*a* above), *e.g.* when ל of inf. has pretonic *gameç*; 2 S. 19. 20 לְשׁוֹם הַפְּלִיָּה with Gen. 16. 3 לְשֵׁבֶת אֲבָרָם, 1 K. 6. 1, Job 37. 7. The inf. hiph. of ע'ו verbs is never shortened except with suff. (Gen. 39. 18 in *c* above), *e.g.* Is. 10. 15 בְּהִנִּיף שִׁבְטִי, 14. 3 בְּיֹם הַנִּיחַ י', 2 S. 17. 14, Ps. 46. 3.

Rem. 3. The *obj.* of inf. when a *noun* is probably acc. and not gen. objecti. When inf. has suff. this is clear, Gen. 39. 18, Deu. 9. 28. Also the particle אֵת is frequently expressed, Gen. 14. 17; 25. 26, Deu. 10. 12, 15; 11. 22, 1 S. 18. 19; 25. 2, Zech. 13. 9. Cases in which neither of these marks is present are probably to be decided on the same analogy, *e.g.* Jud. 14. 6 בְּשִׁפְעַת הַנְּדִי *as one rends a kid*, Is. 10. 14 *as one gathers eggs*, 17. 5, 1 K. 18. 28, Ps. 66. 10;

101. 3, Pr. 21. 3. The fem. inf., while it may take acc., is occasionally construed with gen. *obj.*, Ps. 73. 28 קִרְבַת אֱלֹהִים *to draw near to God*, Mic. 6. 8, so Aram. Ezr. 4. 22. So the common לִקְרַאתִי *to meet me*, לִקְרַאת דָּוִד *to meet David*, &c. Similarly fem. verbal noun, Deu. 29. 22, cf. acc. Ez. 17. 9, Am. 4. 11, and with mas. noun, Nu. 10. 2 (Hab. 3. 13?). In Nu. 23. 10 *rd.* perhaps מִי סָפַר. Others consider cases like Is. 10. 14; 17. 5 as gen. *obj.* (Hitz. on Is. 1. 7).

Rem. 4. Though inf. has a distinct suff. for acc. only in 1 *p. s.* and occasionally in others, *e.g.* 3 *s.* לְהוֹצִיאֵהוּ, Jer. 39. 14, and 1 *pl.* לְהוֹצִיאֵנִי, Ex. 14. 11, there seems no reason to doubt that the suff. of all the persons are often in acc. There is no syntactical reason why inf. should govern acc. of 1 *p. s.* and not of the other persons, as it does govern acc. of all persons with אֵת. A gen. *obj.* would in many cases be awkward, as Gen. 37. 4 דִּבְרָיו *to speak to him*, and where the suff. is parallel to אֵת as 37. 22, Deu. 1. 27. In Deu. 23. 5 the suff. has verbal *n* demons. Comp. *exx.* like Nu. 22. 23, 25, Deu. 9. 28; 26. 19 with Ps. 89. 28, Jud. 13. 23; 14. 8; 18. 2, 1 S. 2. 25; 19. 11, 1 K. 20. 35, 2 K. 9. 35, Ps. 106. 23, 26, 27. When prep. ל precedes inf. the suff. is mostly acc.; also often when מן precedes, and even when other prepp. are prefixed.—Nu. 22. 13 לְתַתִּי = לְתַתֵּי, and Jer. 27. 8 תַּמִּי seems used as *trans.*, though cf. Sep.

§ 92. Usage of inf. cons.—The inf. cons. with prepp. has all the meanings of the finite forms with conjunctions. Gen. 4. 8 בְּהִיוֹתָם בַּשָּׂדֶה *when they were* in the field; 3. 19 עַד שׁוּבָה *until thou return*, cf. Hos. 10. 12 עַד יָבוֹא *until he come*, Gen. 39. 16, 2 S. 10. 5. Gen. 39. 18 בְּהִרְיָמִי קוֹלִי *when I lifted up*, cf. 37. 23 בָּא אֲשֶׁר בָּא *when he came*. The prepp. become conjunctions, taking finite forms, by combination with the rel. אֲשֶׁר, which, however, is often omitted, as Hos. 10. 12 above, 5. 15. Gen. 18. 12 with Jud. 11. 36, 2 S. 19. 31; Am. 1. 11 with 2 S. 3. 30; 2 S. 3. 11 with Is. 43. 4.—Gen. 13. 10; 34. 7; 35. 1, 1 S. 9. 15, 2 S. 12. 6, Ex. 19. 18. Cf. § 145.

§ 93. The prep. ל, which properly expresses the direction

of the action of previous verb, is used with inf. cons. in a weaker sense (like gerund in *do*) to explain the circumstances or nature of a preceding action. This gerundial (adverbial) use is very common. 1 S. 14. 33 הָעַם הַשָּׂאִים לְאָכַל עַל-הַדָּם the people are sinning *in eating* with the blood; 1 K. 5. 23 תַּעֲשֶׂה אֶת-הַפֶּצִי לָתֵת לָהֶם בֵּיתִי thou wilt do my desire *in giving* (so as to give) bread for my house. Gen. 18. 25; 19. 19; 29. 26; 34. 7; 43. 6, 1 S. 12. 17, 19; 19. 5; 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 20, 1 K. 8. 32; 14. 8; 16. 19. So the frequent לְאָמַר *saying*. Similarly in explanation of a comparison, Gen. 3. 22, 2 S. 14. 25, Is. 21. 1, Ez. 38. 16, Pr. 26. 2, 1 Chr. 12. 8.—Jos. 22. 26 is peculiar if text right. Is. 44. 14 לְכָרַת text dubious.

§ 94. The inf. with ל is also used as a circumscription in various senses of the imperfect. (a) As a periphrastic fut. Gen. 15. 12 לְבֹא הַשָּׁמֶשׁ וַיְהִי and it was, *the sun was about to set*, Jos. 2. 5. Is. 38. 20 לְהוֹשִׁיעַנִי ' *Je. is (ready, about) to save me*. Is. 10. 32, Jer. 51. 49, Ps. 25. 14; 49. 15, Pr. 19. 8, Ecc. 3. 15, 1 Chr. 9. 25.—In 1 S. 14. 21 *rd.* קָבְבוּ גַם-הֵמָּה *they also turned to be*. (b) As a gerundive, in the sense of *is to be, must be, ought to be*. 2 K. 4. 13 מָה לְעֲשׂוֹת לָךְ הַיּוֹם לְדַבֵּר לָךְ *what is to be done for thee? should one speak for thee to the king?* 2 K. 13. 19 לְהַכּוֹת הַמֶּלֶךְ אֹשֶׁשׁ *percutiendum erat*. Is. 5. 4, Hos. 9. 13, Ps. 32. 9; 49. 15, Job 30. 6, 2 S. 4. 10. Or in the sense of *can be*, Jud. 1. 19, 2 S. 14. 19 (אִשׁ = יֵשׁ).—The consn. in Gen. 15. 12, Jos. 2. 5 appears to be as 1 S. 7. 10, 2 S. 2. 24, 1 K. 20. 40, 2 K. 2. 11, and often, the vb. *was* being understood.

§ 95. The *negative* inf. is formed—(a) Usually by particle צוֹיִתִּיךָ לְבַלְתִּי אֲכַל-מִמֶּנּוּ with ל, as Gen. 3. 11 I commanded thee *not to eat of it*, Deu. 4. 21, 1 K. 11. 10. This particle negatives inf. in its various uses, *e.g.* when it expresses purpose, Gen. 4. 15; 38. 9, and frequently in its

gerundial or explicative sense, Gen. 19. 21, Ex. 8. 25, Deu. 3. 3; 8. 11; 17. 12, Jos. 5. 6, Jud. 2. 23; 8. 1, Jer. 16. 12; 17. 23, 24, 27.

(b) The inf. as periphrastic fut. or gerundive (§ 94) is negated by לֹא לְהַזְכִּיר or לֹא אֵין. Am. 6. 10 לֹא לְהַזְכִּיר בְּשֵׁם י' the name of Je. *must not be mentioned*; Jud. 1. 19 (could not dispossess), 1 Chr. 5. 1. Est. 4. 2 פִּי אֵין לְבוֹא אֶל-הַשַּׁעַר the gate *must not be gone to*. Ezr. 9. 15, 2 Chr. 5. 11; 20. 6, 17; 22. 9, Est. 8. 8, Ps. 40. 6, Ecc. 3. 14. There seems no difference in sense between לֹא לְ and לֹא אֵין, though the latter is common in the later style; cf. 1 Chr. 15. 2 with 23. 26. Jer. 4. 11 does not belong here.

§ 96. In the progress of the discourse, when new clauses are added with *and*, the inf. is very generally changed into the finite construction. Gen. 39. 18 בְּהִרְיָמִי קוֹלִי וַאֲקָרָא lifted up my voice *and cried*; 2 K. 18. 32 עַד בָּאִי וְלָקַחְתִּי אֹתְכֶם till I come *and take you*. Gen. 27. 45, Jud. 6. 18, 1 S. 24. 12, Is. 5. 24; 10. 2; 13. 9; 30. 12, 26; 45. 1, Am. 1. 9, 11, Ps. 104. 14, 15. This resolution is necessary with a neg. clause, Am. 1. 9. Cf. Rem. 2.

Rem. 1. The pleonastic neg. לְבַלְתִּי (§ 95) occurs 2 K. 23. 10 (cf. לֹא לְמַעַן Ez. 21. 20), and מִבְּלַתִּי Nu. 14. 16 *because Je. was not able*.—The inf. is sometimes negated by prep. מִן *away from*, as Is. 5. 6 מִן-הַמָּטִיר command *not to rain*. So after *to swear* Is. 54. 9, cf. Deu. 4. 21, and *to beware* Gen. 31. 29 (cf. *v.* 24), 2 K. 6. 9. Occasionally a periphrasis of לֹא אָמַר *saying* and direct speech is employed, Gen. 3. 11 with *v.* 17, Am. 2. 12.

Rem. 2. The finite tense consecutive to the inf. (§ 96) will show the *nuances* of time, relation, &c., in which the inf. was used. Thus Gen. 39. 18, 1 S. 24. 12, the inf. referred to a past act; 2 K. 18. 32, Jud. 6. 18 to a future one, and Am. 1. 11 to a frequentative action. Loose constructions occasionally arise in the process of resolution, *e.g.* Hos. 9. 7 עוֹנֵד וְרַבָּה *i.e.* וְעַל-אֲשֶׁר רַבָּה *and because . . . is great*;



so Jer. 30. 14, 15. So perhaps 1 S. 4. 19 וַיָּמָת . . . אֶל-הַלֵּקָח, *i.e.* וַיָּמָת (עַל)-אֶל-אִשֶּׁר כָּתָה and regarding the fact that he was dead.

Rem. 3. Sometimes, esp. in later style, the inf. with suff. appears used for finite form, Job 9. 27 אִם אָמַרְי *if I think* (my thought be). Jer. 9. 5, Zeph. 3. 20, Dan. 11. 1. Comp. also the consn. Ex. 9. 18, 2 S. 19. 25.

Rem. 4. The inf. cons. with *and* is used, particularly in later style, in continuation of a preceding finite or other form (cf. inf. abs. § 88). Several times וַיֵּלֶחַח, Ex. 32. 29, Jer. 17. 10; 19. 12, Dan. 12. 11. Originally and in the older passages the inf. stood perhaps under the influence of a *will* or *purpose* implicitly contained in preceding clause, but in many cases this cannot any more be discovered; the inf. is merely a shorter way of indicating the action. Am. 8. 4, Hos. 12. 3 (Sep. wants *and*), 1 S. 8. 12, Jer. 44. 19, Ez. 13. 22, Is. 44. 28, Lev. 10. 10, 11, Neh. 8. 13, Ps. 104. 21, Job 34. 8, 1 Chr. 6. 34; 10. 13, 2 Chr. 7. 17; 8. 13, Ecc. 9. 1, Dan. 2. 16, 18. In Gen. 42. 25 *and to restore* is under "commanded," the preceding clause being brachylogy usual with "command." Prep. omitted 1 Chr. 21. 24, cf. 2 S. 24. 24.

Rem. 5. Though the *pass.* inf. is quite common the act. is often used where *pass.* might be expected. Gen. 4. 13, Ex. 19. 13, 1 S. 18. 19, Is. 18. 3, Hos. 10. 10, Jer. 6. 15; 25. 34; 41. 4, Hag. 2. 15, Ps. 42. 4; 67. 3, Job 20. 4, Ecc. 3. 2.

*Obs.*—In composition, if doubt arise, it is safe to use prep. ל before inf., as the bare inf. being a noun can be governed properly only by a trans. verb. The prep. must be used: 1. After verbs expressing *purpose* and verbs of motion, Gen. 2. 15, Ex. 3. 4. 2. After a nominal sent., pos. or neg., Gen. 2. 5; 24. 25. 3. After an adj., Gen. 19. 20, Is. 5. 22 (Job 3. 8 a rare exception). 4. After a noun, Hos. 8. 11; 10. 12, Is. 5. 22, unless the inf. be gen., Gen. 29. 7. Such verbs, however, as יָבִיל *to be able*, מָאָז *to refuse*, are trans. in Heb. and may take bare inf., Deu. 1. 9, Hos. 8. 5, Is. 1. 13, Nu. 22. 14, Jer. 3. 3; so נָלְאָה *to be weary*, Is. 1. 14, Jer. 15. 6.

## THE NOMEN AGENTIS OR PARTICIPLE

§ 97. The ptcp. or *nomen agentis* partakes of the nature both of the noun (adj.) and the verb. It presents the person or subj. in the continuous exercise or exhibition of the action or condition denoted by the verb. The *pass.* ptcp. describes the subj. as having the action continuously exercised upon him, or at least differs from the adj. in presenting the state of the subj. as the result of an action.

Rem. 1. The ptcp. carries the notion of action, operation, like the verb, while the quality expressed by the adj. inheres in the subj. as a mere motionless characteristic. On the other hand the ptcp. differs from the impf. in that the continuousness of the impf. is not unbroken, but mere repetition of the action. The ptcp. is a line, the impf. a succession of points.

It is but natural, however, that act. ptcps. expressing conditions or operations which are habitual should come to be used as nouns, as אהב *friend*, איב *enemy*, שפט *judge*, שמר *watchman*, חזה *seer*, &c., and that pass. ptcps. should in usage become adjectives. The ptcp. *niph.* in particular has the sense of the Lat. gerundive and adj. in *bilis*, as נורא *to be feared*, terrible, נחשב *æstimandus*, נחמד *desirable*, נחעב *detestable*, נכבד *honourable*. Occasionally ptcp. *Pu.*, מהלל *laudandus*, Ps. 96. 4. Possibly Kal, Ps. 137. 8 (some point שדוד). Jer. 4. 30, Is. 23. 12, are real or imagined pasts. See Is. 2. 22, Ps. 18. 4; 19. 11; 22. 32; 76. 8; 102. 19, Job 15. 16. In like manner the difference between ptcp. and impf. is often scarcely discernible in usage. Gen. 2. 10, Ex. 13. 15, Lev. 11. 47, Nu. 24. 4, 16. Cf. Jud. 4. 22 with 2 K. 6. 19.

§ 98. Construction of ptcp.—The ptcp. is construed—  
(a) Verbally, taking the government of its verb, *acc.* or *prep.*  
Gen. 32. 12 ירא אנכי אתו *I fear him*; 25. 28 רבקה אהבת *Reb. loved Jacob*. Gen. 27. 8; 37. 7, 16; 40. 8, 17; 41. 9; 42. 29, 1 S. 11. 3, 2 S. 14. 18, 1 K. 18. 3, Am. 5. 8, 9, 18.

With prep. Gen. 16. 13; 26. 11, 1 S. 17. 19; 23. 1, 2 S. 23. 3, Ps. 89. 10. The ptcp. may take any acc. taken by its verb; Deu. 6. 11 **כָּל־טוֹב מִלְּאִים** *full of every good*, Am. 2. 13; cogn. acc. 1 K. 1. 40; or two acc., 2 S. 1. 24 **הַמְּלִבְשָׁךְם שָׁנִי** *who clothed you with crimson*. Zeph. 1. 9.

(b) Or, nominally, being in cons. with following gen. Gen. 3. 5 **יָדָעִי טוֹב וְרָע** *knowing good and evil*; Hos. 2. 7 **נָתַנִּי לַחֲמִי וּמִימֵי** *who give my bread and water*. This consn. is very common: the *act.* ptcp. of verbs governing a direct obj. take this obj. in gen.; and the *pass.* ptcp. of such verbs take the subj. of the verbs in the gen. Gen. 22. 12 **יִדְעָתָי** *thou fearest God*; Hos. 3. 1 **אִשָּׁה אֲהַבְתָּ רַע** *a woman loved by a paramour*. Gen. 19. 14, 25, Ex. 15. 14; 23. 31, Jud. 1. 19; 5. 6, 2 S. 4. 6; 6. 13, 1 K. 2. 7; 12. 21, Is. 5. 18, Hos. 6. 8. So ptcp. of other act. conjugations, Is. 5. 8; 19. 8, 9, 10; 28. 6; 29. 21, Jer. 23. 30, 32, Hos. 5. 10; 11. 4, Ps. 19. 8, 9; cf. 136. 4-7. *Pass.* ptcp., Gen. 24. 31 *blessed by Je.*, 2 S. 5. 8 *hated by*, Is. 53. 4, Job 14. 1. Frequently the *cause* or *instrument* takes the place of the subj., Is. 1. 7 **אֵשׁ שָׂרְפוֹת** *burnt with fire*. Gen. 20. 3; 41. 6, Deu. 32. 24, Is. 14. 19; 22. 2; 28. 1 *stricken down with wine*, Jer. 18. 21, Hos. 4. 17.

(c) In like manner suff. to ptcp. may be *acc.* or *gen.* Deu. 8. 16 **מִן הַמַּאֲכָלָה** *who fed thee with manna*. Deu. 8. 5 (*n* demons.); 13. 6, 11; 20. 1, Is. 9. 12; 10. 20; 47. 10; 63. 11, Jer. 9. 14 (cf. 23. 15), Ps. 18. 33; 81. 11, Job 31. 15; 40. 19. Often in *gen.*; Gen. 27. 29 **מְבַרְכֵיךָ** *they who bless thee* (thy blessers), 4. 14, Ex. 20. 5, 6, 1 S. 2. 30, Is. 50. 8, Ps. 7. 5; 55. 13, Job 7. 8.

Rem. 1. The mixed consn., gen. and acc. (for 2 acc.), Am. 4. 13 is curious.—The verbs **בָּא** *to go into* and **יָצָא** *to come out of*, may be consd. with acc. (Gen. 44. 4, Deu. 14. 22, 2 K. 20. 4, Lam. 1. 10, Ps. 100. 4), and so their ptcp. with gen. Gen. 9. 10; 23. 10, 18; 34. 24; 46. 26,

Ex. 1. 5, Jud. 8. 30. Similarly other kinds of acc., as that of *direction*, Is. 38. 18 ירד-יבור *gone down to the pit*, 1 Chr. 12. 33, 36, or of *respect*, Is. 1. 30 fading *in its leaf*. In poetry this brief forcible consn. of gen. represents prose consn. with prep.; Ps. 88. 6 *lying in the grave*, though cf. 57. 5; Mic. 2. 8, Is. 22. 2. Particularity with suff., Ps. 18. 40 קָמִי *those rising up against me*, cf. Ps. 3. 2. Deu. 33. 11, Is. 22. 3, Ps. 53. 6; 73. 27; 74. 23; 102. 9, Pr. 2. 19. Is. 29. 7 *who war against her and her stronghold* is so condensed as to be suspicious.

The pass. ptcp. also may retain the acc. of act. verb, as 1 S. 2. 18 חָגַר אֶפְדֹּד *girt with an ephod*, Jud. 18. 11, Ez. 9. 2, 3, Neh. 4. 12; or take the gen., Is. 3. 3; 51. 21, Joel 1. 8, Ez. 9. 11. Particularly when the gen. explains the extent of application of ptcp. (§ 24 d). Is. 3. 3. נִשְׂאָה פָּנִים *he whose face is lifted up*. Ps. 32. 1 בָּסִי הַטָּאָה *he whose sin is covered*. 2 S. 13. 31, Is. 33. 24, Pr. 14. 2. In 2 S. 15. 32 קָרַע בְּתַנְתּוֹ פ' is not acc. of respect, *as to his garment*, but subj. to *rent*, though *rent* at the same time is acc. of condition to Hushai. On the other hand Jud. 1. 7 is rather an ordinary circ. cl., *cut off* being pred. to *thumbs*, although elsewhere this word is fem. Ex. 12. 11, Jer. 30. 6.

§ 99. The ptcp. becomes virtually a noun, as Is. 19. 20 מוֹשִׁיעַ one who saves, *a saviour*, and may be subj. or obj. of a sentence. When in apposition with a noun it is used as an adj., Deu. 4. 24 אִשׁ אֹכְלָה *a devouring fire*, 4. 34 *an outstretched arm*, Gen. 22. 13, Is. 18. 2, 5, Jud. 1. 24 וַיִּרְאוּ אִישׁ יֵצֵא they saw *a man coming out*. Am. 5. 3, Is. 2. 13; 10. 22. With the art. the ptcp. may like the adj. designate a class. Am. 5. 13, Is. 14. 8; 28. 16, Mic. 4. 6; or have the sense of *he who . . . , whoever*, Gen. 26. 11 הַנֹּגֵעַ בְּאִישׁ הַזֶּה *whoever touches*, 2 S. 14. 10; and so with gen., Gen. 9. 6, Ex. 21. 12, 15, 16.

When in appos. with a preceding def. subj. the ptcp. with art. has the meaning very much of a relative clause. Gen. 12. 7 הַנִּרְאָה אֵלָיו *Je. who had appeared to him*; 1 S.

1. 26 אֲנִי הָאִשָּׁה הַנִּצְּבָת I am the woman *who stood*, cf. Jud. 16. 24. This usage is very common: Gen. 13. 5; 27. 33; 35. 3; 43. 12, 18; 48. 15, 16, Ex. 11. 5, Jud. 8. 34, 1 S. 4. 8, 2 S. 1. 24, 2 K. 22. 18, Is. 8. 6, 17, 18; 9. 1, Am. 4. 1; 5. 3, Mic. 3. 2, 3, 5. With pass. ptcp., Nu. 21. 8, Jud. 6. 28 the altar *that had been built*, 20. 4 the woman *who was murdered*, 1 K. 18. 30, Ps. 79. 10.—Ps. 19. 11 resumes *v.* 10 (they) *which are more desirable*. Ps. 18. 33; 49. 7.

Rem. 1. Of course the ptcp. with art. is not to be used as an ordinary rel. clause after an *indef.* noun, only after def. words as pron., proper name, or other defined word. In later style exceptions occur, Jer. 27. 3; 46. 16, Ez. 2. 3; 14. 22, Ps. 119. 21, Dan. 9. 26, though in most of these cases the preceding word is really def. though formally undetermined. In other cases the preceding subj. receives a certain definiteness from being connected with *all*, Gen. 1. 21, 28, or a numeral, Jud. 16. 27, cf. 1 S. 25. 10, or from standing in a comparison, Pr. 26. 18 (Ps. 62. 4 *rd.* perhaps 'לְיָהוָה), or from being described by an adj., Is. 65. 2, cf. *v.* 3.

Rem. 2. When another ptcp. follows one with art. it is often without art., as predicate, Is. 5. 20, Am. 6. 4, Job 5. 10. But in vigorous speech the clauses are made parallel and the art. used, Is. 40. 22, 23, Mic. 3. 5. Occasionally the rel. pron. takes the place of the art. as more distinct, Deu. 1. 4, Jer. 38. 16, Ez. 9. 2, Ps. 115. 8. Both are used 1 K. 12. 8; 21. 11.

Rem. 3. When the ptcp. as direct pred. receives the art. it becomes coextensive with the subj. Gen. 2. 11 it is *that which goeth round*. 45. 12 my mouth is *that which speaketh*. Deu. 3. 21 thine eyes were *they which saw*. Gen. 42. 6, Deu. 3. 22, 1 S. 4. 16, Is. 14. 27.

§ 100. (a) The ptcp. as pred., unlike the finite verb, does *not* contain the subj., which must be expressed. 1 S. 19. 11 מִחָר אָתָּה מוֹמָת to-morrow thou shalt be slain; Gen. 38. 25 הִמָּה עֹלִים היא מוֹצֵאת she was brought forth; 1 S. 9. 11 הִמָּה עֹלִים they were going up. The pron., however, is often omitted if

the subj. has just been mentioned, particularly after הִנֵּה Gen. 24. 30 וַיָּבֹא אֶל-הָאִישׁ וְהִנֵּה עֹמֵד he came to the man, *and, behold, he was standing.* Gen. 37. 15; 38. 24, 41. 1, 1 S. 30. 3, 16, Am. 7. 1, Is. 29. 8. With גם Gen. 32. 7. Occasionally the pron. is omitted anomalously, Jos. 8. 6, Ps. 22. 29 (*he is ruler*), Neh. 9. 3, 5. In 1 S. 6. 3 אַתָּם has probably dropped out. On ptcp. with general subj. § 108 c.

(b) Owing to the emphasis thrown by the idea and usage of ptcp. on the subj. the latter usually precedes. Gen. 2. 10 וַיָּצֵא וְנָהָר and a river went forth; 24. 21 וְהָאִישׁ מִשְׁתַּאֲהָ לָּהּ and the man gazed at her, 24. 13, 37 (see above in a). This order is usual with הִנֵּה and in rel. clauses, 18. 17; 24. 37; 28. 20; 31. 43. On the other hand, if emphasis fall on ptcp., and in clauses beginning with כִּי *for, that*, אִם *if*, which give prominence to the pred., the ptcp. precedes the subj. Gen. 30. 1 וְאִם אֵין מֵתָה אֲנֹכִי and if not *I die*; 3. 5 כִּי יָדַע א' *for God knoweth*, 15. 14; 19. 13; 25. 30; 29. 9; 32. 12; 41. 32. With interrog., Gen. 4. 9; 18. 17, Nu. 11. 29. After אֲדָּ Jud. 3. 24.

(c) The ptcp. does not indicate time, its colour in this respect being taken from the connection in which it stands. The pass. ptcp. refers chiefly to the past, though not exclusively. The act. ptcp. is mainly descriptive of something present, *i.e.* either actually present to the speaker, or present to him in idea, as the *fut. instans*; or, as in circumst. clauses, present to the main action spoken of, though this may be in the past. Gen. 4. 10 דָּמֵי אָחִיךָ צֹעֲקִים thy brother's *blood crieth*. Gen. 19. 13, 14 כִּי מִשְׁחִיתִים אֲנַחְנִי *for we are destroying* (going to des.). 1 S. 1. 12 she *prayed* long וְעֲלִי שֹׁמֵר אֶת-פִּיהָ *Eli watching her mouth*. See *exx.* in Rem. 1.

(d) Owing to its nominal character the ptcp. is negated by אֵין. The place of the neg. varies. Gen. 41. 8 אֵין פֹּתֵר

אתם *there was none interpreting* them; cf. different order, 40. 8; 41. 15. Ex. 5. 16 תָּבֵן אֵין נָתַן *straw is not given*; 1 K. 6. 18 אֵין אָבֵן נִרְאָה *no stone was seen*. The אֵין often takes suff. of subj., Gen. 43. 5 אַם אֵינָה מְשַׁלַּח *if thou dost not let go*, Ex. 5. 10.—Gen. 20. 7; 39. 23; 41. 24, Ex. 3. 2, Deu. 4. 22; 22. 27, Jos. 6. 1, Jud. 3. 25, 1 S. 3. 1; 22. 8; 26. 12, 1 K. 6. 18, Hos. 5. 14, Am. 5. 2, 6, Is. 5. 27; 17. 2; 22. 22, Jer. 9. 21. See Rem. 3.

(e) When additional clauses are joined by *and* to a participial consn. the *finite* tense is usually employed, though not always. Gen. 35. 3 לְאֵל הֶעֱנָה אֶתִּי וַיְהִי עִמָּדִי the God *who answered me, and was with me*; 27. 33 הֶצֵד צִיד וַיָּבֵא *who hunted venison, and brought it*. In animated speech without *and*, Is. 5. 8 מִגֵּיעֵי בֵית בְּבֵית שָׂדֵה בְּשָׂדֵה וַיִּקְרִיבוּ *who join house to house, lay field to field*; cf. Ps. 147. 14–16.—Gen. 7. 4; 17. 19; 48. 4, Deu. 4. 22, 1 S. 2. 6, 8, 31; 2 S. 20. 12, Is. 5. 23; 14. 17; 29. 21; 30. 2; 31. 1; 44. 25, 26; 48. 1, Am. 5. 7–12, Hos. 2. 16, Jer. 13. 10, Ps. 18. 33. This change to the finite is *necessary* when the additional clause is neg. See Rem. 4.

(f) As the ptc. presents the subj. as in the continuous exercise of the action, it is greatly employed in describing scenes of a striking kind and in circumstantial clauses (§ 138 b). Much of the picturesqueness of prose historical writing is due to it. So it is used with such particles as הִנֵּה *behold*, עוֹד *still*, *while*. 1 K. 22. 10 the kings וְשֹׁבִים אִישׁ עַל־כִּסְאוֹ מְלֻבָּשִׁים בְּגָדִים וְכָל־הַנְּבִיאִים מִתְנַבְּאִים *were sitting, each on his throne, clothed in their robes, and all the prophets were prophesying* before them; so v. 12, 19. 2 S. 15. 30 David's ascent of Olivet, cf. v. 18, 23. Is. 6. 2, 2 S. 12. 19, 1 S. 9. 11, 14, 27, Is. 5. 28, Nu. 11. 27, 1 K. 12. 6, 2 K. 2. 11. With הִנֵּה, Gen. 25. 32; 37. 7; 41. 1–3, 1 S. 10. 22; 12. 2, 2 K. 17. 26. With עוֹד, Gen. 18. 22, Ex. 9.

2, 17, 1 K. 1. 14, 22, 42, 2 K. 6. 33, Jer. 33. 1, Job 2. 3. So with יש and אין. Gen. 24. 42, 49; 43. 4, Deu. 29. 14, Jud. 6. 36.

Rem. 1. The *time* of ptcp., § 100 c. Exx. of present time: Gen. 16. 8; 19. 15; 32. 12; 37. 16; 43. 18, Deu. 4. 1; 12. 8 and often, Jud. 7. 10; 18. 3, 1 S. 14. 11, Is. 1. 7, Hos. 3. 1. Exx. of past time: Gen. 39. 23 ואשר הוא עשה מאלה ' whatever *he did* Je. prospered, 37. 7, 15; 40. 6; 41. 1 seq., Ex. 18. 5, 14, Deu. 4. 12, Jud. 4. 22; 14. 4; 19. 27, 1 S. 2. 13; 9. 11, 1 K. 3. 2; 4. 20; 6. 27, 2 K. 13. 21. Exx. of fut. time: Gen. 7. 4; 17. 19; 41. 25, 28; 49. 29, Ex. 33. 15, Jud. 11. 9; 15. 3, 1 S. 20. 36, 2 S. 12. 23, 2 K. 4. 16, Ps. 22. 32; 102. 19. Particularly with הנה, as Gen. 15. 3; 20. 3; 24. 13; 1 S. 3. 11, 1 K. 13. 2, Is. 3. 1; 7. 14, Am. 8. 11. The ptcp. with הנה however may refer to any time, as pres., Gen. 38, 24 *is with child*, Jud. 9. 36, 1 S. 10. 22, 1 K. 1. 25; 17. 12; or past, Gen. 40. 6; 41. 1, Am. 7. 1, 4, 7.

The ptcp., even without copula, may express *juss.* sense; Gen. 3. 14 ארוך אתה cursed be thou, 9. 26; 24. 27, 1 K. 2. 45, cf. Ru. 2. 19.

Rem. 2. In order to express more distinctly the idea of *duration*, particularly in past, the verb היה is sometimes used with the ptcp., generally in a clause of circumstance explicative of the main narrative, but also in an independent statement. Gen. 37. 2 יוסף היה רעהו Jos. *was herding*; Jud. 16. 21 ויהי טוחן בבית האסורים *and he continued to grind*; 1 S. 2 11 ויהפער היה משרת אתי *and the child continued to minister*. Gen. 4. 17; 39. 22, Ex. 3. 1, Deu. 9. 7, 22, 24; 28. 29, Jud. 1. 7, 1 S. 18. 29, 2 S. 3. 6, 17; 7. 6, 2 K. 17. 25-41; 18. 4, Is. 2. 2; 59. 2, Jer. 26. 18, 20, Hos. 9. 17, Ps. 122. 2, Job 1. 14. Pass. ptcp. Lev. 13. 45, 1 K. 22. 35, Jer. 14. 16; 36. 30, Zech. 3. 3. The usage is more common in the later style (occurring sometimes with almost no emphasis). Neh. 1. 4; 2. 13. 15, 1 Chr. 6. 17; 18. 14, 2 Chr. 30. 10; 36. 16, Est. 2. 15, Dan. 1. 16; 5. 19; 10. 9.

Rem. 3. The ptcp. is negated by לא when an attributive. Jer. 2. 2 ארץ לא זרועה a land *not sown* (cf. adj. Deu. 32. 6,



Hos. 13. 13). Jer. 18. 15, Hab. 1. 14 in an attributive clause, Job 29. 12. Cf. 2 S. 1. 21, Hos. 7. 8. But also in a number of cases when *pred.*, perhaps with rather more force, Nu. 35. 23 (= Deu. 19. 4), Deu. 28. 61, 2 S. 3. 34, Jer. 4. 22, Ez. 4. 14; 22. 24, Zeph. 3. 5, Ps. 38. 15, Job 12. 3. The double neg. of 1 K. 10. 21 is wanting in 2 Chr. 9. 20. The accents show Is. 62. 12, Jer. 6. 8, to be perf.; Zeph. 2. 1 is doubtful. Of course לא רָחַמָה Hos. 1. 6, לא נָחַמָה Is. 54. 11, are perfs.

Rem. 4. The finite tense which *continues* ptc. will vary (cf. on inf. § 96, R. 2). It will be *vav conv. impf.* when ptc. referred to a fact in the past, Gen. 27. 33; 35. 3, or was equivalent to a perf. of experience, Am. 5. 7, 8; 9. 5. It will be simple impf. or *vav conv. perf.* when ptc. expressed a thing habitual or general, 2 S. 20. 12, Am. 8. 14, Is. 5. 8, Mic. 3. 5, 9, or referred to fut., 1 K. 13. 2, 3.

Rem. 5. The ptc. being of weaker force than finite tense, sometimes uses prep. ל instead of acc. to convey the action, particularly when obj. precedes. Is. 11. 9 לַיָּם מְכַסִּים לְיָם waters *covering the sea*. Nu. 10. 25, Deu. 4. 42, Am. 6. 3 (cf. Is. 66. 5), Is. 14. 2. So in Ar., *limâlihi fîha muhîna*, making light of his money, Am. b. Kelth. v. 4.

Rem. 6. The ptc. without subj. tends to be used in later style for 3rd pers. like finite verb. Jos. 8. 6, Neh. 6. 6; 9. 3, 5, Is. 13. 5, and in Psalms. So occasionally for inf., Jer. 2. 17 עַתְּ מוֹלִיכָהּ the time when he led thee. Gen. 38. 29 (comp. Mal. 1. 7 with 8; 1. 12; 2. 17; also 2. 15). In Ez. 27. 34 *rd.* עַתְּ נִשְׁבְּרֶתָּ. Both uses are common in post-biblical Heb.

Rem. 7. The pass. ptc. appears in some cases to express a state which is the result of the subject's own action. Is. 26. 3 בְּטוּחַ *trusting*, Ps. 103. 14 זָכִיר *mindful*, Is. 53. 3 יָרֵעַ *acquainted with*. Cf. 1 S. 2. 18, Jud. 18. 11, Ez. 9. 2, 3, Song 3. 8.

SUBORDINATION OF NOUNS TO THE VERB BY MEANS  
OF PREPOSITIONS

§ 101. The action of the verb often reaches the obj. through the medium of a prep. The prepp. may be assumed to be—1. Words expressing *locality*. 2. Then they are transferred to the sphere of *time*. 3. And, finally, they are used to express relations which are intellectual or ideal.

When several words are coupled together under the regimen of the same prep. it is often repeated before each, as Hos. 2. 21 וּבְרַחֲמִים וּבְרַחֲמִים וּבְרַחֲמִים Gen. 12. 1; 40. 2, 2 S. 6. 5, Hos. 1. 7. But usage varies, Hos. 2. 20; 3. 2. Sometimes, in poetry especially, the prep. exerts its influence over a second clause without being repeated, Is. 28. 6 for לְמִשְׁיְבֵי, Job 15. 3 for וּבְמַלְאִים, Is. 30. 1 *from* my spirit, 48. 9 *for the sake of* my praise.

Certain prepp. of motion, chiefly אל and מן, are used with verbs that do not express motion, and, on the other hand, a prep. of rest such as ב may be used with a verb of motion. This *pregnant* consn., as it has been called, permits the ellipse of a verb. 1 S. 7. 8 אֶל-תִּהְרַשׁ מִמֶּנּוּ *be not silent* (turning away) *from us*. Ps. 22. 22 מִקְרָנֵי רַמִּים עֲנִיתָנִי *heard* (and delivered) *me from* the horns. 1 S. 24. 16 וַיִּשְׁפְּטֵנִי מִיַּדָּהּ, cf. 2 S. 18. 19. Is. 38. 17, Ez. 28. 16 *profane* (and cast) *thee from* the mount, Ps. 28. 1; 18. 22; 73. 27, Ezr. 2. 62.—Gen. 19. 27 אֶל-הַמָּקוֹם . . . וַיִּשְׁבֹּם *he rose early* (and went) *unto* the place, Song 7. 13. Gen. 42. 28 וַיִּתְרַדּוּ וַיִּתְרַדּוּ אִישׁ אֶל-אָחִיו *they trembled* (and looked) *unto* one another; and often with verbs of *fear*, *wonder*, &c., Gen. 43. 33, Is. 13. 8, Hos. 3. 5 *come trembling unto*, Mic. 7. 17, cf. Is. 41. 1. Ps. 89. 40 *profaned* (and cast) *to* the ground, 74. 7. Is. 14. 17, Gen. 14. 3. With 1 S. 21. 3 (if text יודעתי right) cf. Gen. 46. 28. 1 S. 13. 7 *rd. prob.* מֵאַחֲרָי *trembled from after* him

(left him from fear). So the brief language, 1 S. 15. 23, rejected thee **מִמֶּלֶךְ** *from* (being) *king*, cf. *v.* 26 **מִקְהִיּוֹת מו'**; 1 K. 15. 13 removed her **מִגְבִּירָה** *from being* queen-mother. Is. 7. 8; 17. 1, Hos. 9. 12, Jer. 48. 2, Ps. 83. 5. Ps. 55. 19 **פָּדָה בְּשָׁלוֹם** *redeemed* (so as to be) *in peace*, Ps. 23. 6? 1 S. 22. 4 **וַיִּנְחָם אֶת־פָּנָיו מִלֶּךְ מו'** *led them* (so that they were) *in the presence of* the king of Moab.

Rem. 1. The prepp. are either, (a) of rest *in*, as **ב**; (b) of motion in the direction of, as **ל**, **אל**, **עַד**; (c) of motion away from, as **מִן**; or (d) of the expression of other relations, as **עַל** *over, above, upon*, **תַּחַת** *under*, &c. In addition there are compound prepp., mostly with **אל** or **מִן** as first element. See the Lexx. Only a few points can be noticed.

(a) Prep. **ב** is either *in, within* (Ar. *fî*), or, *at, on* of contact (Ar. *bî*). Most of its uses are reducible to these two senses, *e.g.* **בַּבַּיִת** *in the house*, **בְּאֶרֶץ**, **בְּהָר** *in, on* the mountain; of time, **בַּבֶּקֶר**. Hence its use with verbs *to touch* **נָגַע**, *to cleave* **דָּבַק**, *to hold* **אָחַז**, **חָסַף**. From the sense of *in* (in the sphere of, embodied in) comes its use with pred. (*beth essentie*), as Ps. 68. 5 **בְּיָהוָה שְׁמוֹ** (in) *Jah is his name*, Ex. 18. 4 God **בְּעֵזְרִי** *is* (in) *my help*, Ps. 35. 2. And otherwise, Ex. 6. 3 I appeared **בְּאַל** *as* El shaddai, Is. 40. 10 **בְּחִזְקִי** *as* a strong one, Ps. 39. 7 *as* an image; Ps. 37. 20; 146. 5, Pr. 3. 26, Job 23. 13, Lev. 17. 11. With ptcp. the plur. is used, though ref. be to a single person, Jud. 11. 35 **בְּעֵבְרֵי** among my troublers = *my troubler*, Ps. 54. 6; 118. 7; 99. 6 *as* (being) his priests, cf. Hos. 11. 4. So other allied senses, *e.g.* where we use *with*, **בְּחֵיל** *with* a great army (in, in the element of; less naturally of contact, and so accompaniment), **בְּמִקְלִי** *with* my staff, Gen. 32. 11; so *with* of *instrument*, Mic. 4. 14 **בְּשֹׁבֵט** *with the rod*, Is. 10. 24, 34; of persons, *in, through*, Hos. 1. 7 **בְּיְהוָה** *through Je.*, Gen. 9. 6. Similar is **ב** of *price*, Gen. 30. 16, **בְּנֵי בְרָדָאִי** *for* (with) the mandrakes, *v.* 26, 33. 19; 37. 28, 1 K. 10. 29. Finally **ב** has partitive sense, Job 7. 13 *my bed* **בְּשִׁיתִי** *will bear of* (in) *my complaint*, Nu. 11. 17, Ez. 18. 20. On **ב** with obj., § 73, R. 6.

(b) Prep. **אל** expresses motion *towards*, in the direction of,

whether the goal be reached or not. Gen. 2. 19 brought them אֶל-הָאָדָם *unto* the man, 3. 19 *unto* the dust, 6. 18 *into* the ark, 19. 3, 2 S. 5. 8. Then less literally, Gen. 39. 7 lifted up her eyes אֶל-יְוֹסֵף *towards* (upon) Jos., Deu. 24. 15; Gen. 32. 31 אֶל-פְּנֵים אֶל-פְּנֵים *face to face*, Nu. 12. 8 *mouth to mouth*. So after verbs *to speak*, אֵל רִבֵּר (mostly with this verb). After verbs of speaking, in the sense of *of*, *in reference to*, Gen. 20. 2, 1 S. 1. 27; 3. 12, 2 S. 7. 19, Is. 29. 22, Ps. 2. 7. Naturally *unto* may mean *in addition to*, 1 S. 14. 34 eat אֶל-הַדָּם *with the blood*, Lev. 18. 18, 1 K. 10. 7, Lam. 3. 41, Ez. 7. 26 (עַל is more common in this sense, and the two prepp. are often confounded). The verb may give *to unto* the complexion of *hostility*, Gen. 4. 8 rose up אֶל-הָאֵל *against* Abel, Gen. 22. 12, Jud. 1. 10, Is. 2. 4; 3. 8.

Prep. ל *to* may like אֵל imply motion to, Gen. 24. 54; 27. 14, 25, 1 S. 25. 35, Is. 53. 7, Jer. 12. 15 (perhaps oftener in later style, 2 Chr. 1. 13), but oftenest expresses *direction to*, and greatly in an ideal sense. Hence with verb *to say* אָמַר; and after verbs of *speaking*, *remembering*, &c., in the sense of *in reference to*, Gen. 20. 13 אֶמְרֵי-לִי *say of me*, Ps. 3. 3; 132. 1, Jer. 2. 2, Ez. 18. 22; 33. 16, 1 K. 2. 4; 20. 7, Gen. 17. 20; 19. 21; 27. 8; 42. 9; 45. 1, Is. 5. 1. So Is. 8. 1 לְמַהֵר, though the ל is not to be translated. In particular, ל is used to introduce the indirect obj. (dat.), Jud. 1. 13 וַיִּתְּנוּ-לוֹ gave *him*, and in the various senses of the dat., Gen. 24. 29 וַיִּלְבְּקָה אָחָה R. *had a brother*, 13. 5. The so-called *dat. commodi* (or, *incomodi*, Jer. 2. 21, Mic. 2. 4, Ez. 37. 11, Ps. 137. 7), Is. 6. 8 מִי יִלְבַּדְּלֵנוּ, Jud. 1. 1, Deu. 30. 12, 13; particularly in the form of the *ethical dat.*, when the action is reflected back upon the agent and done *for* him. Mostly with imper.: Gen. 12. 1 לָךְ לָךְ *get thee*, 22. 5 שֵׁב־לָכֶם *sit you here*, 21. 16 וַתֵּשֶׁב לָהּ she *sat her down*; Deu. 1, 7, 40; 2. 3; 5. 27, Jos. 7. 10; 22. 19, 1 K. 17. 3, Is. 2. 22; 36. 9; 40. 9, Am. 2. 13; 7. 12, Ps. 120. 6; 127. 3; 123. 4. On use of ל to express second obj. after *to make*, *put*, &c., § 78, R. 5; with agent of pass., § 81; to circumscribe the gen., § 28, R. 5.—Prep. ל also expresses the norm, *according to* (perh. allied to *in ref. to*), Is. 11. 3 לְמַרְאֵה עֵינָיו *according to the sight of his eyes*, Gen. 33. 14; 13. 3, 1 S.



but then, naturally, in a *causative* sense (influence coming from), *from, because of, by*, as Gen. 48. 10 his eyes were set *מִן־קֶדֶם* *from* old age, Is. 53. 5 pierced *מִפְּשָׁעֵינוּ* *because of* our transgressions. Gen. 9. 11; 16. 10; 49. 12, Ex. 6. 9, Deu. 7. 7, 1 S. 1. 16, 1 K. 14. 4, Is. 28. 7; 40. 26, Ob. 9, 10, Hos. 11. 6. Cf. § 81.

(d) Prep. *עַל* has the meaning *above, over, upon*; e.g. locally whether of motion or rest, as Gen. 2. 5 had not rained *עַל־הָאָרֶץ* *upon* the earth, 2 K. 4. 34 he laid himself *עַל־הַיֶּלֶד* *upon* the child, Gen. 24. 30 he saw the bracelets *עַל־יְדֵי אָחֹתוֹ* *upon the hands* of his sister, Gen. 1. 20 let fowl fly *עַל־הָאָרֶץ* *above* the earth. And in a figurative sense, Gen. 16. 5 *חַמְסֵי עָלֶיךָ* my wrong be *upon thee*, 41. 33 set him *עַל־הָאָרֶץ* *over* the land, Jud. 3. 10, 1 S. 15. 17.

From these senses comes the use of *עַל* with verbs to *cover*, as *בָּפָה*, *to pity, spare* *חָמַל*, *to burden*, as Is. 1. 14 *הֵיוּ עָלַי לְטָרַח* they are *a burden upon me*, 2 S. 15. 33, Job 7. 20. So to express *obligation*, 2 S. 18. 11 *לָחַח לְךָ* *it would have lain upon me* to give thee, Gen. 30. 28, Jud. 19. 20, Pr. 7. 14. With words expressing the idea of *addition*, Gen. 31. 50 if thou take wives *עַל־בָּנֹתַי* *in addition to* my daughters, 32. 12 *אִם עַל־בָּנִים* mother *with* children, Gen. 28. 9; 48. 22, Hos. 10. 14, Am. 3. 15. Other uses of *עַל* are similar, as Jud. 9. 17 *נִלְחַם עֵלֵיכֶם* fought *for you (over, protecting)*, but also in a hostile sense *against*, Gen. 43. 18 *to fall upon*, Gen. 34. 30 to gather themselves *against*, 50. 20 plot *against*, Nu. 10. 9, Am. 7. 9, Is. 7. 5, Ps. 2. 2. From the sense *over* (being higher) comes the meaning *beside, by* after *to stand, sit, &c.* Ps. 1. 3 *עַל־פְּלִינֵי־מַיִם* *by* the rivers of water, 2 S. 9. 10 *עַל־שֻׁלְחָנִי* *at* my table (also *אֵל*), Gen. 18. 2 standing *beside him*, 16. 7; 29. 2; 41. 1; Ex. 14. 2, Is. 6. 2.

From the sense *upon* comes the use of *עַל* to express the condition, circumstances in which an action is performed, on which it rests or which underlie it. Here *עַל* seems more general than *ב* and has such meanings as *amidst, although, notwithstanding, according to, &c.* Jer. 8. 18 *עַל־יָנֹחַ* *amidst* trouble, Job 10. 7 *עַל־דַּעְתְּךָ* *though* thou knowest, Is. 53. 9 *עַל לֹא־חָמַס עָשָׂה* *notwithstanding that* he had done no evil, Job 16. 17. 2 K. 24. 3, Ps. 31. 24, Jer. 6. 14, Is. 38. 15; 60. 7.

Ps. 50. 5. So perhaps Ex. 12. 8 על־מְרִים *with* bitter herbs (the idea *in addition to* is less expressive), Nu. 9. 11.<sup>1</sup>

Prep. עִם is *with* of accompaniment. Hence the sense of *beside, near* locally, Gen. 25. 11; 35. 4, Jud. 9. 6, 1 S. 10. 2. So its use in comparisons, Job 9. 26 עִם־אֲנִיּוֹת אֲבָהּ *like* ships of reed, Ps. 88. 5; and in the sense *as well as*, 1 Chr. 25. 8, Ecc. 2. 16. In 1 S. 16. 12; 17. 42 עִם seems used adverbially, unless יָפֵה be employed nominally, *along with beauty* of eyes.

Prep. תַּחַת *under, below*; hence such usage as 1 S. 14. 9 תַּחְתֵּינוּ *where we stand* (under us), on the spot, Jos. 5. 8; 6. 5, Jud. 7. 21, 2 S. 2, 23. So the sense *instead*; and הֵאֲשֵׁר *because*.

The particle כִּי *like, as*, is either a prep. or an undeveloped noun, *instar*. If the latter, it may be in appos. with a previous word or in acc. of condition. If a prep. it is used in a pregnant sense; in either case it governs the gen. Ps. 95. 8 harden not your hearts כִּי־מְרִיבָה *as at* M., 83. 10 do to them כִּי־סִרָא *as to* S., Gen. 34. 31 הַכֹּזֵנָה *as with* a harlot? Hos. 2. 5 הַיּוֹמָה *as on* the day. Is. 1. 25; 5. 17; 10. 26; 23. 15; 28. 21; 51. 9, Hos. 2. 17; 9. 9; 12. 10, Am. 9. 11, Ps. 35. 14, Job 28. 5; 29. 2.

The first element of the compound prepp. is chiefly מִן or מֵ. The form מִפְּנֵי in earlier writings is mostly a prep. *incommodi*; in later style it is used for *because of, for the sake of*, even in a favourable sense.

<sup>1</sup> From the sense *upon* comes the general use of עַל as a prep. *incommodi*, opposed to לְ. Particularly in the expression of feelings and mental states with such words as *heart, soul, spirit*, the prep. suggests the pressure *upon* the subject of the feeling or state. Jer. 8. 18 עָלַי לִבִּי רָדָי *my heart is sick upon me*, Hos. 11. 8, Lam. 3. 20, Job 10 1; 14. 22; 30. 16, Ps. 42. 6, 7, 12; 43. 5; 131. 2; 142. 4; 143. 4, Jon. 2. 8. In translation *in* must often be used, and sometimes the prep. is almost untranslatable, e.g. Gen. 48. 7 Rachel *died* עָלַי, cf. Nu. 11. 13, Jud. 14. 16. The primary sense may become weakened in usage, Neh. 5. 7.

## SYNTAX OF THE SENTENCE

## THE SENTENCE ITSELF

§ 102. A sent. consists of a subj. and pred. The subj. may be expressed separately, as **אֲנִי יוֹסֵף** *I am Jos.*, or in the case of the verbal sent. contained in the form, as **מְכַרְתֶּם** *ye sold.* Besides the mere subj. and pred. sentences usually contain additional elements, such as an obj. under the regimen of the pred., or some amplifications descriptive either of subj. or pred.

The subj. may be a pron., or a noun, or anything equivalent to a noun as an adj. or adverb used nominally, or a clause. Gen. 39. 9 **אַתָּה אִשְׁתּוֹ** *thou art his wife*; 3. 3 **אָמַר** *God has said*; 2. 18 **לֹא טוֹב הֵייוֹת הָאָדָם לְבַדּוֹ** *that man be alone is not good*. So 2 K. 9. 33 **וַיִּזּוּ מִדָּמָהּ** *some of her blood spirted*. Ex. 16. 27, 2 S. 1. 4; 11. 17, 2 K. 10. 10.

The pred. may be a pron., Jud. 9. 28 **מִי אַתָּה** *who is Shechem?* A noun, Gen. 39. 9 (above), an adj. or ptcp., Gen. 2. 10 **יָצָא נָהָר** *a river went out*, Is. 6. 3 **קְדוֹשׁ יְהוָה** *holy is Je.*; a finite verb, Gen. 3. 3 (above); or an adverbial or prepositional phrase, Gen. 2. 12 **שָׁם הַבְּדֵלַח** *there is bdolach*; Ps. 11. 4 **בַּשָּׁמַיִם נִסְאוֹ** *in heaven is his throne*. The noun as pred. is very common, because the adj. is little developed in the earlier stages of the Shemitic languages. See Nom. Appos. § 29 e.

The simple sent. is either nominal or verbal. A verbal sent. is one whose pred. is a *finite* verb. All other sentences



are nominal.—This definition, though only partially exact, is sufficient.

### 1. *The Nominal Sentence*

§ 103. In the nominal sent., which expresses a constant and enduring condition, the subj. is the most prominent element. In general the emphatic word is placed first, hence in this sent. the order is—subj., pred. The subj. in the nominal sent. is very generally definite, but not always. Gen. 2. 12 וְנֶהְבֵּה הָאָרֶץ הַהִיא טוֹב *and the gold of that land is good*; 13. 13 וְאֲנָשֵׁי סְדֹם רָעִים *and the men of S. were wicked*; 2. 10 וְנָהָר יֵצֵא *and a river went forth*; 29. 17 וְעֵינֵי לְאָה רַכּוֹת *the eyes of L. were tender*, 12. 6; 13. 7. Esp. after הִנֵּה, and when ptc. is pred., 16. 6 וְשִׁפְחָתְךָ בְּיַדְךָ *thy maid is in thy hand*. 20. 15, 16; 27. 42; 28. 12; 41. 3, 5, 6; 48. 1.

§ 104. This order is not invariable. There is considerable freedom in the disposition of the parts of the sent., and emphasis on the pred. may give it the first place. (a) A simple adj. when pred. often stands first, particularly if the subj. be also simple, though when the subj. is of some heaviness the adj. may be put at the end, cf. Gen. 2. 12 above. Jer. 12. 1 צְדִיק אַתָּה יְהוָה *righteous art thou, Je.* Particularly if the adj. be in the comparative, 1 S. 24. 18 כְּמִנִּי אַתָּה צְדִיק *thou art more righteous than I*; Gen. 29. 19 טוֹב תִּתֵּנִי אֵלֶיךָ לְאִשׁ *it is better that I give her to thee*. Gen. 4. 13, Hos. 13. 12, Ps. 111. 2, 4; 116. 5; 118. 8, 9.

(b) In dependent sentences, e.g. after כִּי *that, for*, the pred. has a certain emphasis, and stands first. Gen. 3. 5 כִּי יָדַע אֱלֹהִים *for God knows*, 3. 6; 22. 12. Esp. if subj. be a pron.; 3. 10 כִּי עָרִים אָנֹכִי *because I was naked*; 3. 19; 20. 7; 25. 30; 29. 9; 42. 33, Am. 7. 13. And in general the pronominal subj. is without emphasis, 24. 34; 26. 9; 30. 1, Am. 7. 14; though, of course, it may be otherwise, as when

God speaks solemnly of Himself, Gen. 15. 1; 26. 24; 28. 13. After nom. *pendens* the resumptive pron. with indef. pred. is unemphatic; 34. 21; 40. 12, 18; 41. 25-27; 42. 11.

(c) Naturally the pred. is emphatic in interrogative sentences of whatever kind. Gen. 24. 65 **מִי הָאִישׁ הַלָּזֶה** *who* (pred.) is yonder man? 1 S. 17. 43 **אֲנִי הֲכֶלֶב** *am I a dog?* Gen. 18. 17. **הֲמִכְסֶה אֲנִי** *shall I hide?* Gen. 4. 9, Jud. 2. 22, 1 S. 16. 4; though emphasis may alter this order, Ex. 16. 7, 8 **מָה וְנַחֲנוּ** *what are we?* In answers the order of question is generally retained; Gen. 29. 4 . . . **מֵאֵן אַתֶּם מֵאֵן אֲנַחְנוּ מֵאֵן** *from where are ye? from Haran we, 24. 23, 24, 2 K. 10. 13.* But great variety appears in use of the pron.; cf. Gen. 24. 65.

The prep. **ל** with noun or pron. when meaning *to be to, to have*, often stands first; Gen. 26. 20 **לָנוּ הַמַּיִם** *the water is ours*; 29. 16 **וְלִלְבָן שְׁתֵּי בָנוֹת** *and L. had two daughters.* 19. 8; 31. 16; 48. 5, Ex. 2. 16, Jud. 3. 16, 1 S. 1. 2; 17. 12; 25. 2, 2 S. 14. 6. And so adverbial expressions, Gen. 2. 12.

In the nominal sentences above the predication is expressed by the mere juxtaposition of subj. and pred. without any copula. The time also to which the predication belongs is left unexpressed.

## 2. The Verbal Sentence

§ 105. In the verbal sent. the idea expressed by the verb is the emphatic element, and in ordinary calm discourse the order is—pred., subj. Gen. 4. 26 **וַיֵּלֶד יִלְדָּבָן** *a son was born.* And with the conversive tenses universally, which must stand at the head of the clause, Gen. 3. 2 **וַתֹּאמֶר הָאִשָּׁה** *and the woman said.* This kind of sentence is far the most common in prose narrative.

When, however, any emphasis falls on the subj. it may precede the verbal pred. This emphasis may be of various kinds, though generally due to some kind of antithesis,

latent or expressed. Gen. 3. 13 הַנְּחָשׁ הַשִּׂיאֲנִי *the serpent* beguiled me; 37. 33 כְּתָנֶת בְּנֵי חַיָּה רָעָה אֶכְלָתָהּוּ it is my son's coat, *an evil beast* hath devoured him; 37. 27 וַיִּדְנוּ אֶל-חַיָּהּ but let not *our hand* be upon him. Often the antithesis is expressed: Is. 1. 3 יָדַע שׁוֹר קְנָהּוּ יִשְׂרָאֵל *Israel* does not know; Gen. 4. 2 Abel was a shepherd אֲדָמָה *but Cain* was a tiller of the ground; 1 S. 1. 22 . . . וַיַּעַל הָאִישׁ *the man* went up, *but Hannah* did not go up. Gen. 6. 8; 18. 33; 33. 17; 35. 18; 37. 11, Hos. 2. 23, 24; Is. 1. 2 and *they*; Am. 7. 17. A new subject in distinction from others is thus introduced, e.g. Jud. 1. 29 *and Ephraim*; sometimes without *and*, Jud. 1. 30, 31, 33. Or any new point that is to be somewhat signalled, Gen. 2. 6 *and a mist* went up. 1 K. 2. 28 *and the report* came to Joab. But rhythm and style must also be taken into account.

In the circumstantial sent. (§ 137) the subj. is prominent, and precedes the verbal pred. Gen. 24. 31 וְאֲנֹכִי פָּנִיתִי הַבַּיִת *when I* have made ready the house? Job 21. 22 הַלְאֵל יִלְמַדְדַּעַת וְהוּא רָמִים יִשְׁפּוֹט shall one teach *God* knowledge when *he* judges those on high? Ex. 23. 9; 33. 12, Jud. 4. 21.

Rem. 1. As stated above, there is a departure from the ordinary prose narrative style with *vav impf.* when a *new* subject has to be introduced or any important point signalled which is the beginning of a new development, e.g. Gen. 4. 1, the new history after the fall. In these cases the subj. is placed first even in the verbal sent. This is particularly the usage when the event to be signalled was anterior to the events in the current of the narrative. Jud. 1. 16 וּבְנֵי קִינִי עָלַי *now the Kenites* had gone up with Judah. Gen. 16. 1; 24. 62; 31. 19, Jud. 4. 11. See exx. § 39c.

Rem. 2. It is a point of style, however, especially in prophetic parallelism, and even otherwise, to vary the consn.,

and after a conversive tense to use the simple tense and subj. before it with no emphasis. Is. 6. 7 **וְקָרַע עֲנָנֶיךָ וַתִּטְּאֶתְךָ 7** וְקָרַע תִּכְפֹּר. Is. 11. 13; 14. 25; 28. 18; 31. 3, Ps. 78. 64.

### 3. *The Compound Sentence. Casus pendens*

§ 106. In such a sent. as *Cain's father is dead* the language often prefers to say, *Cain, his father is dead*, **מֵת אָבִיהוּ מִן מֵת אָבִיהוּ** instead of **מֵת אָבִי-קַיִן**. So for: the way of *God* is perfect, **הָאֵל תָּמִים דְּרָכּוֹ** Ps. 18. 31. While a certain prominence is thus given to the main subject it is slight, and the rendering *as for God*, his way, &c., is an exaggeration. Such sentences are composite; the subj. is placed at the head in an isolated position as *casus pendens*, and the predication regarding it follows in a distinct sent., which may be nominal or verbal. The effect of this consn. is sometimes to give real emphasis to the chief subj., but often merely to give emphasis or vividness and lightness to the sentence as a whole. The consn. is common in sentences where the subj. is encumbered with complementary elements, so that it needs to be disentangled and restated. Gen. 3. 12 **הָיָה נְתָנָה . . . הָאִשָּׁה** *the woman* whom thou gavest, &c., *she* gave me; 15. 4 **הוּא יֵרֶשֶׁה . . . הוּא יֵצֵא** *he who* shall come out of thy loins, *he* shall be thine heir; 24. 7 **וְאֵלֵהֶי 7** *Je. the God of heaven* who took me, and who, &c., *he* shall send.

The subj. placed as an isolated inchoative is resumed by a pron. in the same case as the subj. would have had in a simple sent.

(a) Nom.—Gen. 42. 11 **בָּלָנוּ בְּבְנֵי אִישׁ אֶחָד נִחְנוּ 11** *we are all sons of one man*; Is. 1. 13 **לִי הוּא הָיָה לִי 13** *incense* (sacrificial smoke) is an abomination to me. Jer. 12. 6 **בְּגֵדוֹ בָּדַד . . . גַּם-אֶחָיו 6** *even thy brethren* have acted treacherously. Gen. 14. 24; 22. 24; 30. 33; 31. 16;

34. 21; 41. 25; 44. 17; 45. 20, Ex. 12. 16, Jud. 4. 4, 2 S. 5. 1, Deu. 1. 30, 38, 39.

(b) Gen.—Jud. 17. 5 וְהָאִישׁ מִיִּכָּה לוֹ בַּיִת א' *the man Micah had a house of God.* 2 K. 1. 4 הַמֶּטָּה אֲשֶׁר עָלִיתָ *from the bed which thou hast gone up into thou shalt not come down.* Is. 4. 3 קְדוֹשׁ . . . יִהְיֶה שֵׁם לְאֵתֶרֶד מִמֶּנָּה *he that is left shall be called holy.* The prep. is sometimes placed before the main subj., and repeated with the pron. Gen. 2. 17 וּמִעֵץ הַדַּעַת . . . לֹא תֹאכַל מִמֶּנּוּ *but thou shalt not eat of the tree of knowledge.* 2 S. 6. 23.—Gen. 17. 4, 15; 48. 7, 1 S. 12. 23, 1 K. 1. 20; 12. 17, Is. 3. 12; 9. 1; 11. 10, Hos. 9. 8, 11, Ps. 10. 5; 11. 4; 125. 2, Jon. 2. 7.

(c) Acc.—Gen. 24. 27 אֲנִי בְדֶרֶךְ נְחִי י' *Je. led me in the way.* Gen. 28. 13 לְהָ אֶתְנֶנָּה . . . הָאָרֶץ *the land on which thou liest will I give thee.* Is. 1. 7 אֲדַמְתֶּם זְרִים *your land strangers devour in your sight.* The main subj. may be acc., which is resumed: Gen. 47. 21 וְאֶת־הָעָם הָעֵבְרִי אֶתּוֹ *and the people he removed.* Gen. 13. 15; 49. 8, Nu. 22. 35, Jud. 11. 24, 1 S. 9. 13; 25. 29, 1 K. 15. 13; 22. 14, 2 K. 9. 27, Is. 8. 13, Ps. 125. 5, Deu. 13. 1; 14. 6.

(d) In the verbal sent. the expression of the resumptive pron. throws emphasis upon the subj., the place of which at the head gives it prominence. The same is the case in the nominal sent. when the pred. is definite, as 1 K. 18. 39 יְהוָה הוּא יְהוָה *Jehovah is God!* Deu. 18. 2 יְהוָה הוּא *Jehovah is his inheritance.* In this case the pron. precedes the pred. Gen. 2. 14; 9. 18; 42. 6, Deu. 10. 17; 12. 23; 31. 6, 8, Is. 9. 14; 33. 6, 1 S. 17. 14.

When the pred. of the nominal sent. is indefinite the pron. usually follows the pred., and there is a balance of emphasis on subj. and pred., the resumptive pron. sinking almost to the rank of a copula. Gen. 41. 25 חֲלוֹם פָּרְעָה *the dream of Ph. is one;* 47. 6 אֶרֶץ מִצְרַיִם לְפָנָיָהּ

הוּא. Gen. 34. 21; 45. 20, Ex. 3. 5; 32. 16, Nu. 11. 7, Deu. 1. 17; 4. 24, Jos. 5. 15, 2 S. 21. 2, 1 K. 20. 31, Mic. 7. 3. Cf. Ps. 76. 8.

The sent. is also compound when *cas. pend.* is resumed by convers. tenses, *e.g.* 1 K. 12. 17.

Rem. 1. When the *cas. pend.* is to be resumed in acc. (*c* above) it may be put in acc. also in Ar. And in other languages—

Den König Wiswamitra,  
Den treibt's ohne Rast und Ruh . .

Rem. 2. The fact that the pron. agrees with subj. in gend. and numb., *e.g.* הָרָם הוּא הַנְּפֹשֵׁט, seems to show that properly it is a resumption of the subj. and not an anticipation of the pred. Its occasional agreement with pred. (*e.g.* in Eth. &c.) is a familiar case of attraction, cf. Jer. 10. 3.

The consn. is probably different when the pron. stands after a pron. of 1st or 2nd pers., as 2 S. 7. 28 אַתָּה הוּא הָאֱלֹהִים. Here the 3rd pers. pron. strengthens the other, *thou art God*.<sup>1</sup> Is. 37. 16, Jer. 14. 22, Ps. 44. 5, Neh. 9. 6, 2 Chr. 20. 6, cf. Is. 51. 9, 10, and with 1st pers. Is. 43. 25; 51. 12; 52. 6. So 1 Chr. 21. 17 *I am he-who* (אֲשֶׁר) has sinned, Ez. 38. 17, cf. Jer. 49. 12. Others (Ew. Dr.) regard הוּא in these cases as pred., 2 S. 7. 28 *thou art he*—God. The same seems the consn. with הוּא יְהוָה Ecc. 1. 17, 1 Chr. 22. 1, and אֱלֹהֵי הַיָּם Gen. 25. 16, Lev. 23. 2, Nu. 3. 20, 21, 27, 33, &c., though the emphasis here is very slight.

In some cases הוּא appears to be pred., Is. 41 4 אֲנִי הוּא *I am he* (43. 10, 13; 46. 4; 48. 12, Ps. 102. 28), where *he* (it) expresses the divine consciousness of himself, cf. the

<sup>1</sup> This use of the *third* pers. pron. seems secondary. Naturally it would be used to strengthen only words in the 3rd pers., *e.g.* Is. 7. 14, Nu. 18. 23, Ex. 12. 42, Ezr. 7. 6, 2 Chr. 32. 30. The same use of 3rd pers. pron. appears in the so-called Ar. "pron. of separation" (a mere empirical phrase). This 3rd pers. pron. should properly be used only after a subj. in 3rd pers., its use after *I, thou, &c.*, is no doubt secondary and analogical, and is less classical. *E.g.* John 14. 6 *ana hua elṭariq* (van Dyck), *I am the way*, in the more classical trans. of the Jesuits is *ana elṭariq, ana elbâb, I am the door, &c.*

beginning of 43. 11 and end of 43. 12. In sense, *it is I*, or *I am* (what I am) is nearly the same.

When the sent. is transposed with pred. first the pron. anticipates the subj., Lam. 1. 18 **צָרִיק הוּא יְהוּה**; Song 6. 8, 9 **יִזְכֶּנִי הִיא אֶחָת הִיא יִזְכֶּנִי** *one is she, my dove*; Pr. 30. 24, 29. Cf. Pr. 6. 16; 30. 15, 18. Peculiar is 1 S. 20. 29 **וְהוּא צָוָה לִי אֶחָדִי** (Sep. otherwise), cf. Ps. 87. 5.

#### EXPRESSION OF SUBJECT IN VERBAL SENTENCE

§ 107. In the verbal sent. the subj. is expressed by the inflectional element of the form, except in 3rd pers., as **יָדַעְתִּי** *I know*, **מָכַרְתֶּם** *ye sold* (where *tem* and *ti* express the subj.). In the nominal sent. the subj. has to be expressed. On its omission with ptcip. cf. § 100.

##### 1. *Emphasis on Subject*

When emphasis falls on the pronom. subj. in verbal sent. it is expressed separately, being then placed chiefly before, but also after, the verb. The emphasis is often slight, and due to contrast. Gen. 42. 8 **וְהֵם לֹא הִכְרָהוּ** *but they* did not recognise him; 33. 3; 42. 23, Jud. 4. 3; 13. 5, Is. 1. 2, Hos. 2. 10, Am. 2. 9. After the verb, Jud. 8. 23 **לֹא-אֶמְשַׁל** *I will not rule over you*. Gen. 24. 60, Ex. 18. 19, 1 S. 20. 8; 23. 22, 2 S. 12. 28; 17. 15, 2 K. 10. 4, Is. 20. 6, Jer. 17. 18. The pron. is often strengthened by **גַּם** whether before the verb or after. Gen. 20. 6; 38. 11; 48. 19, Jud. 1. 3, 22; 3. 31, Hos. 4. 6.

Rem. 1. These additional exx. of pron. may be turned up. Gen. 30. 26; 31. 6; 42. 19; 43. 9; 45. 8, Ex. 20. 19, Deu. 3. 28; 5. 24, Jud. 8. 21; 15. 12. In many cases, however, the emphasis is not on the mere pron.; the expression of the pron. gives force or solemnity to the whole phrase, which is emphatic. Particularly in *responses* to preceding statements or requests, as Gen. 21. 24 *I will swear*, 38. 17; 47. 30, Jud. 6. 18 (11. 9), 2 S. 3. 13; 21. 6, 1 K. 2. 18;

5. 22, 2 K. 6. 3. But also in other cases, Jud. 5. 3 *I will sing, I will sing to the Lord.* Pr. 24. 32. And in prayers the *thou* is merely part of the solemnity of the sentiment, 1 K. 3. 6. And so in earnest appeals, as in the phrases *thou knowest, ye know*, the emphasis is not on the mere pron. but belongs to the whole expression. Gen. 44. 27, Jos. 14. 6, 1 S. 28. 9, 2 S. 17. 8, 1 K. 2. 5, 15; 5. 17, 20 (2 K. 9. 11), 2 K. 4. 1, cf. 2 K. 19. 11. Many languages whose inflected verb does not need the pron. show a tendency to express 1st and 2nd pron. So Moab. St. l. 21 seq. Pleonastic expression of אֲנִי after verb is a peculiarity of Eccles., e.g. 1. 16; 2. 1, 11, 15, &c., cf. Song 5. 5.

### 2. The Indefinite Subject

§ 108. The indefinite, unnamed subj. (Eng. *they, one*) is expressed in various ways. (a) By 3 pers. sing. of verb, e.g. in the phrase *they called the name, &c.* Gen. 11. 9 בָּרָא עַל־בֶּן קָרָא שְׁמָהּ בָּבֶל *they called its name Babel.* Gen. 16. 14; 21. 31, Ex. 15. 23. The 3 plur. is also used, 1 S. 23. 28, 1 Chr. 11. 7; 14. 11. But in other cases 3 sing. is of frequent use. Is. 7. 24 שָׁמָּה יֵבֹא וּבִקְשֶׁת יִבֹּא with arrows and bow *shall one go* there; Ex. 10. 5 וְלֹא יוּכַל לִרְאוֹת הָאָרֶץ so that *one shall not be able* to see the earth. Gen. 38. 28; 48. 1, Deu. 15. 2, 1 S. 16. 4; 23. 22; 26. 20, 2 S. 15. 31; 16. 23, 1 K. 18. 26, 2 K. 5. 4, Is. 6. 10; 8. 4; 14. 32, Am. 6. 12, Mic. 2. 4.

(b) By 3 plur. Gen. 29. 2 מִן הַבָּאֵר הַהוּא יִשְׁקוּ הָעֵדְרִים from that well *they watered* the flocks; 1 S. 27. 5 יִתְנַדְּלִי מִקּוֹם let *them give* me a place. Gen. 41. 14; 49. 31, 1 S. 1. 25, 1 K. 1. 2; 15. 8, Hos. 11. 2, 7; 12. 9, Jer. 8. 4; 16. 6 (sing. and pl.), Job 6. 2, 2 Chr. 25. 16.

(c) By ptc., in plur. Gen. 39. 22 וְאֵת כָּל־אֲשֶׁר עָשׂוּ וְאֵת הַחַיִּים הַהֵם הָיָה עֹשֶׂה and whatever *they did there.* Is. 32. 12, Jer. 38. 23, Ez. 13. 7, Neh. 6. 10, 2 Chr. 9. 28. More rarely sing., Is. 21. 11 אֵלַי קָרָא *one calleth* unto me from Seir.



Rem. 1. The 3 sing. *fem.* seems used Num. 26. 59, 1 K. 1. 6. The real subject in *a*, *b* is the ptc. sing. or plur., קָרָא קָרָא *a caller*, or הַקָּרָא *the caller*, called. The ptc. is often expressed: Is. 28. 4 יִרְאֶה הָרֹאֶה אֶתְהָא which *one* (the seer) *sees*; v. 24. Nu. 6. 9, Deu. 22. 8, 2 S. 17. 9, Is. 16. 10, Jer. 9. 23; 31. 5, Ez. 33. 4, Am. 9. 1, Mic. 5. 2, Nah. 2. 3, Ps. 129. 3. In 2 K. 12. 10 אֵישׁ יֶשׁ is used for *one*, cf. 23. 8. Am. 6. 10 הָעוֹר עִמָּךְ are there *any* still beside thee? the subj. is rather understood.

Rem. 2. The 3 plur. is sometimes used where human agents cannot be supposed, in the sense of *pass.* Job 7. 3 and wearisome nights לִי מִנוּי are *appointed* me; 6. 2; 19. 26; 34. 20, Ez. 32, 25, Pr. 9. 11. The usage is common in Aram., Dan. 2. 30; 4. 22. So ptc. 4. 28, 29. Peculiar ptc. sing., Jud. 13. 19 וּמִפְּלֵא לַעֲשׂוֹת and something marvelous was done.

Rem. 3. The use of 2nd person for the indeterminate subj. is rare, except in the phrase עַד-בְּאֵד, בְּאֵד (בְּאֵדָה) *till thou comest = as far as*, 1 K. 18. 46, Gen. 10. 19, 30; 13. 10. Apparently, Is. 7. 25 לֹא תָבוֹא שָׁמָּה *thou shalt not come there*. In the injunctions of the Law *thou* is the community personified or each person, and in Prov. *thou* is the pupil of the Wiseman, though cf. Pr. 19. 25; 26. 12; 30. 28.

### 3. Impersonal Construction

§ 109. The verb is also used impersonally in 3 sing., perf. and impf., chiefly mas. but also fem. Jud. 2. 15 וַיִּצַר לָהֶם *they were greatly distressed*; Gen. 32. 8. 1 S. 30. 6 וַתִּצַר לְדָוִד מְאֹד, Jud. 10. 9. So mas. in וַיְהִי *and it was*, וְהָיָה *and it shall be*. So many words followed by prep. ל; as רַע ל *to be amiss to*, Nu. 22. 34, Gen. 21. 12, 2 S. 19. 8; Jer. 7. 6. ל מוֹב 1 S. 16. 16, Hos. 10. 1, Jer. 7. 23. ל מַר *bitter*, Ru. 1. 13, Lam. 1. 4. ל חֶם *to have heat*, 1 K. 1. 1, 2, Hag. 1. 6. Job 3. 13 אָז יָנוּחַ לִי *I should have had rest*, Is. 23. 12, Neh. 9. 28. Cf. Gen. 4. 5, 1 S. 16. 23.

The fem. seems used in reference to the phenomena of

nature. Job 11. 17 תִּעֲפֶה (cohort.) *should it be dark*. Am. 4. 7 תִּמְטִיר *it rained* (freq.). Mic. 3. 6 *it shall be dark*, Ps. 50. 3; 68. 15. (But cf. 1 S. 29. 10 *when it is light* (mas.), 2 S. 2. 32, see Gen. 44. 3, Jer. 13. 16.) And of an unseen power, Job 18. 14 *it brings him* (he is brought) to the king of terrors. The *pass.* is also used impersonally in the *mas.* Gen. 4. 26 אָז הוּחַל לְקִרְאָה then *it was begun* to invoke; Ez. 16. 34 וְאַחֲרָיָהּ לֹא זִנְיָהּ *there was no whoring* after thee. The *pass.* in this case often governs like the act. (§ 79), Am. 4. 2 וְנִשְׂאָה אֶתְכֶם *ye shall be taken away*. Nu. 16. 29, Deu. 21. 3, 4, 2 S. 17. 16, Is. 14. 3; 16. 10; 27. 13; 53. 5, Jer. 16. 6, Am. 9. 9, Mal. 1. 11 (ptcp.), Ps. 87. 3.

Rem. 1. The forms טוֹב, רַע, מַר, &c., might be adjectives, but the use of *impf.* and *inf.* makes it more probable that they are *perfs.* Peculiar is Prov. 13. 10, by pride יָתוּן מִצָּדָה *there comes* strife (es giebt). Rarely with suff., Job 6. 17 בָּחֲמוֹ *when it is hot*.

Rem. 2. It is scarcely impersonal use of fem. when it is employed of a subject suggested by some statement preceding, where we say *it*. Is. 7. 7 לֹא תָקוּם *it shall not stand* (the purpose); 14. 24, Jud. 11. 39, 1 S. 10. 12. The fem. is often, however, used for *neut.*—Comp. these cases of fem.: Gen. 24. 14 (*thereby*), 1 S. 11. 2 וּשְׂמִתִּיהָ (*it*, putting out their eye), Gen. 15. 6 counted *it* (the fact that he believed) Ex. 30. 21, Jos. 11. 20 הִיחָה, 2 S. 2. 26; 3. 37, 1 K. 2. 15, 2 K. 19. 25; 24. 3, 20, Is. 22. 11; 30. 8, Mic. 1. 9, Jer. 4. 28; 5. 31; 7. 31; 10. 7; 19. 5, Ez. 33. 33, Job 4. 5; 18. 15.

Rem. 3. In poetry a peculiar consn. occurs in which the verb seems to have a double subj., one personal and the other the organ or member, &c., by which the action is actually performed. This neuter subj. has always a suff. of the same person as the personal subj., and may precede or follow the verb. Ps. 3. 5 קוֹלִי אֶלֵּי אֶקְרָא *my voice, I cried*, *i.e.* I cried aloud; Is. 10. 30 צְהִלִי קוֹלְךָ *shout aloud!* Is. 26. 9, Hab. 3. 15, Ps. 17. 10, 13, 14; 32. 8; 44. 3; 60. 7; 66. 17; 69. 11; 108. 2, 7; 142. 2. In a nominal sent. Ps. 83. 19.

—Others consider קולי, &c., to be acc., but the presence of the suff. distinguishes the present case from that in § 67, R. 3.

COMPLEMENT OF THE VERBAL SENTENCE

§ 110. The sent. does not usually consist of mere subj. and pred.; the verbal sent. has usually an obj., and all sentences may have additional elements which are the complements of the two chief parts of the sentence. These complements usually follow the parts, subj. or pred., which they amplify. The order of the verbal sentence is: verb, subj., obj., or complement of the verb. But emphasis may alter this order. Gen. 3. 14 על־גִּהְוֹנְךָ תֵּלֵךְ וְעָפָר תֹּאכַל *on thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat.* 1 S. 20. 8 וְעַד־אָבִיךָ לָמָּה זוֹהָ תְּבִיאֵנִי *but why bring me to thy father?* 1 K. 2. 26 לָךְ עֲנָתָה לְךָ *to Anathoth with you!* Gen. 15. 10; 20. 4; 38. 9, Deu. 5. 3, Jos. 2. 16, Is. 6. 5, Hos. 5. 6, Job 1. 12; 34. 31.

The adverb usually follows the verb, except negatives; and so longer designations of time. But short words of time, like אָז *then*, עַתָּה *now*, בְּרֵאשִׁית *at first*, &c., precede.

§ 111. Out of this principle of emphasis may arise a variety of order, e.g.—

(a) Obj., verb, subj. 1 S. 2. 19 וּמַעֲוֵל קָמֹן תַּעֲשֶׂה־לוֹ אִמּוֹ *and a little robe his mother used to make him.* Gen. 42. 4, 1 S. 17. 36, 1 K. 14. 11. And very often when subj. is contained in the verb. Jud. 14. 3, 2 K. 22. 8, Is. 4. 1, Hos. 1. 7; 10. 6.

(b) Verb, obj., subj. 1 S. 15. 33 כְּאִשֶׁר שִׁבְלָה נָשִׁים *as thy sword has bereaved women.* Gen. 21. 7, Nu. 19. 7, 18, 1 K. 8. 63; 19. 10, Is. 19. 13.

(c) Subj., obj., verb. Is. 1. 15 יְדִיכֶם דְּמִים מְלֵאוּ *This collocation brings the subj. and obj. into very close relation.* Jud. 17. 6 *every man what was right in his own sight used to*

do. Jer. 32. 4 *and his eyes his eyes shall see*, cf. 34. 3. Is. 11. 8; 32. 8.

Rem. 1. Other forms are occasional, as obj., subj., verb. 2 K. 5. 13, Is. 5. 17; 28. 17. This order is usual in nominal sent. with participial pred. Gen. 41. 9 *אָנִי מִנְפִיר אֶתְּמַטְּאִי* *my faults* I call to remembrance. Gen. 37. 16, Jud. 9. 36; 14. 4, 2 K. 6. 22, Jer. 1. 11.

Rem. 2. Aramaic shows a liking for placing the verb at the end of the clause, the obj. and complement of the verb preceding it, as in *c*. Dan. 2. 16, 18; 3. 16; 4. 15. Cf. inf. Is. 49. 6. Jud. 6. 25. 2 Chr. 31. 7, 10.

Rem. 3. It is a point of style, however, particularly in prophetic and poetic parallelism, to vary the order of words. So even in ordinary prose. Ex. 3. 7 *רָאִיתִי אֶת־עֲנִי* *רָאִיתִי אֶת־עֲנִי* . . . *עָמִי*, Is. 5. 24; 11. 8; 31. 1. Cf. 1 K. 20. 18 the double *take them alive*.

#### AGREEMENT OF SUBJECT AND PREDICATE IN RESPECT OF GENDER AND NUMBER

§ 112. There is less precision in the matter of agreement than there is in classical or other languages. Several general peculiarities appear—

1. When the pred. stands first the speaker's mind is fixed on the act in itself, and clear consciousness of the coming subj. is not yet present to him, and he puts the pred. in the most general form, mas. sing.<sup>1</sup>

2. There is a great tendency to construe according to *the sense* rather than strict grammatical law, hence gramm. singulars, such as collectives and words that suggest a plurality, are often joined with plur. pred., especially when they refer to persons.

3. On the other hand, there is a tendency to group things that resemble one another, or belong to the same class, under one conception, and construe them with a sing. verb.

<sup>1</sup> Ar. grammarians have a more ingenious explanation of this usage.

The plur. of lifeless objects and living creatures, not persons, may be treated as gramm. collect., and joined with sing. fem.

### 1. Agreement of Simple Subject

§ 113. (a) When subj. precedes the pred. there is in general agreement in gend. and numb., whether the subj. be person or thing. Gen. 15. 12 וְתִרְדָּמָה נִפְלְאָה and *a sleep fell*; v. 17 הַשֶּׁמֶשׁ בָּאָה the *sun was gone down*; 16. 1. But exceptions occur; Mal. 2. 6 עוֹלָה לֹא־נִמְצְאָה *evil was not found*. Gen. 15. 17, Ex. 12. 49, Jer. 50. 46, Zech. 6. 14, cf. v. 7, Job 20. 26.

(b) When pred. precedes, while agreement in gend. and numb. is usual, esp. when subj. is personal, the verb is often in 3 sing. mas., even though the subj. be plur. or fem. This is common with היה *to be*. The subj. having once been mentioned, however, following verbs are in proper agreement. Gen. 1. 14 יְהִי מְאֹרֹת וְיְהִי אֵשׁ let *there be lights*, and *let them be signs*. Is. 17. 6 וְנִשְׁאַרְבוּ עֲלֵלוֹת there *shall be left gleanings*; 2 K. 3. 26 הַזִּקַּק מְאֹד לְפָנָיו הַמִּלְחָמָה the *battle was too strong* for him, cf. v. 18. Deu. 32. 35, Is. 13. 22; 24. 12, Jer. 36. 32. Nu. 9. 6 וַיְהִי אֲנָשִׁים אֲשֶׁר הָיוּ 1 K. 11. 3 וַיְהִי אֲנָשִׁים אֲשֶׁר הָיוּ וַיְהִי לָהֶן נָשִׁים וַיְהִי לָהֶן נָשִׁים שָׂרוֹת *he had wives, princesses, 700*. The *mas.* is apt to be used for 3 pl. fem. impf.; 1 K. 11. 3 וַיִּטְּאוּ נִשְׁוֹתָיו אֶת־לְבָבוֹ *his wives perverted his mind*; 2 S. 4. 1 וַיִּרְפוּ יָדָיו *his hands were paralysed* (cf. Zeph. 3. 16), Jud. 21. 21, Jos. 11. 11, Is. 19. 18, Jer. 13. 16, Ez. 23. 42, Hos. 14. 7. Gen. 20. 17; 30. 39. Song 6. 9. Imper., Is. 32. 11, Hos. 10. 8, Zeph. 3. 16.—1 S. 1. 2, Jud. 20. 46, Gen. 35. 5, 1 Chr. 2. 22; 23. 17, 22.

(c) Subjects in dual are necessarily joined with plur. pred., verb or ptcp. Gen. 48. 10 וַיִּבְרְאוּ עֵינָיו יִשְׂרָאֵל the *eyes of Israel were dim* from age. 2 K. 21. 12; 22. 20. Is. 1. 15, Mic. 7. 10. Ptcp., 1 S. 1. 13, 2 S. 24. 3, Is. 30. 20, Hos.

9. 14, 2 Chr. 16. 9. Cf. § 31, and on 1 S. 4. 15, Mic. 4. 11. § 116.

## 2. Agreement of Compound Subject

§ 114. When the subj. is compound, consisting of several elements joined by *and*.—(a) When subj. is first the verb is usually plur., and so the pred. in nominal sent. 2 S. 16. 15 וְאַבְשָׁלוֹם וְכָל־הָעָם בָּאוּ Abs. and all the people *came*; Gen. 8. 22; 18. 11. But sometimes the verb is sing., agreeing either with the word next it or with the chief element of the complex subj., or the several parts of subj. all forming one conception: 2 S. 20. 10 Joab and Abishai his brother רָדַף *pursued*. Hos. 4. 11 whoredom and wine and new wine יִקְחֶלֶב *take away* the understanding. Hos. 9. 2, Deu. 8. 13. Neh. 5. 14 אֲנִי וְאַחֵי לֹא אָכַלְתִּי 2 S. 3. 22, Est. 4. 16.<sup>1</sup> If parts of the subj. be of different genders pred. is usually mas., Gen. 18. 11, but cf. Jer. 44. 25.

(b) When the pred. is first it perhaps oftenest agrees in gend. and numb. with the element of the subj. which is next it; but it may be in plur. When the subj. has once been mentioned following verbs are in plur. Gen. 31. 14 וַתֵּעַן רָחֵל וְלֵאמֹר R. and L. *answered and said*; Nu. 12. 1 וַיֹּאמְרוּ . . . וַתְּדַבֵּר מִרְיָם וְאַהֲרֹן Mir. and Aaron *spoke and said*; Gen. 3. 8 וַיִּתְּחַבֵּא הָאָדָם וְאִשְׁתּוֹ *hid themselves*. Gen. 7. 7; 9. 23; 21. 32; 24. 50, 55; 33. 7; 44. 14, Jud. 5. 1; 8. 21, 1 S. 11. 15; 18. 3; 27. 8, 1 K. 1. 34, 41.—Pl. Gen. 40. 1, Nu. 20. 10; 31. 13, Ex. 5. 1; 7. 20. Or it may be mas. sing. (§ 113 b), Joel 1. 13.

(c) When the subj. is a pron. and noun, the pron. must be expressed whether verb be sing. or plur. Gen. 7. 1 הָיָה וְכָל־בֵּיתְךָ go *thou* and all thy house, Jud. 7. 10, 11. Jud. 11. 38 וְרַעוּתֶיהָ הִיא וַתֵּלֶךְ *she* and her companions

<sup>1</sup> The *and* before "maids," Est. 4. 16, and before "brethren," Neh. 5. 14, recalls Ar. *waw* of concomitance.

went. I K. 1. 21 וְהִיְיָתִי אֲנִי וּבְנִי I and my son shall be. Gen. 14. 15; 20. 7; 24. 54 (pl.); 31. 21; I S. 20. 31; 28. 8, 2 S. 19. 15. In I S. 29. 10 אֲתָה is missed before *servants*.

Even when two nouns are subj. a pron. referring to the first must be expressed if any words separate it from the second, unless the words be a mere apposition. Gen. 13. 1; 35. 6; 38. 12; 50. 14, 22, Jud. 9. 48, Neh. 2. 12, cf. Jos. 22. 32. The pron. *may* be expressed in any case, I S. 29. 11; 30. 9.

When compound subj. is of different persons 1st pers. precedes 2nd and 2nd the 3rd. I K. 1. 21 above, *I and my son*. I S. 14. 40; 20. 23, Nu. 20. 8, Gen. 43. 8.

### 3. Agreement of Collectives

§ 115. With sing. nouns having a collective meaning the pred. is often construed in the plur. according to sense: particularly when the collective term refers to persons, but sometimes also when it refers to lower creatures, or even to things. Grammatical agreement in sing. is also common, and the two consns. often interchange. When the pred. is first it may be in sing. while following verbs are in plur. Hos. 4. 6 נִדְמוּ עַמִּי my people *are destroyed*, cf. Is. 5. 13 גָּלָה עַמִּי *is gone away*; Is. 9. 8 וַיֵּדְעוּ הָעַם כָּלוּ the people *shall know* all of it. I K. 18. 39 וַיֵּרָא כָּל-הָעַם וַיִּפְּלוּ. Ex. 1. 20; 4. 31, Jud. 2. 10. Gen. 41. 57 וְכָל-הָאָרֶץ בָּאוּ all the world *came*; I S. 14. 25; 17. 46, 2 S. 15. 23. Nu. 14. 35 הָעֵדָה הַזֹּאת הַנִּוְעָדִים this congregation *that are met together*. With creatures: Gen. 30. 38 תְּבִאֲנָה הַצֹּאן the flock *used to come*, Ps. 144. 13. So fem. pl. with בָּקָר Job 1. 14; mas. pl. I Chr. 27. 29, cf. I K. 8. 5. With things: Jer. 48. 36 יִתְרַת עֲשָׂה אֲבָדוֹ הַגָּן the gain he has made *is lost*. Is. 15. 7, Hos. 9. 6, Hag. 2. 7, Ps. 119. 103. Comp. I S. 2. 33 *increase* in a personal ref.—Ex. 15. 4, Jud. 9. 36, 37 *people* sing. and pl., so I S. 13. 6, cf. *vv.* 15, 16. Jud. 1. 22; 9. 55,

2 K. 25. 5, Am. 1. 5, Hos. 10. 5; 11. 7, Is. 16. 4; 19. 13. Gen. 34. 24. Nu. 20. 11; 21. 7, Job 8. 19.

§ 116. On the other hand, plur. of inanimate objects that may be grouped under one conception, of the lower creatures, and abstract plurals are frequently construed with fem. sing. of pred. 1 S. 4. 15 *וְעֵינָיו קָמָה* and *his eyes were set*, Mic. 4. 11. Jo. 1. 20 *בְּהֵמוֹת שָׂדֵה תַעְרַג אֵלֶיךָ* the *beasts of the field pant* unto thee. Ps. 103. 5 *תַתְחַדֵּשׁ כְּנֶשֶׁר* *thy youth is renewed* like the eagle. Gen. 49. 22, Is. 34. 13; 59. 12, Jer. 4. 14; 12. 4, Mic. 1. 9, Ps. 18. 35; 37. 31, Neh. 13. 10, Job 12. 7; 14. 19; 20. 11. Cf. 2 S. 24. 13. 2 K. 3. 3 *בְּמִצְוֵה* (*sins* of Jeroboam); 13. 11, Is. 59. 8. There is no reason for K'ri Ps. 73. 2, *שִׁפְכָה*. Deu. 21. 7 is more unusual.—Sometimes when subj. precedes it is treated almost as *casus pendens*, and its general idea becomes subj.; Gen. 47. 24 *הַיְהִיָּה יְהִיָּה* *it shall be*. Ex. 12. 49, Ecc. 2. 7. Cf. Is. 16. 8, Hab. 3. 17.

Rem. 1. General plurals are sometimes construed with sing. pred. from a tendency to individualise and distribute over every individual, or apply it to any individual supposed. Gen. 27. 29 *אָרִיר אָרִירָה* *they that curse thee shall be cursed*. Nu. 24. 9, Jer. 22. 4. Ex. 31. 14, Lev. 17. 14; 19. 8, Zech. 11. 5, Ps. 64. 9, Pr. 3. 18, 35; 14. 9; 27. 16; 28. 1, 2 Chr. 10. 8 (*rd. יַעֲצֹרֵי*). In particular a sing. suff. frequently refers back to a plur. Is. 2. 20 *אֲשֶׁר עָשְׂרָלוּ* which *they made each for himself*, Hos. 4. 8. Deu. 21. 10; 28. 48, Is. 1. 23; 2. 8; 5. 23; 8. 20, Jos. 2. 4, Ex. 28. 3, Zech. 14. 12, Or sing. and plur. interchange, Is. 30. 22; 56. 5, Ps. 62. 5; 141. 10. Cf. Deu. 4. 37; 7. 3, Jud. 1. 34, 2 K. 19. 14. Sometimes sing. pron. refers back to plur. as a collective unity, Is. 17. 13, Jer. 31. 15 *אֵינֶנִּי* (of Rachel's children), 2 S. 24. 13, Jos. 13. 14, and perhaps some of the exx. above. Or the pron. expresses a generalised *it*, Jud. 11. 34 *אֵיזָלוּ מִמֶּנִּי בֵן* *he had not besides it* (her) son or daughter. Ex. 11. 6 *לִּי* *like it*.

Rem. 2. When the compound subj. is a noun with its



gen. agreement may be with gen. as expressing the main idea of the phrase; or pred. being next gen. may agree with it by a kind of attraction. 1 K. 17. 16 **וַיִּצְפַּחַת שֶׁמֶן לֹא חָסַר** the cruse of *oil did not fail*. Is. 2. 11, 1 S. 2. 4, Lev. 13. 9; Job 21. 21; 29. 10; 38. 21. Attraction of gend. Jer. 10. 3, Lev. 25. 33; in the case of verb *to be* attraction by pred. Gen. 31. 8, Pr. 14. 35. The pred. usually agrees with gen. after **כֹּל** *all*, Hos. 9. 4, Gen. 5. 5, Ex. 15. 20, but not universally, Hos. 10. 14, Is. 64. 10.

Rem. 3. In nominal sent. the pred. adj. when first is sometimes uninflected, Ps. 119. 137 **יֵשֶׁר מִשְׁפָּטֶיךָ** *upright* are thy judgments, cf. v. 155; but this is rare, except with the word **טוֹב**; Jud. 8. 2, Gen. 49. 15, 1 S. 19. 4, 2 K. 5. 12, Ps. 73. 28; 119. 72; 147. 1, Pr. 17. 1; 20. 23.—Gen. 47. 3 **רַעֲיָה** is collec., cf. Deu. 14. 7, Ezr. 3. 9, Neh. 2. 16.

Rem. 4. Plurals of Eminence such as **אֱלֹהִים** *God*, **אֲרָנִים** *lord, owner*, when referring to a single person, are usually in concord with sing., Ex. 21. 29 **בְּעֲלָיו יוּמָת** *its owner shall be killed*, Is. 19. 4 **אֲרָנִים קָטָה** *a cruel lord*. When **אֱלֹהִים** means *gods* it is construed with pl., and in a few cases even when it is God, Gen. 20. 13; 35. 7, Ex. 22. 8, Jos. 24. 19 (E.), and sometimes in the phrase *living God*, Deu. 5. 23, 1 S. 17. 26, Jer. 10. 10; 23. 36. Words only used in pl. are occasionally joined to sing., e.g. 2 S. 10. 9 **פָּנִים** as fem. sing., cf. Job 16. 16.

Rem. 5. Names of nations are construed in three ways: (a) with mas. sing., the name being that of the personal ancestor, Ex. 17. 11, Is. 19. 16, Am. 1. 11, 1 Chr. 18. 5; 19. 15, 16, 18, 19. (b) Or with plur., 2 S. 10. 17, 1 K. 20. 20, 2 K. 6. 9, 1 Chr. 18. 2, 13. (c) Or with fem. sing., when the ref. is to the country or when the population is treated as a collective, often personified; 2 S. 8. 2, 5, 6; 10. 11; 24. 9, Is. 7. 2, Jer. 13. 19, 1 Chr. 19. 12, Job 1. 15. The consns. *a*, *b*, *c* may interchange in the same passage. Jer. 48. 15, Am. 2. 2, 3, Hos. 14. 1, Mal. 2. 11. Peculiar, Is. 18. 1, 2.

Rem. 6. When there are several predicates one may be in agreement and the other left uninflected. Is. 33. 9, Mic. 1. 9, Zech. 5. 11; cf. on adj. § 32, R. 4. But irregularity

in gend. and numb. is common, *e.g.* Jer. 31. 9 בָּהֶן . . . יָשָׁר, Zech. 6. 7. Sometimes text may be at fault, Jud. 4. 20 עָמַד, inf. abs. ? 1 S. 2. 20 *ad.* שָׁאֵל; 25. 27 הַבִּיאָה, cf. *v.* 35. In particular, vowel terminations of verbs were not always expressed in ancient texts, and are sometimes given or omitted wrongly by Mass. Ez. 18. 29 יִתְכַנְּנוּ as *v.* 25. With 20. 38 יבוא cf. Is. 45. 24. In Lam. 5. 10 נִכְמְרוּ may be due to plur. suff. in *our skin*, cf. 1 Chr. 24. 19, 2 Chr. 17. 14, Jer. 2. 34.

Exx. of mas. for 2 fem. impf., Is. 57. 8, Jer. 3. 5, Ez. 22. 4; 23. 32; 26. 14.

## PARTICULAR KINDS OF SENTENCE

### INTERJECTIONAL SENTENCE

§ 117. Words in direct address (the voc.) are of the form of interj. as הַמֶּלֶךְ *O king!* אֲדֹנָי הַמֶּלֶךְ *my lord the king!* and such phrases of entreaty as בְּי אֲדֹנָי. But any words may be uttered as exclamations, 2 K. 4. 19 ראשי ראשי *my head!* 11. 14 קֶשֶׁר קֶשֶׁר *treason! treason!* Jer. 4. 19 *my bowels!* 37. 14 שֶׁקֶר *it's a lie!* 2 K. 9. 12. Is. 29. 16 הַפְּנִינִים *your perversity!* Jer. 49. 16. Hab. 2. 19 יוֹרָה הוּא *it reveal!* Hos. 8. 1 *to thy mouth the trumpet!* 2 S. 13. 12 אֶל-אָחִי *don't! my brother!* Gen. 49. 4. So adverbs: לֹא *no!* הֵן *well, yes!* טוֹב *good! well!* Also the imper. of some verbs, as הִבֵּה (יִהְיֶה) *go to!* Gen. 38. 16, Ex. 1. 10; לָךְ, לָכֵה (even to a woman, Gen. 19. 32) *come!*

More strict interjections are הֶסֶם *hush! silence!* Jud. 3. 19, Am. 6. 10, Zeph. 1. 7, Hab. 2. 20, Zech. 2. 17. A verb הִסָּה is denom. from הֶסֶם Neh. 8. 11, Nu. 13. 30.—אֵיךְ *how!* in the Elegy, 2 S. 1. 25, 27, Hos. 11. 8 (elegiac measure), more commonly אֵיכָה Is. 1. 21, Lam. 1. 1.—אֵוִי *woe!* with prep. לְ, Is. 6. 5 אֵוִילִי, 3. 9, 11, Jer. 4. 31; without prep. Ez. 24. 6.

In Ps. 120. 5 **אֹיִה לִי**, so **אֲלֵלִי לִי** Mic. 7. 1, Job 10. 15.—**הוֹי** *woe! alas!* in lament for the dead, 1 K. 13. 30 **אָחִי הוֹי**; fuller form for the king, Jer. 22. 18. In the form **הוֹ** Am. 5. 16. In a more general sense, Jer. 48. 1; 50. 27. Also in threatening remonstrance, Is. 1. 4 **הוֹי גּוֹי הַמָּא** *Ha!* sinful nation, and often in Is.—Other forms, Jo. 1. 15 **אָהָה לַיּוֹם** *alas!* for the day. Ez. 30. 2 **הָהָה לַיּוֹם**, 6. 11 **אָהָה**.—An exclamation of *delight*, **הָאָהָה** Is. 44. 16; by the horse in battle, Job 39. 25; of malicious delight, Ps. 35. 21; 40. 16; 70. 4, Ez. 25. 3; 26. 2.

The pron. **מָה** *how! what!* is used in the expression of a variety of feelings, as wonder, awe, Gen. 28. 17; scorn, sarcasm, 2 S. 6. 20; dislike, Mal. 1. 13 **הִנֵּה מִתְלַאָּה** *Oh what a bore!* And so **מִי** *who!* Mic. 7. 18, &c.

The particle **הִנֵּה** also, as **הִנְנִי** *here I am!* Gen. 18. 9 **הִנֵּה בָּאֵהָל** *there! in the tent* (is she). 16. 11 **הִנֵּה הָרָה** *see thou art with child!* Very passionately Job 9. 19, is it a question of strength? **הִנֵּה!** perhaps, *of course!* (*he is irresistible*).

Rem. 1. The adj. **הַלֵּילָה** *profane* (absit)! is construed with ל of person and מן of the act repudiated. The full phrase is found 1 S. 26. 11 **מִיָּהוּהוּ מִשְׁלַחַי לִי מִיָּהוּהוּ**, 24. 7, 1 K. 21. 3 (so *rd.* 2 S. 23. 17), but oftener without מִי, Gen. 44. 7, 17. The phrase acquires the force of an oath, and may be followed by אִם (§ 120). 1 S. 24. 7, 2 S. 20. 20, Job 27. 5. Cf. Jos. 22. 29; 24. 16.

Rem. 2. In Gen. 16. 11, &c., the consn. is **אֵת הָרָה**. So in Ar. with def. pred., Kor. 2. 11, 12, 122.

Rem. 3. In exclamatory sentences there is omission of subj. as Gen. 18. 9, or of pred. as Hos. 8. 1, to the mouth the trumpet (set ye!), 1 K. 22. 36 *every man to his city* (get ye!), Hos. 5. 8 **אֲחֵרֶיךָ בְּנִימִן** perhaps, *thy rear!* Benj. (sc. guard!), or *behind thee* B. (is the danger). The word **קוֹל** *voice, sound of*, is nearly *hark!* Is. 13. 4; 66. 6.

## AFFIRMATIVE SENTENCE

§ 118. Affirmative force is given in various ways, *e.g.*—  
 (1) By *casus pendens*, Gen. 3. 12 the woman . . . *she gave me*,  
 42. 11 (§ 106). (2) By expression of pron. either alone or  
 with *vav*, וַ, &c. Gen. 4. 4; 20. 5, Is. 14. 10. (3) By inf.  
 abs. (§ 86). (4) By repetition of words, Is. 38. 19, *the living*,  
*the living*. Ecc. 7. 24 *deep, deep*, who shall find it? Is. 6. 3,  
 Jer. 7. 4.

Affirmative particles are אָבֵל *truly*, Gen. 42. 21 אָבֵל  
 אֲנַחְנוּ אֲשָׁמִים אֲנַחְנוּ *verily we are guilty*; 2 S. 14. 5, 1 K. 1. 43;  
 later a particle of contrast, Dan. 10. 7, 21.—אֵף *truly*,  
*surely*, Gen. 26. 9 אֵף אֲשֶׁתְּךָ הוּא *in truth she is thy wife*.  
 1 S. 16. 6, Hos. 12. 9. So אָבֵן, Ex. 2. 14 אָבֵן נֹדַע הַדָּבָר *truly*  
*the thing is known*. Gen. 28. 16, 1 S. 15. 32, Is. 53. 4.

Rem. 1. Also various derivatives of אָמֵן, *e.g.* אֲמֵן *verily*,  
*in truth*, 2 K. 19. 17; ironically Job 9. 2; 12. 2 *verily ye are*  
*the people*. Also אֲמַנְם *id.* (always with interrog.), Nu.  
 22. 37, Gen. 18. 13, 1 K. 8. 27. So אֲמַנָּה, Gen. 20. 12,  
 Jos. 7. 20.

The word כִּי often strengthens. Gen. 18. 20 the cry of  
 Sodom כִּי רַבָּה (surely) *it is great*. Particularly in antithesis  
 after neg.: Gen. 18. 15 כִּי צָחַקְתָּ לֹא נַי, thou *didst* laugh.  
 1 K. 3. 22 לֹא כִּי בְנֵי הַחַי no! *my child is the live one*. And  
 so usually, Jos. 5. 14; 24. 21, Jud. 15. 13, 1 S. 2. 16 (לֹא = לֹא),  
 2 S. 16. 18 (לֹא = לוֹ last cl.), 1 K. 2. 30, 2 K. 3. 13 אֵל;  
 20. 10, Is. 30. 16, Ps. 49. 11.

§ 119. The oath.—אֵל, יהוה, אלהים, חַי אֵנִי *as I live*,  
*as God, Je. liveth*; but חַי נַפְשֶׁךָ, פְּרַעַה *as thy soul, Phar.,*  
*&c., liveth*. With pron. *I* and divine names the form is חַי,  
 otherwise חַי, cf. the curious חַי אֵלֶיךָ דָּן Am. 8. 14 *as thy*  
*god*, O Dan, *liveth*.—Jud. 8. 19 חַי יהוה. 2 S. 2. 27  
 חַי הָאֱלֹהִים, Jer. 44. 26 חַי אֲדַנִּי י', Job 27. 2 חַיִּי אֵלֶיךָ, 1 K.



sworn **כי** is often repeated, 2 S. 2. 27; 3. 9; 15. 21, 1 K. 1. 30, Jer. 22. 24, Gen. 22. 16. In **כי אם** the **אם** is sometimes merely conditional, *that, if*, 1 S. 14. 39, Jer. 22. 24, cf. Deu. 32. 40. In other cases the use of **כי אם** is peculiar. (1) 2 S. 3. 35 with 2 K. 3. 14 seems to show that the use of **כי** in the oath was customary without ref. to the pos. or neg. nature of the thing sworn (apod.). The **כי**, which may be repeated, merely adds force to the whole statement. (2) On the other hand, in such passages as Jud. 15. 7, 1 K. 20. 6, 2 S. 15. 21, the **אם** seems pleonastic. Its idiomatic use may in some way add force to the **כי**, though the origin of the idiom is difficult to trace. It can scarcely be the same use of **אם** as occurs after a neg. or exception, *but* (= "yes, if").

#### INTERROGATIVE SENTENCE

§ 121. The interrog. sent. may be nominal or verbal. See exx. below.—The interrogation may be made without any particle, by the mere tone of voice. 2 S. 18. 29 **שָׁלוֹם לְנֶעֱר** *is the child well?* 2 S. 11. 11 **וְאֵנִי אָבוֹא אֶל־בֵּיתִי** *and shall I go to my house?* 1 S. 21. 16 **הֲחָסֵר מְשֻׁנְעִים אֲנִי** *am I in want of madmen?* Gen. 18. 12; 27. 24, Jud. 14. 16, 1 S. 16. 4; 22. 7, 15; 25. 11, 2 S. 9. 6; 16. 17; 19. 23; 23. 5, 1 K. 1. 24; 21. 7, Jon. 4. 11, Song 3. 3. Less frequently in *neg.* sent., 1 S. 20. 9, 2 K. 5. 26, Job 2. 10. Omission of the particle is most common in animated speech, as when any idea is repudiated, and particularly when pron. is expressed; cf. Jud. 14. 16, 2 S. 11. 11, 2 K. 19. 11, Jer. 25. 29, Ez. 20. 31, Jon. 4. 11.

§ 122. When a particle is used it is generally put at the head of the clause, Gen. 3. 11. The simple question is oftenest made by **הֲ** (Gr. § 49). Gen. 4. 9 **הֲשֹׁמֵר אָחִי אֲנֹכִי** *am I my brother's keeper?* 24. 58 **הֲתֵלְכִי עִם הָאִישׁ הַזֶּה** *wilt thou go with this man?* Gen. 18. 17; 43. 27, 29; 45. 3, 2 S. 7. 5.—So before **יֵשׁ** and **אֵין**; Gen. 24. 23 **הֲיֵשׁ בַּיִת אָבִידָה לָנוּ לָלוֹן** *is there room for us to lodge in the house of*

thy father? Jud. 14. 3 **הַאִין בְּנֹת אֶחָיָה אִשָּׁה** *is there not a woman among the daughters of thy brethren?* Gen. 43. 7; 44. 19, Ex. 17. 7, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 9. 11, 2 K. 4. 13; 10. 15. —1 K. 22. 7, 2 K. 3. 11, Jer. 7. 17.

Sometimes **אֵם** (= *num*) is used as a lively denial, or when the idea in the question is repudiated or disapproved, Jud. 5. 8, 1 K. 1. 27, Is. 29. 16, Lam. 2. 20, Job 6. 12, 28; 39. 13; though in some cases the first half of a disjunctive question may be unexpressed, Am. 3. 6.

§ 123. The *neg.* question is put by **הֲלֹא**, Gen. 13. 9 **הֲלֹא כָּל־הָאָרֶץ לְפָנַי** *is not all the land before thee?* 4. 7; 20. 5; 44. 5, Ex. 14. 12, Nu. 23. 26, Deu. 31. 17. Or by **הַאִין** when the existence of the subj. is questioned, or when the pred. is a ptcp. (§ 100 *d*). 1 K. 22. 7, Jud. 14. 3 (§ 122 above), Am. 2. 11, Jer. 7. 17. Occasionally the elements of **הֲלֹא** are separated for the sake of emphasis, Gen. 18. 25.

Rem. 1. The interrog. particle, pos. or neg., may be strengthened by other particles, as **אִי** Gen. 18. 13, 24, Am. 2. 11, Job 40. 8, or **יִם** Gen. 16. 13.

Rem. 2. The part. **הֲלֹא** implying an affirmative answer is often = **הִנֵּה**, Gen. 37. 13, Deu. 3. 11 and often. In Chr. **הִנֵּה** is sometimes used for **הֲלֹא** of earlier Books, comp. 2 Chr. 16. 11 with 1 K. 15. 23. See 1 Chr. 29. 29, 2 Chr. 27. 7; 32. 32, and Sep. *idou* for **הֲלֹא**, Deu. 3. 11, Jos. 1. 9, Jud. 6. 14, Est. 10. 2, cf. 2 K. 15. 21. So Ar. *'alà*, which may be used with imper. Jud. 14. 15 is hardly to be read **הֲלֹאם** *here* (Targ.).

§ 124. The disjunctive or alternative question is put by **הֲ** in first clause, and **אִם** or **וְאִם** in second. Jos. 5. 13 **הֲאָרְצֵנוּ אִם לְצַרֵּינוּ** *art thou for us or for our enemies?* 1 K. 22. 15 **הֲנִחַדְלָה אִם נִחַדְלָה** *shall we go or forbear?* Or if *neg.* by **לֹא אִם** in second clause (or **אִם אִין** if **יֵשׁ** be in the first), Gen. 27. 21 **הֲאֵתָה זֶה בְּנִי אִסְלֵא** *art thou my son or not?* (cf. § 7 *c*). Ex. 17. 7 **הֲיֵשׁ אִם אֵין** *is Je.*

in our midst *or not?* Nu. 13. 20.—Gen. 17. 17, Jud. 9. 2; 20. 28, 1 K. 22. 6, 15, 2 K. 20. 9 (§ 41 c), Am. 6. 2, Is. 10. 9, Jer. 2. 14; 18. 14, Job 7. 12.—2 S. 24. 13, Jo. 1. 2, Job 11. 2; 21. 4; 22. 3, cf. Pr. 27. 24. The second half of the alternative is often merely the first in a varied form. Nu. 11. 12, Job 8. 3; 22. 3. Gen. 37. 8, Jud. 11. 25, 2 S. 19. 36.

§ 125. The indirect interrogation is made just as the direct, with no effect upon the tense. Gen. 8. 8 לְרֹאֵת הַקְּלוּי הַמַּיִם to see *whether the waters were abated*. 21. 26 לֹא לֵדַעְתִּי מִי עָשָׂה I do not know *who did it*. Deu. 13. 4 לְדַעַת הַיְשָׁנָם אֲהַבִּים to know *whether ye love*. Gen. 24. 21 לֹא לְדַעַת הַהֲזָלִיחַ יְהִרְכּוּ אִם לֹא to know *whether Je. had prospered his way or not*. Gen. 42. 16; 43. 7, 22, Jud. 3. 4; 13. 6, 1 S. 14. 17, 1 K. 1. 20. Exx. of disjunctive sent., Gen. 37. 32, Ex. 16. 4, Nu. 11. 23, Deu. 8. 2, Jud. 2. 22.—In the simple indirect sent. אִם occurs (after *to see, inquire, &c.*), 2 K. 1. 2, Jer. 5. 1; 30. 6, Mal. 3. 10, Lam. 1. 12, Ezr. 2. 59, Song 7. 13.

§ 126. The *answer* is usually made by repeating part of the question, or by the use of some word suggested by it. Gen. 29. 6 הַשְּׁלוֹם לּוֹ . . . שְׁלוֹם *is he well? . . . well*. 24. 58 אֵלַי . . . הֲתֵלְכִי *wilt thou go? . . . I will go*. 1 S. 26. 17 קוֹלִי . . . זֶה קוֹלָהּ *is it thy voice, my son? it is my voice*. Gen. 27. 24 אֲנִי . . . בְּנִי *art thou my son? I am!* 2 S. 9. 2 עַבְדְּךָ . . . הֲאֵתָה צִיבָא *art thou Ziba? thy servant!* Jud. 13. 11, 1 S. 17. 58; 23. 11, 12, 2 S. 2. 20; 9. 6; 12. 19, 1 K. 21. 20.

To הֲיֵשׁ *is there?* &c., the pos. reply is יֵשׁ, 2 K. 10. 15 (יֵשׁ begins the next clause, § 132, R. 2), Jer. 37. 17; and the neg. אֵין, Jud. 4. 20. The neg. reply to הֲעוֹד *is there any more?* is אֶפְסָא *no more*, Am. 6. 10, cf. 2 S. 9. 3. The neg. reply to a simple question may be לֹא *no*, Jud. 12. 5, Hag. 2. 12, 13. In Jos. 2. 4 כֵּן = *yes*, and Gen. 30. 34 הֵן = *well, yes* (cf. Ar. 'inna in the story Kos. Aghani, pp. 13, 14). In



the reply the word that takes up the point of the question usually stands first, being emphatic. Gen. 24. 23; 27. 19, 32; 29. 4, 1 S. 17. 58.

Interrog. sentences are made also by interr. pron. (§ 7, and the exx.), and by various particles. See Rem. 6.

Rem. 1. The disjunctive question very rarely has וְ in second clause, Nu. 13. 18; sometimes וְ Job 16. 3; 38. 28, 31, Mal. 1. 8, Ecc. 2. 19; and sometimes simple וְ Job 13. 7; 38. 32.

Rem. 2. In animated questions particles of interr. are sometimes accumulated, Gen. 17. 17 *or shall Sarah—shall one 90 years old bear?* Jud. 14. 15, Ps. 94. 9; or repeated 1 S. 14. 37; 23. 11; 30. 8, 2 S. 5. 19.

In Job 6. 13, Nu. 17. 28 the double הֲאֵם seems = *nonne?* In Nu. הֲמָנוּ לְיָוֵעַ means *we are finished dying = are all dead* (Jos. 4. 11, 1 S. 16. 11, 2 S. 15. 24), therefore: *are we not dead to a man?* (cf. v. 27). If הֲאֵם were a stronger form of ה, the sense would be: *are we to die (have died) to a man?* but such a meaning of הֲאֵם does not suit Job 6. 13.

Rem. 3. In the forms הֲהִי־ *is it that?* הֲלֹא־ *is it not that?* כִּי adds force to the question. 2 S. 9. 1; 13. 28, Job 6. 22, cf. Deu. 32. 30. Sometimes הֲהִי־ vividly posits a fact as ground for a real or supposed inference. Gen. 27. 36 *is it that they called his name Jacob?* = *well has he been called, &c.*; 29. 15, cf. 1 S. 2. 27, 1 K. 22. 3.

Rem. 4. The interrogation often co-ordinates clauses when other languages would subordinate; Is. 50. 2 *why am I come and there is no man?* = *why, when I am come, is there, &c.* 2 S. 12. 18, 2 K. 5. 12, Is. 5. 4, Am. 9. 7, Job 4. 2, 21; 38. 35.

Rem. 5. The form of question is much used as a strong expression of declination, repudiation of an idea, or depreciation of a consequence. Gen. 27. 45, 1 S. 19. 17, 2 S. 2. 22; 20. 19, 1 K. 16. 31, 2 Chr. 25. 16, Ecc. 5. 5.

Rem. 6. Some other interrog. particles:

(a) *Why? wherefore?* לָמָּה, וְלָמָּה, לָמָּה; וּמָדוּעַ, מָדוּעַ; *why not?* לָמָּה לֹא, מָדוּעַ לֹא.—1 S. 19. 17 רָפִיתִנִּי פָּכָה לָמָּה *why hast*

*thou cheated me thus?* Gen. 12. 18 למה לא הודת לי *why didst thou not tell me?* 1 S. 26. 15, 2 S. 16. 17; 19. 26. Ex. of מדוע Gen. 26. 27; 40. 7, Ex. 2. 18, 1 S. 20. 2; with neg. 2 S. 18. 11, Job 21. 4.—Ex. of למה *why?* Gen. 27. 45, Ex. 32. 11, Nu. 20. 4, Jud. 12. 3, 1 K. 2. 22. See Rem. 7.

Like the pronouns, למה is often strengthened by זה (but not מדוע). Gen. 18. 13 למה זה צחקה ש' *wherefore did Sarah laugh?* Gen. 25. 22, 32, Ex. 5. 22, 2 S. 18. 22; 19. 43, Job 27. 12, cf. Jud. 18. 24, 1 K. 21. 5, 2 K. 1. 5. See Rem. 8.—The simple מה or על מה and the like are often used in the same sense, Nu. 22. 32, Is. 1. 5, Jer. 9. 11, Job 13. 14, and all these interr. particles are used as words of remonstrance, surprise, &c., and as interjections.

(b) *Where?* אי (cons. of אי), אי, אי, &c.; *whither?* אי הבל אחיה Gen. 4. 9 *where is Abel?* Deu. 32. 37, 1 S. 26. 16. With suff. Ex. 2. 20 אי *where is he?* &c. Gen. 3. 9, Is. 19. 12, Mic. 7. 10, Nah. 3. 17.—Gen. 19. 5 אי האנשים *where are the men?* 18. 9; 22. 7; 38. 21, Jud. 9. 38, 2 S. 17. 20, 2 K. 2. 14.—Ex. of איפה *where?* Gen. 37. 16, 2 S. 9. 4, Is. 49. 21.—Ex. of מאין *whence?* Gen. 42. 7; 29. 4, Nu. 11. 13, Jos. 2. 4, Jud. 17. 9, Is. 39. 3, Job 1. 7, Ps. 121. 1.—Ex. of מאי *whence?* Gen. 16. 8, Jud. 13. 6, 1 S. 25. 11, 2 S. 1. 3, 13.—Ex. of אנה *whither?* Gen. 16. 8; 37. 30, 2 S. 2. 1, Is. 10. 3; cf. 1 K. 22. 24.

(c) *How?* איך, איכה; *by what?* בפה (by what? Gen. 15. 8); *how not?* איך לא 2 S. 1. 5 *how dost thou know that Saul is dead?* 2 S. 1. 14 *how not?* Deu. 18. 21, Jud. 20. 3, 1 K. 12. 6, 2 K. 17. 28, Ru. 3. 18. These particles are used in remonstrance, Gen. 26. 9, Jer. 2. 23; repudiation or refusal, Gen. 39. 9; 44. 8, 34, Jos. 9. 7; the expression of hopelessness, &c., Is. 20. 6. The form איכה *how!* usually raises the elegy, Is. 1. 21, Lam. 2. 1; 4. 1; but also איך, 2 S. 1. 19, 25, 27.

(d) *How many?* כמה. 2 S. 19. 35 *how many?* Gen. 47. 8, 1 K. 22. 16, Zech. 7. 3, Job 13. 23. Also *how much?* Zech. 2. 6; *how long?* Job 7. 19, Ps. 35. 17; *how often?* Job 21. 17, Ps. 78. 40, 2 Chr. 18. 15.

Rem. 7. The form למה is generally used before words

beginning with any of the letters אהע, in order to avoid the hiatus, see the ex. Rem. 6*a*. There are some exceptions, e.g. 1 S. 28. 15, 2 S. 2. 22; 14. 31, Jer. 15. 18, Ps. 49. 6.

Rem. 8. The particle אִיפֹא is likewise used to strengthen the question *who?* or *where?* &c. Gen. 27. 33, Ex. 33. 16, Jud. 9. 38, Hos. 13. 10, Is. 19. 12; 22. 1, Job 17. 15; 19. 23.

## NEGATIVE SENTENCE

§ 127. The neg. particles are לֹא, אַל *not*, אֵין *there is, was, not*, פֶּן *lest, that not*, טָרַם *not yet*, אָפֶס *no more*, לְבַלְתִּי *not (with infin.)*, and some others, chiefly poetical.

(*a*) The neg. לֹא is used in objective statements and in commands. Gen. 45. 1 וְלֹא יוּכַל לְהִתְאַפֵּק *and J. was unable to restrain himself*. 3. 1 לֹא תֹאכְלוּ מִפֶּלַעַץ הַגֶּן *ye shall eat of no tree of the garden*. On neg. interrog. הֲלֹא cf. § 123.—The particle אַל is the subjective neg., used sometimes in commands, oftener in dissuasion, deprecation, expression of a wish, &c. (see Juss. § 63). Gen. 19. 7 אַל־נָא *do not my brethren do wrong*, cf. v. 8. Gen. 43. 23, 1 S. 17. 32; 26. 20, 2 K. 18. 31, Jer. 7. 4; 9. 22, Ps. 51. 13.

The usual place of the neg. is before the verb, but it may be placed before the emphatic word in the neg. clause. Gen. 45. 8 לֹא אַתֶּם שְׁלַחְתֶּם אֹתִי *it was not you that sent me*. Gen. 32. 29, Ex. 16. 8, 1 S. 2. 9; 8. 7, Nu. 16. 29, Neh. 6. 12, 1 Chr. 17. 4.

Both לֹא and אַל are used only with perf. and impf., cf. e.g. Is. 5. 27. On imper. with neg. § 60; ptc. § 100*d*; infin. § 95.

On mode of expressing *no, none*, cf. § 11, R. 1*b*.

(*b*) The particle אֵין is a noun which embraces the idea of *to be, being*, meaning therefore *not-being* (opposite of יֵשׁ *being*), i.e. *there is, was, not*. Its natural place is before the word (noun or pron.) which it denies, and in cons. state.

Gen. 20. 11 **אֵין יִרְאֵת א' בְּמִקּוּם הַזֶּה** *there is not the fear of God, &c.* Gen. 37. 29; 39. 11; 41. 8, Nu. 14. 42, Jud. 21. 25. The word denied may stand for emphasis before **אֵין**, in which case the neg. is properly in the abs. in apposition. Gen. 2. 5 **וְאָדָם אֵין לְעֵבֵד** and *man was not to till.* 2 K. 19. 3 **וְכַח אֵין לְלָדָה** *there is not strength to bring forth,* Nu. 20. 5. But the cons. form, being now habitual, mostly remains in any place except at the end of a clause. Gen. 40. 8 **וּפֹתֵר אֵין אֵתוּ** *there is no interpreter of it;* 37. 24; 47. 13, Jer. 30. 13, Pr. 30. 27.—Mic. 7. 2 **וְיֹשֵׁר בְּאָדָם אֵין** *one upright among men there is not.* Ex. 17. 7; 32. 32, Lev. 26. 37, Jud. 4. 20; 9. 15, 1 S. 10. 14, 1 K. 18. 10.

When pers. pron. is subj. it appears as suff. Ex. 5. 10 **אֵינְנִי נֹתֵן לָכֶם תְּבֹן** *I will not give you straw.* 2 K. 17. 26 **אֵינָם יֹדְעִים** *they do not know.* Gen. 20. 7; 31. 2; 39. 9, Jud. 3. 25, Jer. 14. 12. So when existence is denied absolutely, Gen. 5. 24 **וְאֵינְנוּ** *and he was not,* Jer. 31. 15; but a subst. is put in *casus pendens*, and resumed by suff., Gen. 42. 36 **יֹסֵף אֵין** *J. is not;* cf. v. 13; 37. 30. With a clause, Gen. 37. 29 **אֵין יוֹסֵף בְּבוֹר** *Jos. was not in the pit.* 44. 31, Nu. 14. 42.

(c) The telic neg. **פֶּן** *that not, lest,* is usually joined to impf. and prefixed immediately to the verb. It expresses the *motive* of action in previous clause, and hence is much used: 1. After imper. (juss., coh.) and neg. clause. Gen. 3. 3 **לֹא תִגְעוּ בּוֹ פֶּן־תָּמוּתוּן** *ye shall not touch it lest ye die.* 19. 17; 38. 23, Ex. 5. 3, Jud. 18. 25, 2 S. 1. 20, Is. 6. 10. 2. After words of *fearing*, expressed or understood. Gen. 32. 12 I fear him **וְהִכְנִי וְפָיִבוֹא** *lest he come and smite me,* 26. 7, 9. Gen. 3. 22 **יָדוּ פֶּן־יִשְׁלַח יְדוּ** 19. 19. Frequently in this sense after **אָמַר** *to say, think.* Gen. 38. 11 **כִּי אָמַר** *for he thought, Lest he die too,* 31. 31; 42. 4, Nu. 16. 34, Deu. 32. 27.—Also after *beware*, Gen. 31. 24 **לֵךְ פֶּן־תִּדְבַר** *beware not to speak;* 24. 6, Deu. 4. 23,

and often in Deu.—Sometimes in the sense of Lat. *ne* in an independent sent., Ex. 34. 15 פְּנֵיתֶכֶת בְּרִית *ne ineas pactum*. Is. 36. 18, Jer. 51. 46, Job 32. 13 *say not!*

(d) The neg. מָרָם *not yet* is usually joined to impf. even when referring to the past. Gen. 19. 4 יִשְׁכְּבוּ טָרָם *they were not yet lain down*. Gen. 2. 5; 24. 45, Ex. 10. 7, Jos. 2. 8, 1 S. 3. 3 (in *v.* 7 *rd.* perhaps יִדַע).—The word אָפַס (אָפַס *to be done*) means *ceasing, being done, no more, nothing*. Is. 5. 8 מָקוֹם מָקוֹם עַד אָפַס מָקוֹם *till there be no more place*. 2 S. 9. 3 הָאָפַס עוֹד אִישׁ *is there none still remaining?* Am. 6. 10 אָפַס . . . הָעוֹד עִמָּךְ *are there any still there? no more!* With prep. Is. 52. 4 *for nothing*, 40. 17 *of nothing*. Cf. Is. 45. 14; 46. 9, Pr. 26. 20 (prep.). In Zeph. 2. 15, Is. 47. 8, 10 אָפַסְי has junctive vowel (not suff.), I am, *and none besides* (me).

§ 128. The double neg. adds force to the negation. Zeph. 2. 2 לֹא-יָבוֹא בְּטָרָם *before it does not come*. Ex. 14. 11 הֲיֵשׁ קְבָרִים אֵין הַמִּבְּלִי אֵין *is it because there are no graves (מֵן is causative)*, 2 K. 1. 3, 6, 16. The prep. מֵן *away from, so as not to be, &c.*, has neg. force, and is often joined with pleonastic אֵין. Is. 6. 11 מֵאֵין יוֹשֵׁב *so that there shall be no (= without) inhabitant*, Is. 5. 9; Jer. 4. 7. Cases like Is. 50. 2 מֵאֵין מַיִם, Jer. 7. 32 מֵאֵין מָקוֹם are different: *from there being* (because there is) *no water, &c.*, comp. Rem. 5. The text of 1 K. 10. 21 is not above suspicion, owing to use of לֹא with ptc. (2 Chr. 9. 20 omits לֹא).

Rem. 1. The neg. לֹא is used as privative in forming compounds: (a) with nouns, לֹא אֵל a *no-god*, Deu. 32. 21, cf. *v.* 17; לֹא אִישׁ (one) *not-man*, Is. 31. 8; לֹא עֵץ (what is) *not-wood*, Is. 10. 15; לֹא דָבָר a *no-thing*, Am. 6. 13, cf. Hos. 1. 9; 2. 25. (b) With adj., as לֹא חָכָם *unwise*, Hos. 13. 13, לֹא חָסִיד *impious*, Ps. 43. 1, cf. Pr. 30. 25 *not-strong*, 2 K. 7. 9.—With prep. בְּלֹא *without*, Nu. 35. 22, 23 (inf.), Ez. 22. 29, cf. Isa. 55. 1, 2, Lev. 15. 25.—Job 26. 2 לֹא-בָחָה

the *not-strength*, *strengthless*, abstract noun for adj. (or to be resolved into לו לא־כח לא־אשר, Is. 5. 14.

Rem. 2. The neg. אל with juss. &c., sometimes expresses merely the subjective feeling and sympathy of the speaker with the act. Is. 2. 9 וְאַל תִּשָּׂא לָהֶם and *thou canst not forgive* them. Jer. 46. 6, Ps. 41. 3; 50. 3; 121. 3; 141. 5, Job 5. 22; 20. 17, Pr. 3. 25, Song 7. 3, cf. the strong ex. Ps. 34. 6. In strong deprecation with אל the verb is occasionally suppressed or deferred to a second clause, 2 S. 13. 12 אֲלֹא־אָחִי *don't!* my brother, v. 25 אֲלֹא־בְנֵי *nay!* my son. Gen. 19. 18, Jud. 19. 23, 2 S. 1. 21, 2 K. 4. 16, Ru. 1. 13, Is. 62. 6. In other cases the verb has to be supplied from the previous clause, Am. 5. 14 seek good וְאַל־רָע and *not evil!* Jo. 2. 13, Pr. 8. 10; 17. 12. The word is used absolutely, in deprecation of something said, 2 K. 3. 13, Gen. 33. 10. —2 K. 6. 27 אֲלֹא־וְיִשְׁעֶיךָ *perhaps, if Je. help thee not!* For אל 1 S. 27. 10 *rd.* אֲלֹא־מִי (Sep.) or אֵן *whither?* — In composition אל is little used, Pr. 12. 28 אֲלֹא־מָוֶת *not-death*, immortality.

Rem. 3. The particle אין frequently forms abbreviated circums. clauses, as אין מספר (there is) *no number, without number, countless*, § 140. In this sense לא in poetry, 2 S. 23. 4 בֶּקֶר לֹא עָבֹת a morning *without clouds*; Job 10. 22 *without order*, 12. 24; 38. 26, Ps. 59. 4; in prose, 1 Chr. 2. 30, 32 לֹא בָנִים *childless*. —Ps. 135. 17 the stronger אין יש, 1 S. 21. 9, cf. Job 9. 33.—From the semiverbal force of אין a late writer can say אין אתכם, Hag. 2. 17. In two passages, Jer. 38. 5, Job 35. 15, אין seems used with finite verb.—A contracted form is אֵי in composition, 1 S. 4. 21 אֵי־כְבוֹד *not-glory, inglorious*, Job 22. 30 אֵי־נָקִי *not innocent*. This is the usual form of neg. in Eth. On ל אין with inf. § 95.

Rem. 4. The form פִּירִישׁ occurs owing to the verbal force of יש, Deu. 29. 17, 2 K. 10. 23. With *perf.* פִּירִישׁ expresses what is feared *may have happened*, 2 K. 2. 16; 10. 23, 2 S. 20. 6.

Rem. 5. In Poetry. בל = לא *not*, Hos. 7. 2 ובל יאמרו and *they say not*. 9. 16, Is. 14. 21; 26. 10, 11, 14, 18. Often with niph. of מוט, Ps. 10. 6; 16. 8; 21. 8, &c. With inf.

Ps. 32. 9 בִּלְקִרְוֹב (when) *there is not coming nigh* (they do not come)—בִּלְאִי = לֹא or אֵין. With finite vb. Is. 14. 6, Hos. 8. 7; 9. 16 (Cod. Petrop. בל), Job 41. 18 (once in prose, Gen. 31. 20). With adj. 2 S. 1. 21, מְשֻׁיחַ בְּלִי מְשֻׁיחַ *un-anointed*, Hos. 7. 8 ptcp., Ps. 19. 4. With noun = *without*, Job 8. 11 בְּלִי־מַיִם *without water*, 24. 10; 30. 8; 31. 39, Ps. 59. 5; 63. 2, Is. 28. 8.

With a preceding prep. Deu. 4. 42 בְּבִלְי רֵעַת *without knowledge* (unawares), cf. Is. 5. 14, Job 38. 41; 41. 25.—מִבְּלִי *from lack of*, Deu. 9. 28 יִבְלֶה מִבְּלִי *from not being able*. Is. 5. 13, Hos. 4. 6, Lam. 1. 4. With another neg., cf. § 129 above.—In the same sense as מֵאֵין *so that there is not*, Jer. 2. 15; 9. 9, Zeph. 3. 6. In other cases = *without* Job 4. 20; 6. 6; 24. 8.—The form בְּלִיתִי once with adj., 1 S. 20. 26 *not clean*. With noun, Is. 14. 6 *without cessation*; suff. 1 S. 2. 2, Hos. 13. 4 *except me, thee*.

Rem. 6. The neg. without being repeated often exerts its force over a succeeding clause, 1 S. 2. 3, Nu. 23. 19, Is. 23. 4; 28. 27; 38. 18, Mic. 7. 1, Ps. 9. 19; 44. 19, Pr. 30. 3.

## THE CONDITIONAL SENTENCE

§ 129. The conditional sent. is compound, consisting of two clauses, the former stating the supposition, and the second the result dependent upon it (the answer to the supposition). Conditional sentences may be nominal or verbal, or partly nominal and partly verbal. The apodosis, in particular, may assume many forms.

In conditional sentences the verbal form will be used which would have been used if the sentence had been direct. The verbal forms vary according as the mind presents to itself the condition as fulfilled and actual (perf.), or to be fulfilled, and merely possible (impf.). In ordinary speech the impf. is most common both in the protasis and apodosis, but the mind may present to itself the condition as realised, in which case the perf. is used. This happens particularly in animated speech, and in the higher style. And, naturally,

when the condition is conceived as realised and actual, the result depending on it may appear carried with it, so that two perfs. may be used.

The conditional particles are chiefly **אם** *if*, **כִּי** *when, if, supposing that*, **לִי** *if*; less common **אֲשֶׁר** *when, if*, and **הֵן** *if*; neg. **לֹא** **אִם** **אֵין** *if not*, **לֹא** **לִי** *if not, unless*. These may be strengthened by other particles, **כִּי** **כִּי** **גַם** **אִם** (**אִם** **גַם** rare, Eccl. 8. 17).

§ 130. (a) When the supposition expresses a real contingency of any degree of possibility, the most common form is impf. in prot. and vav conv. perf. or simple impf. in apod., the impf. having any of the shades of sense proper to it (§ 43 seq.). The impf. must be used in apod. when the verbal form cannot stand first in the clause, as in a neg. sent., or when apod. precedes the protasis, cf. Am. 9. 2-4.—Jud. 4. 8 **אִם תֵּלְכֵי עִמִּי וְהִלַּכְתִּי וְאִם לֹא תֵלְכֵי לֹא אֵלֶיךָ** *if thou wilt go with me I will go, but if thou wilt not go with me I will not go*. 2 K. 4. 29 **כִּי תִמְצָא אִישׁ לֹא תִבְרַכְנֵהוּ** *if thou meetest anyone thou shalt not salute him*. Gen. 18. 28 **לֹא אֲשַׁחֵת אִם-אֶמְצָא** *I will not destroy if I find*. 13. 16 **אִם יִוָּכַל אִישׁ לְמִנּוֹת . . . גַם וְרָעָה יִמְנָה** *if one could count the dust, thy seed also might be counted*. Of course a ptcp. may take the place of impf., Gen. 43. 4, 5 **אִם-יִשָּׂא מִשְׁלַח** *if thou wilt let go our brother we will go down, but if thou wilt not let him go, &c*. Gen. 24. 42, Ex. 8. 17, Jud. 6. 36, 37, 1 S. 19. 11. So without **ישׁ** Deu. 5. 22, Jud. 9. 15; 11. 9, 1 S. 6. 3; 7. 3, 1 K. 21. 6, 2 K. 10. 6. But the prot. may be a purely nominal sent., and the apod. may take almost any form; 1 K. 18. 21 **אִם יְהוָה הָאֱלֹהִים לָנוּ אַחֲרָיו** *if Jehovah be God, follow him*; Ex. 7. 27 **אִם מֵאֵן אָתָּה הֵנָּה אָנֹכִי נִגַּף** *if thou refuse, behold, I will smite*. Gen. 42. 19; 44. 26, Ex. 1. 16; 21. 3, Jos. 17. 15, Jud. 6. 31, 2 K. 1. 10; 10. 6, Mal. 1. 6.



(b) Perf. in prot.—The mind may conceive or imagine the condition as realised and actual, in which case perf. stands in prot. with the same apod. as in (a): Jud. 16. 17 *אם גִּלַּחְתִּי וְסָר פָּחִי* if I be shaved my strength will depart; 2 S. 15. 33 *אם עֲבַרְתָּ אֵתִי וְהָיָה עָלַי לְמִשָּׂא* if thou go on with me thou shalt be a burden to me. Comp. Gen. 43. 9 with 42. 37. Deu. 32. 41, 2 K. 7. 4, Is. 4. 4; 16. 12, Mic. 5. 7, Jer. 14. 18; 23. 22; 37. 10; 49. 9, Obad. 5, Job 7. 4; 10. 14; 11. 13; 21. 6, Ru. 1. 12. Comparison of cases like Lev. 13. 53, 56, 57 shows that the use of perf. or impf. is merely a matter of mental conception. Comp. Lev. 17. 4 with 9, Num. 30. 6 with 9. Job 17. 13, 14. Probably the difference of use had become a mere matter of style, although the perf. has in it something more forcible and lively. Cf. Job 31 throughout.

In many cases the supposition refers to an actual past fact anterior to the speaker's position, or to the main action spoken of; or refers to something which shall have come to light through inquiry or inspection. In all such cases the *perf.* will be used in the protasis. 1 S. 26. 19 *אם י' הִסִּיתָה יָרַח* if Je. has set thee on, let him smell an offering (=if it be Je. that has); Jud. 9. 19 *אם בְּנֵאֻמַּת עֲשִׂיתֶם שְׂמָחוּ* if ye have dealt justly, rejoice. Ex. 22. 1, 2 *אם . . . יִמָּצֵא הַגֵּנֵב* if the thief be found in the act . . . if the sun have risen, &c. Deu. 17. 2, 3 . . . *אִישׁ אֲשֶׁר יַעֲשֶׂה* if a man be found who does evil . . . and has gone and served (having gone). With Ex. 22. 2 cf. 21. 36 (או'). Lev. 4. 23; 5. 1, Nu. 5. 19, 20, 27; 15. 24; 22. 20, Deu. 22. 20, 21, 1 S. 21. 5, Is. 28. 25, Am. 3. 3, 4; 7. 2, Ps. 41. 7; 44. 21; 50. 18, Job 8. 4; 9. 15, 16; 31. 5, 9, 21, 24, 33; 34. 32.

Narratives of past frequentative actions are also often introduced by *אם* with perf. (§ 54, R. 1). Gen. 38. 9, Nu. 21. 9, Jud. 2. 18; 6. 3. More rarely *אם* and impf., Gen. 31. 8, Ex. 40. 37.

(c) The protasis is often of considerable length, and has a tense-secution within itself which must be distinguished from the apod. of the whole sentence. This tense-secution is the usual one. Gen. 28. 20 אִם יְהִיָּה אֵל עִמָּדִי וְשָׁמְרָנִי וְהָיָה יְיָ וְהָיָה יְיָ . . . וְנָתַן וְשָׁבְתָהּ . . . if God will be with me, and keep me, and give me, and I return . . . then shall Je. be my God. Deu. 13. 2 פִּי יָקוּם נְבִיא וְנָתַן אוֹת וּבָא הָאוֹת . . . לֹא תִשְׁמָע if a prophet shall arise and give a sign, and the sign come true . . . thou shalt not listen. Nu. 5. 27 אִם נִטְמָאָה וְתִמְעַל וּבָאָה . . . if she has been defiled and trespassed . . . then shall come, &c. Gen. 43. 9 (secution of fut. perf. of imagination is that of impf., § 51, R. 2); 46. 33, 34, Jud. 4. 20, 1 S. 1. 11; 12. 14, 15; 17. 9, 2 S. 15. 34, 1 K. 9. 6; 11. 38; 12. 7.

Rem. 1. Additional exx.—אִם and impf. in prot., with vav perf. in apod.: Gen. 24. 8; 32. 9, Ex. 13. 13; 21. 5, 6; 21. 11, Nu. 21. 2, Jud. 14. 12, 13; 21. 21, 1 S. 12. 15; 20. 6, 1 K. 6. 12; coh. after אִם Job 16. 6. With impf. in apod.: Gen. 30. 31; 42. 37, Ex. 20. 25, 1 S. 12. 25, 1 K. 1. 52, Is. 1. 18–20; 7. 9; 10. 22, Am. 5. 22; 9. 2–4, Ps. 50. 12. With כִּי in prot.: Gen. 32. 18; 46. 33, Ex. 21. 2, 7, 20, 22, 26, 28; 22. 4, 6, 9, Deu. 13. 13; 15. 16; 19. 16 seq., Josh. 8. 5, 1 S. 20. 13, 2 S. 7. 12, 1 K. 8. 46, 2 K. 18. 22, Jer. 23. 33, Hos. 9. 16, Ps. 23. 4; 37. 24; 75. 3, Job 7. 13. With אֲשֶׁר, Lev. 4. 22, Josh. 4. 21, 1 K. 8. 31.—Various forms of apod.: Gen. 4. 7; 24. 49; 27. 46; 30. 1; 31. 50, Ex. 8. 17; 10. 4; 33. 15, Jud. 9. 15, 1 S. 19. 11; 20. 7, 21; 21. 10, Is. 1. 15; 43. 2, Jer. 26. 15, Ps. 139. 8. Ex. 8. 22 (וְהָיָה in prot.).

Rem. 2. Impf. with simple vav in apod. is less common, Gen. 13. 9, Josh. 20. 5.

Rem. 3. The prot. is often strengthened by inf. abs., but only with אִם and impf., not with כִּי nor with perf. Ex. 21. 5; 22. 3, 11, 12, 16, Nu. 21. 2, Deu. 8. 19, Jud. 11. 30, 1 S. 1. 11; 20. 6, 7, 9, 21 (§ 86). So with הִנֵּה Is. 54. 15. The אִם may be strengthened by כִּי.—Inf. abs.

with perf. after לֹא 1 S. 14. 30.—The apod. is also many times strengthened by כִּי, Is. 7. 9, Jer. 22. 24.

Rem. 4. Instead of the natural calm apod. with vav perf. or impf. the more animated perf. (of certainty, § 41) may occur, expressing the immediateness or certainty of the result; 1 S. 2 16 וְאִם לֹא לִקְחָתִי and if not, *I will take it*. Nu. 32. 23, Jud. 15. 7, Job 20. 14, Ps. 127. 1. Comp. vav conv. impf., Ps. 59. 16, Job 19. 18. Two perfs. Pr. 9. 12; with פָּאֲשֶׁר Gen. 43. 14, Est. 4. 16; cf. Mic. 7. 8.—Cases like Nu. 16. 29, 1 S. 6. 9, 1 K. 22. 28 are different, being elliptical. 1 S. 6. 9 if it go up by Beth. הוּא עָשָׂה *he has done it* = ye shall know *that he*, &c.; cf. next clause.

Rem. 5. The conditional particle usually stands first, the order being, particle, verb, subj.; but words may come between part. and verb if emphatic, and oftener with אִם than כִּי. In the casuistry of the Law (P) the *subj.* curiously precedes the particle in the principal clause. Lev. 4. 2 נִפְשׁ פִּי־תִחַטָּא, Lev. 5. 1, 4, 15; 7. 21; 12. 2; 13. 2 and often; Num. 9. 10; 27. 8; 30. 3, 4; cf. Ez. 14. 9, 13; 18. 5, 18; 33. 2, 6, 9. In subordinate clauses the usual order is found, Lev. 13. 42, &c. Comp. the older order Ex. 22. 4, 5, 6, 9, 13, and often; but cf. Is. 28. 15, 18, 1 K. 8. 37, Ps. 62. 11. In the group of Laws Ex. 21 *seq.* the principal supposition is made by כִּי and the subordinate details follow with אִם or וְאִם, Ex. 21. 2–5, 7–11, &c.

§ 131. Hypothetical sent.—Actions not realised in the past, or considered not realisable (or unlikely) in the pres. or fut. may be made the subject of supposition. In this case לוֹ (לְאִ) *if*, and לוֹלִי (לוֹלִיא) *if not, unless*, are used. (a) In the case of past actions the perf. stands both in prot. and apod. (§ 39 *d*). Jud. 13. 23 לֹא לְקַח לָנוּ לְהַכְמִיתָנוּ לוֹ *if he had wished to kill us he would not have taken*, 8. 19; Gen. 31. 42 לוֹלִי אֱלֹהֵי אָבִי הָיָה לִי כִּי עָתָה שְׁלַחְתָּנִי *unless the God of my father had been for me, surely thou hadst sent me away empty*, 43. 10.—Nu. 22. 33 (*rd.* לוֹלִי), Jud. 14. 18, 1 S. 14. 30 (apod. interrog.); 25. 34, 2 S. 2. 27, Is. 1. 9, Ps.

94. 17; 119. 92 (both nominal prot.); 106. 23. Nu. 22. 29 may be opt., or, *if there had been . . . I would have slain*. See Opt. sent.

(b) When supposition refers to pres. or fut. the apod. is usually impf., 2 S. 18. 12 לָא אָנֹכִי שָׁקַל . . . לֹא-אֶשְׁלַח יָדִי *if I weighed* 1000 shekels on my palms *I would not put forth* my hand, 2 K. 3. 14; Deu. 32. 29 לוֹ הִקְבִּיחוּ וַיִּשְׁפִּילוּ *if they were wise they would perceive* this, Job 16. 4; Mic. 2. 11, Ps. 81. 14. 2 S. 19. 7 (nominal prot. and apod.).

Rem. 1. Ez. 14. 15 לוֹ = אֵם, just as אֵם = לוֹ Ps. 73. 15.—Ps. 44. 21 perhaps, *if we forgot would he not search?* Job 10. 14. Gen. 50. 15 לוֹ impf., of action feared but deprecated. Deu. 32. 27 לוֹלִי impf. in prot. may be action generalised in past, or extending into pres. Ps. 124. 1, 2 seems to approach the Ar. *laula*, *but for* with a noun; at anyrate the rel. here is not a conj. as in Aram. *ellu lo d*, *unless that*.

Rem. 2. The אַז, עַתָּה in the apod., originally temporal, have become often merely logical. Both are good, Gen. 31. 42; 43. 10, 2 S. 2. 27, cf. Job 11. 15. 16, Pr. 2. 5. The כִּי strengthens, Job 8. 6; but in some cases this כִּי seems resumption of כִּי of oath, 1 S. 25. 34, 2 S. 2. 27. This kind of apod. occurs with no formal prot., the prot. having to be supplied from the connection; e.g. after neg., 1 S. 13. 13 *thou hast not kept*; (if thou hadst) *then he would have established*; or an interr., Job 3. 13 *why breasts that I should suck?* (if not) *then I should have lain down*; or a gerundive inf., 2 K. 13. 19 *percutiendum erat sexies*, *then thou wouldst have smitten* Aram. Ex. 9. 15, Job. 13. 19. This kind of apod. with אַז, אֵם, כִּי עַתָּה, כִּי is common in Job.

§ 132. What is equivalent to a cond. sent. often occurs without any cond. particle. (a) An idiomatic sent. of this kind is made by vav conv. perf. both in prot. and apod. This is chiefly in subordinate clauses. Gen. 44. 22 וַיֵּצֵב וַיָּמָת *if he leave his father he will die* (lit., and he

will leave, and he will die). Ex. 4. 14 וְרָאָה וְשָׂמַח בְּלִבּוֹ when he sees thee he will be glad in his heart. Gen. 33. 13; 42. 38; 44. 4, 29, Ex. 16. 21, Nu. 14. 15; 23. 20, 1 S. 16. 2; 19. 3; 25. 31, 2 S. 13. 5, 1 K. 8. 30; 18. 10 (if they said No, he took an oath of them), 2 K. 7. 9, Is. 21. 7, Jer. 18. 4, 8; 20. 9, Pr. 3. 24. This vav perf. may have any of the senses proper to it, e.g. frequentative, Ex. 16. 21; 33. 10, 1 S. 14. 52, 1 K. 18. 10, Jer. 20. 9.—Of course if vav cannot be joined to the verb, impf. will be used in either clause, Nu. 23. 20 וְבִרְדָּךְ וְלֹא אֲשִׁיבָנָה if he blesses I cannot reverse it; 2 K. 18. 21 אֲשֶׁר יִסְמְךָ אִישׁ עָלָיו וּבָא on which if one lean it goes into his hand. Deu. 22. 3, 1 S. 20. 13, Jos. 22. 18, Is. 29. 11, 12, Prov. 6. 22 (no and in apod.). More vigorously an imper. for second perf., 1 S. 29. 10.

(b) Two corresponding imper. often form a virtual cond. sent., Gen. 42. 18 זֹאת עֲשׂוּ וְחַיִּי וְזֹאת תֵּעָשֶׂה וְחַיִּי this do and-live (if ye do, ye shall), Is. 8. 9 הִתְאַזְרוּ וְרוּחֹתֵיכֶם תִּשְׁבְּרוּ though ye gird yourselves ye shall be broken. Juss. or coh. may take place of imp., Gen. 30. 28, Is. 8. 10. Two juss. are less usual, Ps. 104. 20: 147. 18, Job 10. 16; 11. 17, cf. Is. 41. 28.

Rem. 1. In the case of two imper. of course both are expressions of the will of the speaker; he wills the first and he wills the second as the consequence of the first. Similarly in the case of two jussives (§ 64 seq.). It is only to our different manner of thought that a condition seems expressed.

Rem. 2. Such words as אֲשֶׁר he-who, whoever, מִי, מִי אֲשֶׁר whoever, and similar phrases form virtually conditional sentences, Jud. 1. 12; 6. 31, Mic. 3. 5. And the conj. and without any particle may introduce a cond. sent., e.g. with וְיֵשׁ עִמָּנוּ, לֹא, עוֹד, &c. Jud. 6. 13 וְיֵשׁ עִמָּנוּ if then Je. be with us. So 2 K. 10. 15 וְיֵשׁ if it be (a larger accent should be on first יש). Similarly the neg. וְלֹא if not, 2 S. 13. 26, 2 K. 5. 17.—Is. 6. 13 וְעוֹד בָּהּ if there be still in it a tenth. 2 K. 7. 9 וְאֲנַחְנוּ מִחַשְׁשֵׁים. Cf. 2 S. 19. 8 בְּיָמֶיךָ יֵצֵא.

But in lively speech aided by intonation almost any direct

form of expression without particles may be equivalent to what in other languages would be a conditional. 1. Impf.—Hos. 8. 12 נִחַשְׁבוּ . . . אֶכְתֹּב *though I wrote . . . they would be considered*; so Is. 26. 10. Ps. 139. 18 אֶסְפְּרֵם *were I to count them*; 141. 5 *should the righteous smite*; 104. 22, 27-30, Jud. 13. 12, Pr. 26. 26; two impf. Song 8. 1. Coh., Ps. 40. 6 אֶנְיְדָה *if I would declare*, Ps. 139. 8, 9, Job 19. 18. With הִנֵּה, 1 S. 9. 7 *behold we will go* (= if we go), Ex 8. 22.—Cf. Ps. 46. 4; 109. 25; 146. 4, Is. 40. 30.

2. Perf.—Am. 3. 8 אֶרְיֵה *if the lion roars*. Job 7. 20 הֲטָאֲתִי *be it I have sinned*. Ps. 139. 18 *if I awake*. Pr. 26. 12 רְאִיתָ *seest thou*. Nu. 12. 14, Ps. 39. 12, Job 3: 25; 19. 4; 23. 10. With הִנֵּה, 2 S. 18. 11, Hos. 9. 6, Ez. 13. 12; 14. 22; 15. 4. And if perf. naturally also vav impf., Jer. 5. 22, Ps. 139. 11. Ex. 20. 25, Job 23. 13, Pr. 11. 2. Two perf., Pr. 18. 22, Mic. 7. 8.

3. The ptcp.—Is. 48. 13 קָרָא אֲנִי *if I call they stand up*. 2 S. 19. 8. Ptcp. with *art.* (or in consn.) *whoever*, 2 S. 14. 10, Gen. 9. 6, Ex. 21. 12, 16 and often. Frequently in Prov., e.g. 17. 13; 18. 13; 27. 14; 29. 21, &c. Particularly ptcp. with *all*; 1 S. 2. 13, Ex. 19. 12, Nu. 21. 8, Jud. 19. 30, 2 S. 2. 23, 2 K. 21. 12. With הִנֵּה 1 K. 20. 36, 2 K 7. 2, Ex. 3. 13.

4. Inf. abs.—Pr. 25. 4, 5 הֲגוּ סִינִים *if dross be removed*, 12. 7. Inf. cons. with prep., Pr. 10. 25 (2 S. 7. 14, 1 K. 8. 33, 35). Ps. 62. 10 בָּמֵאֲזֵנִים לָעֹלֹת *to go up* (or, *at going up* = if they are put) upon the balance.

#### THE OPTATIVE SENTENCE

§ 133. The *wish* may be expressed by impf. (juss., coh.), 2 S. 18. 32 אֶבְנֵר אֶיְבִי אֶדְנִי *may the enemies of my lord be as that young man*. With or without נָא, 2 S. 24. 14 נַפְלֵהֲנָא *let us fall*; 1 S. 1. 23 יְקַם י' דְבָרֹו *may Je. establish*. By imper., or part. (without cop.), Gen. 3. 14 אָרוּר אַתָּה *mayest thou be cursed*, Is. 12. 5 מוֹדַעַת זֹאת *may this be known*. With omission of verb, Gen. 27. 13 *on me be thy curse!* 1 S. 25. 24, Ps. 3. 9.

§ 134. Opt. particles.—The common opt. part. is לו, less usually אם. The perf. or impf. will be used according to reference. Nu. 14. 2 לוֹמַתְנוּ בְּאֶרֶץ מִ' *would we had died* in the land of Egypt; Nu. 20. 3, Jos. 7. 7. Is. 63. 19 לוֹא קָרַעַתְּ שָׁמַיִם *would thou hadst rent (i.e. wouldst rend,—perf. caused by the importunity. So 48. 18—hardly a real past).*—With impf., Gen. 17. 18 לֹא יִחְיֶה לֹא יִשְׁמַח *O that Ishmael might live*; Job 6. 2 לֹא שָׁקֹל יִשְׁקָל כְּעָשִׂי לֹא *O that my trouble were weighed* (apod. כִּי עָתָה). With imper., Gen. 23. 13; ptc., Ps. 81. 14.—Ps. 139. 19 אִם תִּקְוֶה לְרָשָׁע *O that thou wouldst kill the wicked.* Ps. 81. 9; 95. 7; Pr. 24. 11.

§ 135. An interrog. sent. with מִי *who?* expresses a wish. 2 S. 23. 15 מִי יִשְׁקֵנִי מַיִם *O that I had water to drink!* (lit., who will let me drink!). Ps. 4. 7 מִי יִרְאֵנוּ טוֹב *O that we saw some success!* Nu. 11. 4, 2 S. 15. 4, cf. Mal. 1. 10.—Particularly the phrase מִי יִתֵּן *who will give?* 2 S. 19. 1 מִי יִתֵּן מוֹתִי אֲנִי תַחֲתֶיךָ *would that I had died for thee!* Ex. 16. 3. With impf., Job 6. 8 מִי יִתֵּן תְּבוּאָה שְׁאֵלָתִי *O that my request might come!* Job 13. 5; 14. 13.

Rem. 1. The opt. sense of אם, לו, has arisen out of the conditional use; cf. Gen. 24. 42, Ex. 32. 32, where the transition is seen.

Rem. 2. A rare opt. part. is אֲחִלִּי, אֲחִלִּי (out of אֲחִי and לֹא=לִי), 2 K. 5. 3, Ps. 119. 5 (אֲחִי in apod.).

Rem. 3. The consn. of מִי יִתֵּן varies. (1) One acc., Jud. 9. 29, Deu. 28. 67, Ps. 14. 7; 55. 7, Job 14. 4; 29. 2 (suff.), 31. 31, 35 (ptcp.). (2) Two acc., Nu. 11. 29, Jer. 8. 23; 9. 1 (verbs of *granting*, 2 acc. § 78, R. 1; unless the consn. be *who will set me in the wild, (in) a lodge*, as Jos. 15. 19, Jud. 1. 15 where אֶרֶץ might be acc. of place). (3) inf. cons. 2 S. 19. 1, Ex. 16. 3; acc. and inf., Job 11. 5 מִי יִתֵּן אֱלֹהִים דַּבֵּר *that God would speak* (anomalous order perhaps due to emph. on *God*). (4) Simple impf., Job 6. 8; 13. 5; 14. 13; impf. with vav, Job 19. 23; vav conv. perf., Deu. 5. 26

*O that this mind of theirs might be to them* (always), to fear, &c. With perf. Job 23. 3 (stative v.).

### CONJUNCTIVE SENTENCE

§ 136. The uses of the conjunction *and* are various. On vav conv., § 46 *seq.* On vav of purpose after imper. &c., § 64 *seq.* On vav apod. in conditional sent., § 130 *seq.*; after *casus pendens*, &c., § 50, 56. On various senses of vav in circumstantial cl., § 137. On vav of equation, § 151.

The conjunc. vav, used to connect words, sometimes stands before each when there is a number of them: Gen. 20. 14; 24. 35, Deu. 12. 18; 14. 5, Jos. 7. 24, 1 S. 13. 20, Hos. 2. 20, 21, Jer. 42. 1; or only with the concluding words of a series, Gen. 13. 2, 2 K. 23. 5, *e.g.* with the last of three; or only with second, Deu. 29. 22, Job 42. 9; or sometimes the words are disposed in pairs, Hos. 2. 7.

*Both . . . and* is expressed by גַּם . . . גַּם or וְגַם . . . גַּם. Gen. 24. 25 גַּם־מִסְפּוּא גַּם־תֶּבֶן *both* straw *and* provender. Or with several words, 43. 8 גַּם־אֶנְחָנוּ גַּם־אֶתָּה גַּם־טַפֵּנוּ *both* we *and* thou *and* our children. Jud. 8. 22.—1 S. 2. 26 גַּם־עַמִּי *both* with Je. *and* with men.—Gen. 44. 16; 47. 3, 19, Nu. 18. 3, Zeph. 2. 14.—Gen. 24. 44, 1 S. 12. 14; 26. 25. When influenced by a *neg.* this *both . . . and* becomes *neither . . . nor*, Nu. 23. 25, 1 S. 20. 27; 21. 9, 1 K. 3. 26, cf. 1 S. 16. 8 *neither* this one, &c. Less commonly and mainly later וְ . . . וְ is *both . . . and*. Ps. 76. 7 נִרְדָּם וְרֶכֶב וְסוּס *both* chariot *and* horse are sunk into sleep. Nu. 9. 14, Jer. 32. 20 *both* in Isr. *and*, &c., Dan. 8. 13, Job 34. 29.

Rem. 1. For the various uses of *and* the Lexicon must be consulted. (a) It occasionally has the sense of *also*, Hos. 8. 6 הָיָה וְ, 2 S. 1. 23 *also* in their death.

(b) There is a dislike to begin a sentence without *and*, hence even Books are commenced with it, Ex. 1. 1, Ru. 1. 1. Hence also speeches begin with it, Jos. 22. 28



וַנֹּאמֶר וְהָיָה and we said, *It shall happen*. Jer. 9. 21, so probably Is. 2. 2.

(c) The *and* has a sort of exegetical force, with a certain emphasis on the word that explains, Ps. 74. 11 thy hand *and* (even) thy right hand. Ps. 85. 9 to his people *and* to his saints. Zech. 9. 9 *and* on a colt. Ps. 72. 12 the poor *and he that* (*i.e.* who) has no helper. Often with the sense *and that*, Am. 3. 11 a foe וְסָבִיב *and that* round about the land; 4. 10 *and that* into your nostrils. Jud. 7. 22, Is. 57. 11, Jer. 15. 13, Zech. 7. 5, Neh. 8. 13, 1 Chr. 9. 27, 2 Chr. 29. 27, Ecc. 8. 2. Comp. 2 S. 13. 20 וַיִּשְׁמָחָה, Ps. 68. 10 וְנִלְאָה, Lam. 3. 26 וְדוֹכַח־מִי וְנִלְאָה *and that* in silence. Somewhat different 2 S. 3. 39 וְכִשְׁמֵחַ מֶלֶךְ though anointed king.

(d) The *vav* is common to introduce what is consequential or follows from what precedes, *so, then, e.g.* with imper. Jud. 8. 24 I will make a request וְתַנּוּ לִי Give me, &c. 2 K. 4. 41; 7. 13, Nu. 9. 2, Ez. 18. 32, Ps. 45. 12 *worship him*. Cf. Salkinson Matt. 8. 3 I will, וְטָהַר *be thou clean*, which is better than the bare טָהַר of Del.—Particularly in dialogue the *vav* attaches to something said (or understood) with various shades of sense, often introducing an interrogation. Jud. 6. 13 the Lord is with thee; וְיֵשׁ אֱלֹהִים עִמָּנוּ וְלָמָּה? *If Je. be with us, Why . . . ?* Ex. 2. 20 וְאַיִן? *Where is he?* Nu. 12. 14; 20. 3, 1 S. 10. 12; 15. 14, 2 S. 18. 11, 12, 23; 24. 3, 1 K. 2. 22, 2 K. 1. 10; 2. 9; 7. 19. Peculiar 2 S. 15. 34 עָבַר מִן־מֵצֵד אֲבִיךָ וְאָנֹכִי מֵאָז *thy father's servant—that was I formerly, &c.* In the specimens of letters preserved, the salutation and compliments appear omitted, and the letter begins וְעַתָּה *and now*, 2 K. 5. 6; 10. 2, as Ar. 'amma ba'du.

## CIRCUMSTANTIAL CLAUSE

§ 137. The *cir. cl.* expresses some circumstance or concomitant of the principal action or statement. Such a circumstance will generally be concerning the chief subject (whether gramm. subj. or obj.) of the main action, but the subj. of *cir. cl.* may be different, provided what is said of it be circumstantial of the main action—whether modal of it or contemporaneous with it.

The cir. cl. differs from acc. of condition (§ 70) in being a proposition. It forms a real predication, subordinate to the principal sent. in meaning but co-ordinate in construction. Though often corresponding to the classical absolute cases the construction is different.

The cir. cl. may be nominal or verbal, though it is chiefly nominal, and even when verbal the order of words is that of the nominal sent. (§ 103). In such a clause the subj. is naturally prominent, hence it stands first, the order being—*vav, subj., pred.* This simple *vav* may need to be rendered variously, as *if, while, when, seeing, though*, with a verb, or *with* before a noun. Besides the *and* a pron. referring back to the subj. of the principal sent. usually connects the clauses (see exx. below). Occasionally the subj. is repeated from the main clause, Deu. 9. 15 *and the mountain*, Gen. 18. 17, 18, Jud. 8. 11, 1 K. 8. 14.

§ 138. (a) The cir. cl. may be nominal. Gen. 11. 4 **נִבְנָה לָנוּ מִגְדָּל וְרֵאשׁוֹ בְּשָׁמַיִם** let us build a tower *with its head* in the heavens. 24. 15 behold Rebecca **וַיֵּצֵאת וְכַדָּה עַל־שִׁכְמָהּ** coming out *with her pitcher* on her shoulder (lit. *and her pitcher was, &c.*). 1 S. 18. 23 **הֲנִקְלָה הִתְחַתֵּן בְּמִלְךָ וְאֲנֹכִי** is it a light thing to be son-in-law of the king *when I am a poor man?* Jer. 2. 37 **תֵּצֵא יְדָיִךָ עַל־רֵאשֶׁךָ** thou shalt come out *with thy hands upon thy head*. Gen. 18. 12, 27; 20. 3; 24. 10; 37. 2; 44. 26, 30, Jos. 17. 14, Jud. 19. 27, Hos. 6. 4, Jer. 2. 11, Am. 3. 4-6.

(b) Naturally the graphic ptc. is much used in such descriptive clauses. Is. 6. 1 I saw Adonai sitting **וְשׁוֹלֵיוֹ** *with his train filling* the temple. 1 S. 4. 12 **וַיֵּרָץ אִישׁ וּמִדְּיוֹ קָרְעִים** there ran a man *with his garments rent*. Gen. 15. 2 **מִהִתְחַלְתִּי וְאֲנֹכִי הוּלָה עֲרִירִי** *seeing I go* childless? Is. 53. 7 **נִגְשׁ וְהוּא נִעְנֶה** he was oppressed, *though he was submissive*; cf. v. 12 *though (while) he bore*. Is. 11. 6 *a little child leading them*. Gen. 14. 13;

18. 1, 8, 10; 19. 1; 25. 26; 28. 12; 32. 32; 44. 14, Jud. 3. 20; 4. 1; 6. 11; 13. 9, 20, 1 S. 10. 5; 22. 6, 1 K. 1. 48; 22. 10, Is. 49. 21; 60. 11, Nah. 2. 8.

(c) The cir. cl. may be verbal with subj. first. Gen. 24. 56 **אֲלֵתְּאַחֲרֵי אֹתִי גִיּוּהָהּ הַצְּלִיחַ דְּרָכֵי** delay me not *when Je. has prospered* my journey. 1 K. 1. 41 the guests heard **וְהֵם כָּלוּ לְאָכַל** as they had just finished dinner. Gen. 26. 27 why are ye come to me **וְאַתֶּם שָׂנֵאתֶם אֹתִי** when ye hate me? Ru. 1. 21. Jud. 16. 31 *he having judged*.—Gen. 18. 13; 24. 31, Ex. 33. 12, Jud. 4. 21; 8. 11, Jer. 14. 15. Gen. 34. 5; Am. 3. 4–6.

§ 139. Small emphatic words like negatives may precede the subj., e.g. in the frequent **וְלֹא יָדְעוּ** *unawares* (lit. and they, &c., do not know), Is. 47. 11, Job 9. 5, cf. 24. 22, Ps. 35. 8, Pr. 5. 6. So frequently with **וְאִין**, Is. 17. 2 **וְאִין מִחֲרִיד** they shall lie down, *none making them afraid*, Lev. 26. 6. Is. 13. 14 **וְאִין מִקְבִּץ**, Jer. 9. 21 **וְאִין מֵאֶסֶף** 4. 4, 2 K. 9. 10, Pr. 28. 1, Is. 45. 4, 5, cf. Pr. 3. 28. In particular, it is characteristic to place the pred., when a prep. with suff., or a prep. with its complement, before the subj. Jud. 3. 16 **וַיַּעַשׂ חֶרֶב וְלָהּ שְׁנֵי פִיּוֹת** he made a dagger *having two edges*. 2 S. 16. 1 a pair of saddled asses **וַיַּעֲלִיחֵם מֵאֲתָיִם** *with 200 loaves upon them*. Is. 6. 6 **וַיִּעַף אֶחָד מֵן** there flew one of the S. *with a hot stone in his hand*. 2 S. 20. 8, Ez. 40. 2, Am. 7. 7, Zech. 2. 5. But also in other cases, Ps. 60. 13 **וְשׁוֹא תְּשׁוּעַת אָדָם** *for vain is the help of man*. But cf. Ps. 149. 6.

Rem. 1. The nominal sent. seems in certain cases inverted, pred. standing first, particularly in statements of weight, measure, &c. Gen. 24. 22 he took a nose ring **וַיִּקַּח מִשְׁקָלוֹ** *its weight a beku*. Jud. 3. 16 he made a dagger **וַיִּמְדֵּן אֶרְבֵּה** *its length a cubit*. The general rule in the nominal sent. is that the determined word is subj.; if both be determined the more fully determined is subj. Cf. § 103.

The view of pred. and subj. was perhaps not always the same as ours, cf. Amr, Mu'all. 1. 31.

§ 140. The cir. cl., however, is frequently introduced without *and*. Ex. 12. 11 מְתַנִּיכֶם חֲגָרִים ye shall eat it *with your loins girt*. Jer. 30. 6 מְדוּעַ רְאִיתִי מדוע ראייתי why see I every man *with his hands upon his loins?* Gen. 12. 8 וַיִּט אֶהְלֵה בֵּית-אֵל מִיָּם he pitched his tent, *Bethel being on the west*. 32. 12 פָּנָיו בּוֹא פָּנָיו פָּנָיו פָּנָיו lest he come and smite me, *mother with children*. Deu. 5. 4 פָּנִים בְּפָנִים דָּבַר face to face he spoke. Gen. 32. 31, Jud. 6. 22, Nu. 12. 8 מִפִּי לְפִי mouth to mouth, Jer. 32. 4, 1 S. 26. 13, Jud. 15. 8, Is. 30. 33; 59. 19.

Especially with shortened expressions. 2 S. 18. 14 בְּלֵב חַי עֹדְנֵי חַי into the heart of Absalom *when still alive*. Ex. 22. 9, 13 אֵין רֹאֶה וּמֵת . . . אין ראה ומת and it die, *none seeing it*, Am. 5. 2, and often, as Ex. 21. 11 אֵין כֶּסֶף אין כסף *without money*. Is. 47. 1 אֵין כִּסֵּא אין כסא *throneless*, Jer. 2. 32 אֵין מִסְפָּר אין מספר *numberless*. Hos. 3. 4; 7. 11. Ps. 88. 5. Gen. 43. 3, 5.

Rem. 1. It is possible that such phrases as *face to face*, אֶפְסִים אֶרְצָה *with face to the ground* Gen. 19 1, *mouth to mouth* and the like, may now be adverbial acc. Originally at any rate they were real propositions, *face was to face, faces were groundwards, &c.* So Ar. says, I spoke to him *fūhu* (nom.) 'ila fiyya, *his mouth (was) to my mouth*; but also *fāhu* (acc.) 'ila fiyya, *with his mouth to my mouth*. Similarly in Gen. 43. 3 בְּלִתִּי אֶחָיְכֶם אֶתְכֶם is a conj., not a prep., *except your brother be, &c.*

§ 141. The subordinate character of the cir. cl. is generally shown by its place *after* the principal sent. In some cases, however, the concomitant event is placed first, with the effect of greater vividness. Gen. 42. 35 וַיְהִי הֵם מְרִיקִים . . . וַהֲרִיזוּ and it was, *they were emptying their sacks, and behold, &c., i.e. as they were emptying, behold*. 15. 17 וַיְהִי הַשָּׁמֶשׁ בָּאָה וַיְהִי הַשָּׁמֶשׁ בָּאָה

וְהָיָה and it was, *the sun had gone down, and behold, i.e. the sun having gone down.* 2 K. 2. 11; 8. 5; 13. 21; 19. 37; 20. 4, 1 S. 23. 26; 25. 20 (וְהָיָה = וַיְהִי, so 2 S. 6. 16), 1 K. 18. 7; 20. 39, 40. In ref. to fut. 1 K. 18. 12.

The relation of the two events (concomitant and principal) to one another is still more vividly expressed when the clauses containing them are placed parallel to one another, with no introductory formula like *and it was*. Gen. 44. 3 וְהָאֲנָשִׁים שָׁלְחוּ אֹרֶן הַבֶּקֶר אֹרֶן הַבֶּקֶר *the morning broke, and the men were let go, i.e. when the morning broke (had broken) the men, &c.* 1 S. 9. 27 וְשָׂמוּ אֶל אֲמֵר *as they were coming down S. said.* Gen. 29. 9 וְרָחֵל בָּאָה *as he was still speaking R. came.* Particularly when the subj. of both clauses is the same. Jud. 18. 3 וְהָיָה עִם-בֵּית מִיכָה *as they were at the house of Mic. they recognised.* Gen. 38. 25, 1 S. 9. 11.

Rem. 1. In some cases the accentuation wrongly makes the following noun or pron. subj. to the introductory וַיְהִי, *e.g.* 2 K. 20. 4, 1 K. 20. 40, Gen. 24. 15, 1 S. 7. 10, 1 K. 18. 7; other passages show that וַיְהִי is impersonal, 1 S. 25. 20, 2 K. 13. 20, 21, cf. 19. 37; 2 S. 13. 30.

Rem. 2. The construction is the same with or without the introductory formula. The second clause in the balanced sent. always begins with *vav*, the first most commonly without. It is the first cl. that to our modes of thought appears circumstantial. 1. When the first cl. has a perf. the two events were contemporaneous or the *circumstance* had *just* occurred when the main event happened. 2. When the first has a ptc. or a nominal sent. equivalent, the main event occurred during the action expressed by the ptc. 3. When both clauses have ptc. the two actions, main and subordinate, were going on simultaneously. Some ex. of perf. in first cl.: Gen. 19. 23, cf. 27. 30 for a more precise way of stating that the circumstance had *just* happened (cf. Jud. 7. 19). Gen. 24. 15; 44. 3, 4, Ex. 10. 13, Jos.

2. 8 (טָרַם with impf. = perf., Gen. 24. 15), Jud. 3. 24; 15. 14; 18. 22, 1 S. 9. 5; 20. 36, 41, 2 S. 2. 24; 6. 16; 17. 24, 2 K. 20. 4. Some ex. of ptcp. in first cl.: Jud. 19. 22 (11), 1 S. 7. 10; 9. 14, 27; 17. 23; 23. 26; 25. 20, 2 S. 13. 30; 20. 8, 1 K. 1. 14, 22; 14. 17 (? or, ptcp. = perf.); 18. 7; 20. 39, 40, 2 K. 2. 11, 23; 4. 5; 8. 5; 9. 25; 13. 21; 19. 37. With עָוַר Gen. 29. 9, 1 K. 1. 14, 22, 42, 2 K. 6. 33, cf. Job 1. 16–18.—In 1 K. 13. 20 the consn. is unusual יַהֲיִי הֵם יֹשְׁבֵימָהּ וַיַּהֲיִי דִבְרֵי יְיָ, cf. the usual one 2 K. 20. 4.

Rem. 3. On the use of perf. in attributive and circ. clauses where other languages would use ptcp. cf. § 41, R. 3; on similar use of impf. § 44, R. 3. The impf. is much used in circ. cl., cf. Nu. 14. 3, 1 S. 18. 5 went out *prospering*, Is. 3. 26 *sitting* on the ground, 5. 11 wine *inflaming* them, Jer. 4. 30 *beautifying thyself*, Ps. 50. 20 *sattest speaking*, Job 16. 8 *answering* to my face. The finite tense must be used with *neg.*, Lev. 1. 17 *not dividing*, Job 29. 24; 31. 34 *not going out*. In Ar. the circumstantial impf. may express an accompanying action of the subj. or one purposed by him, and Job 24. 14 יִקְטַלֵּנִי seems = *to kill*, lit. he will kill. Perhaps 30. 28 is rather, I stand up *crying out*, cf. Ps. 88. 11; 102. 14. See § 82.

Obs.—The use of this *and* of circumstance is common in language.

And shall the figure of God's majesty  
Be judged, and he himself not present!  
How can ye chaunt, ye little birds,  
An' I sae weary, fu' o' care!  
Played me sic a trick,  
An' me the El'r's dochter!

#### RELATIVE SENTENCE

§ 142. The rel. sent. may be nominal or verbal, *e.g.* Deu. 1. 4 the Amorite **אֲשֶׁר יוֹשֵׁב בְּחֶשְׁבוֹן** *who dwelt*. The Engl. relative sentence embraces various kinds of sentences, as—  
(a) the proper rel. sent., Gen. 18. 8 he took **בְּנֵהְבֵקָר אֲשֶׁר עָשָׂה** *the calf which he had made ready*, in which the ante-

cedent is determined; and (*b*) the attributive or descriptive sent., as Gen. 49. 27 Benj. is **זֶאֱבִי יִטְרַף** a wolf *which* ravins (a ravining w.), in which the antecedent is indefinite. In the former class of sentences the word **אֲשֶׁר** is expressed, in the descriptive and circumstantial sentences it is omitted. But the language does not strictly adhere to either side of the rule, e.g. Jer. 13. 20 **אֵיזָה הָעֵדֶר נִתְּנָלְךָ** where is *the* flock *that* was committed to thee? Ex. 18. 20. The omission of **אֲשֶׁר** where it should stand occurs mostly in poetry and elevated style. On omission of retrospective pron. cf. § 9 *seq.* In the following cases of omission of **אֲשֶׁר** it can be noted whether the omission be according to the rule *a*, *b*, above, or not.

§ 143. When the antecedent is expressed.—The **אֲשֶׁר** may be omitted—(*a*) When the retrospective pron. is subj., and whether this pron. be expressed (implied in the verb) or not. Deu. 32. 15 **וַיַּטֵּשׁ אֱלֹהֵי עֲשָׂהוּ** he forsook God *who* made him; v. 17 new gods *which* had lately come. Jer. 13. 20; 20. 11; 31. 25, Is. 10. 3, 24; 30. 5, 6; 40. 20; 55. 13; 56. 2, and often in second half of Is., Mic. 2. 10, Song 1. 3, Zeph. 3. 17, Job 31. 12. Particularly in comparisons, Jer. 14. 8, 9; 23. 29; 31. 18, Hos. 6. 3; 11. 10, Ps. 38. 14; 42. 2; 49. 13; 83. 15; 125. 1, Job 7. 2; 11. 16, Lam. 3. 1, Hab. 2. 14.—So in nominal sent., Jer. 5. 15 **גֹּי אִיתָן הוּא** a nation *which* is ancient. Gen. 15. 13 **בְּאֶרֶץ לֹא לָהֶם** in a land *which* is not theirs. Gen. 39. 4, cf. v. 5, Hab. 1. 6, Ps. 58. 5, Pr. 26. 17.

(*b*) When the resp. pron. is obj., whether it be expressed or not. Deu. 32. 17 **לֹא יָדְעוּם לֹא אֱלֹהִים** gods *whom* they knew not, cf. Jer. 44. 3. Is. 42. 16 **בְּדַרְךָ לֹא יָדְעוּ** in a way *which* they know not. Mic. 7. 1, Is. 6. 6; 15. 7; 55. 5, Ps. 9. 16; 18. 44; 118. 22, Job 21. 27. And in comparisons; Nu. 24. 6 **כְּצִמְחַת אֵלֹעִים נִטַּע יְהוָה** like aloes *which* Je. has planted. Jer. 23. 9, Ps. 109. 19, Job 13. 28.

(c) When the retrops. pron. is gen. by noun or prep.; Jer. 5. 15 גוי לא־תִדְרַע לְשׁוֹנוֹ a people *whose speech* thou shalt not understand. 2. 6 בְּאֶרֶץ לֹא עָבַר בָּהּ אִישׁ no one passed. Ps. 49. 14 זֶה דְרִבָּם כְּסֵל לָמוֹ this is their fate *who are confident*. Deu. 32. 37, Ex. 18. 20, Ps. 32. 2 with Jer. 17. 7, Job 3. 15. With omission of retrops. pron., Is. 51. 1 הַצּוּר הַצּוֹרֵם הַצֵּבֶתָם the rock *out of which* ye were hewn, cf. Job 38. 26.

§ 144. When אֲשֶׁר means *he-who*, &c., § 10.—In this case אֲשֶׁר may also be omitted. Is. 41. 24 תוֹעֵבָה יִבְחַר בְּכֶם an abomination is *he-who* chooses you. Nu. 23. 8 מָה אֶקְבֵּל לֹא קִבַּח אֱלֹהִים אֲשֶׁר יִשְׁעוּ בְּיָשָׁע אֲשֶׁר יִפְתֹּחַ לוֹ I will set in safety *him-whom* they snort at, Is. 41. 2, 25.—Jer. 2. 8 אַחֲרֵי לֹא־יוֹעִילוּ הַלְכּוּ after *those-which* profit not they have gone, cf. *v.* 11. Ex. 4. 13 שְׁלַח בְּיַד שְׁלַח send *through* (by the hand of) *him-whom* thou wilt send. Is. 65. 1 נִדְרַשְׁתִּי לְלוֹא שְׂאֵלֵי נִדְרַשְׁתִּי לְלוֹא שְׂאֵלֵי I was to be inquired of *by them-that* asked not, Jer. 2. 11.—Ps. 35. 15; 65. 5; 81. 6, Job 24. 19; 34. 32, 1 Chr. 15. 12, 2 Chr. 1. 4, Jer. 8. 13, 2 Chr. 16. 9, Ps. 144. 2, Song 8. 5 *she that bore*. Lam. 1. 14 בְּיַד לֹא אוּכַל קוּם the hands of *those-whom* I cannot withstand.

Rem. 1. Such cases as 1 S. 10. 11 מַה־זֶּה הָיָה, 1 K. 13. 12 אֵי־זֶה הַדָּרֶךְ הָלַךְ are probably to be construed: what is this *which* has happened? which is the way *that* he went? but in usage אֲשֶׁר is omitted; cf. Jud. 8. 1, Gen. 3. 13, 2 K. 3. 8. So usually Ar. *ma dha* what? The same consn. also in הוּא הוּא, &c., with omission of אֲשֶׁר, cf. 1 S. 26. 14, Job 4. 7; 13. 19, Is. 50. 9.

Rem. 2. Words of *time*, *place*, and occasionally of *manner*, are apt to be put in cons. state before a clause, which takes the place of a *gen.*, אֲשֶׁר being frequently omitted. See the exx. § 25.

Rem. 3. Phrases like: a man, *whose name* was Job, are



usually made thus : אִישׁ וְשָׂמוֹ אֵיבֹב 1 S. 1. 1; 9. 1. 2; 17. 12, 2 S. 3. 7, &c.; but occasionally אֵיבֹב שָׂמוֹ, a transposed descriptive sentence; Job 1. 1, 1 S. 17. 4, 23, 2 S. 20, 21. 1 K. 13. 2, Zech. 6. 12. The antecedent is indefinite (1 S. 17. 4, 23 is doubtful owing to the obscurity of אִישׁ הַבְּנִים), and אִשֶׁר seems nowhere expressed, though after a def. antecedent it might be, cf. Dan. 10. 1, and in Aram. 2. 26; 4. 5.—In cases of identification, as Gen. 14. 2, 8 Bela, *which* is Zoar, the usage is בָּלַע הִיא־צֶעַר, cf. *vv.* 3, 17, and often. Similarly with persons, Jud. 7. 1, &c.—On the other hand, in giving the geographical position of a place אִשֶׁר is used. Gen. 33. 18; 50. 10, 11, Jud. 18. 28, 1 S. 17. 1, 1 K. 15. 27, 1 Chr. 13. 6.

Rem. 4. The אִשֶׁר is sometimes omitted with *and* and a verb. Mal. 2. 16 וְכַפַּחַתְּ אֶת אֲנִי וְאֶת אֲנִי (I hate) *him-who* covers. Is. 57. 3 וְהִתְוַנְּהָה (seed of an adulterer) *and of her-who* committed whoredom. Am. 6. 1 וְכִבְאוֹ וְאִשֶׁר אִשֶׁר אִשֶׁר *and they-to-whom* the house of Is. comes (freq.).

Rem. 5. Some instances of omission of אִשֶׁר in later prose are, Ezr. 1. 5, Neh. 8. 10, 1 Chr. 15. 12; 29. 3, 2 Chr. 1. 4; 16. 9; 20. 22; 30. 19.—In 2 K. 25. 10 *rd.* prep. אֶת before וְכִי with Jer. 52. 14; and 2 Chr. 34. 22 *rd.* אִשֶׁר after *rel.*

Rem. 6. The text Zeph. 3. 18 reads: those sorrowing far away from the assembly will I gather, which (they) are of thee, (thou) on whom reproach lay heavy (lit. was a burden). Well. suggests מִשְׁאֵת . . . הַרְפָּה *so that no reproach be taken up* against her.

## TEMPORAL SENTENCE

§ 145. 1. The prep. (many of which are nouns in cons. state), *e.g.* ב, ל, כ, מן, לְפָנַי, אַחֲרַי, עַד, &c., are joined with the *nominal* form of the verb, the inf. cons. 2. These prep. become conjunctions when the rel. אִשֶׁר, כִּי, is added to them, and are then joined with the *finite* forms of the verb. 3. The rel. element אִשֶׁר, however, is often omitted, though not usually after strict cons. forms like לְפָנַי, &c.

(a) *When* may be expressed by ב, כ, with inf., or by כִּי, כַּאֲשֶׁר with finite. Gen. 39. 18 בְּהִרְיָמִי קוֹלִי *when* I lifted up, 24. 30.—4. 8 בְּשָׂדֵה בְּהֵיטָם *when* they were in the field, 45. 1.—Hos. 11. 1 כִּי נַעַר יִשְׂרָאֵל *when* Isr. was a child, Gen. 44. 24, Jos. 17. 13.—Gen. 24. 22 כַּאֲשֶׁר כָּלוּ לְשָׂתוֹת *when* they had done drinking, Jud. 8. 33; 11. 5. The form כָּמוֹ is more poetical, Gen. 19. 15. After designations of time the simple אֲשֶׁר may be *when*, Hos. 2. 15, Ps. 95. 9, cf. § 9 c. Also אם *if, when*, with freq. actions, Gen. 38. 9.

(b) *After*, by אַחֲרַי with inf., or אֲחֵרִי אֲשֶׁר with finite. Gen. 14. 17 אַחֲרַי שׁוֹבֵב מִהַכּוֹת *after* his returning, 13. 14; 24. 36.—Deu. 24. 4 אַחֲרַי אֲשֶׁר הִטְמָאָהָ *after* she has been defiled. Jos. 9. 16, Jud. 11. 36; 19. 23, 2 S. 19. 31.

(c) *Before*, by לִפְנֵי with inf., Gen. 13. 10 לִפְנֵי שְׂחַת י' *before* Je. destroyed Sodom, 36. 31, 1 S. 9. 15, 2 S. 3. 35.—Very often by בְּטָרָם, usually with impf. even when referring to past; Gen. 27. 33 בְּטָרָם תָּבוֹא *before* thou camest, 37. 18; 41. 50. Of fut., Gen. 27. 4; 45. 28. Occasionally with *perf.*, Ps. 90. 2, Pr. 8. 25 (*inf.* Zeph. 2. 2, text dubious). The simple טָרָם properly *not yet* (usually with impf., Gen. 2. 5, Ex. 9. 30; 10. 7), has also sense of *before*, with *impf.*, Ex. 12. 34, Jos. 3. 1, Is. 65. 24.

(d) *Since*, מֵאָז, with *perf.*, Ex. 9. 24 מֵאָז הָיְתָה לְגוֹי *since* it became a nation. Gen. 39. 5, Ex. 5. 23, Jos. 14. 10, Is. 14. 8, Jer. 44. 18. Once with inf., Ex. 4. 10. As prep. with noun, Ru. 2. 7, Ps. 76. 8.—As adv. *formerly, long ago, &c.* Is. 16. 13; 44. 8; 45. 21; 48. 3, 5, 2 S. 15. 34, Ps. 93. 2, Pr. 8. 22.

(e) *Then*, אָז, with *perf.* 1 K. 8. 12 אָז אָמַר שְׁלֹמֹה *then* said Sol., Gen. 49. 4, Jud. 5. 11, 2 S. 21. 17. Not uncommonly with impf., Deu. 4. 41, 1 K. 8. 1; 9. 11; 11. 7, cf. § 45. On אָז in apod., cf. § 131, R. 2. Jos. 22. 31, 2 K. 5. 3, 1 Chr. 14. 15.

(f) *Until*, עַד, with infin., or עַד אֲשֶׁר, עַד כִּי, עַד אִם, עַד אִם with finite, with ref. to past or fut. Gen. 27. 45 עַד-שׁוּב אָחִיךָ till thy brother's anger turn away. 27. 44 עַד אֲשֶׁר-תִּשׁוּב חַמַּת אַחִיךָ till thy brother's rage shall turn away. Gen. 29. 8, Ex. 23. 30, Deu. 3. 20, Jud. 4. 24, 1 S. 22. 3; 30. 4, 1 K. 17. 17.—Ex. of עַד כִּי Gen. 26. 13; 41. 49; 49. 10, 2 S. 23. 10. Of עַד אִם Gen. 24. 19, 33, Is. 30. 17. Of עַד אֲשֶׁר Gen. 28. 15, Nu. 32. 17, Is. 6. 11. By falling away of rel. the simple עַד often stands with finite, Gen. 38. 11, Jos. 2. 22, 1 S. 1. 22, 2 K. 7. 3, Ps. 110. 1, Pr. 7. 23.

(g) *As often as*, עַד (כִּי) בְּכִי with inf., 1 S. 1. 7; 18. 30, 1 K. 14. 28, 2 K. 4. 8, Is. 28. 19; once impf. Jer. 20. 8.

Rem. 1. The word *after* in some cases = *seeing that* Gen. 41. 39, Jos. 7. 8, Jud. 11. 36, 2 S. 19. 31, cf. Ezr. 9. 13 (common in post-biblical Heb.). *After* has also a pregnant sense = *after the death of*, or *departure of* (Ar. *ba'd*). Gen. 24. 67 אַחֲרַי אִמּוֹ after his mother. Job 21. 21, Pr. 20. 7. Frequent in Ecc., אַחֲרַי when I am gone. Cf. לְפָנַי before I came, Gen. 30. 30. In Lev. 25. 48, 1 S. 5. 9 אַחֲרַי with finite tense. Jos. 2. 7 בְּאֲשֶׁר אַחֲרַי after when, pleonastic, if text right.

Rem. 2. Is. 17. 14 בְּמָרָם construed with noun. Ps. 129. 6 לְפָנַי before is unique.

Rem. 3. Some adverbs of time are: *when?* מָתַי, Gen. 30. 30; *how long, till when?* עַד מָתַי; with neg., *how long. . . not?* 2 S. 2. 26, Hos. 8. 5, Zech. 1. 12.—*still, yet*, עוֹד. The noun may be in *casus pend.*, resumed by suff., Gen. 18. 22 עוֹדָנִי עֹמֵד וְאֵב and Abr. was still standing, 1 S. 13. 7, cf. Gen. 45. 26, 28; 25. 6. With ptc. § 100.

Rem. 4. On the expression of *when, while* by the circums. clause, cf. § 137. On the expression of sentences like *and when thou overtakest them thou shalt say* (Gen. 44. 4) by two *vav perf.* cf. § 132; and such sentences as *and when he overtook them he said* (44. 6) by two *vav impf.* § 51, R. 1. In general cf. the circums. cl., the conditional sent., and sections on *vav perf.* and *vav impf.*

## SUBJECT AND OBJECT SENTENCE

§ 146. It is usually only clauses containing an infin. that are subject, and mostly to a nominal pred. (§ 90, R. 1). In a few cases a clause introduced by **כִּי אֲשֶׁר**, *that*, is the subj. to a nominal sent., 2 S. 18. 3, Lam. 3. 27, Ecc. 5. 4 (all with pred. *good, better*).

The object sent. is mostly introduced by **כִּי** *that*, and may be nominal or verbal. 1 S. 3. 8 **וַיִּבֶן עָלָי כִּי י' קָרָא לְנֶעֶר** and E. perceived *that Je. was calling* the child, Gen. 3. 11; 6. 5.—Gen. 8. 11 **וַיֵּדַע כִּי קָלוּ הַמַּיִם** knew *that the waters were abated*; 15. 8; 16. 4; 29. 12; in a long sent. **כִּי** repeated, 1 K. 20. 31.—Not so commonly in earlier books, but often in later, **אֲשֶׁר** *that*. 1 S. 18. 15 **וַיֵּרָא שְׂאוֹל אֲשֶׁר הוּא מְשָׁכִיל** and S. saw *that he prospered* greatly. Ex. 11. 7, Deu. 1. 31, 1 K. 22. 16, Is. 38. 7, Jer. 28. 9, Ez. 20. 26, Neh. 8. 14, 15, Est. 3. 4; 4. 11; 6. 2, Ecc. 6. 10; 7. 29; 9. 1, Dan. 1. 8. Also **אֲשֶׁר** *the fact, circumstance that, how that*. 2 K. 20. 3 **זָכְרָנָא אֵת אֲשֶׁר הִתְהַלַּכְתִּי** remember *how that I have walked*. 2 S. 11. 20 **אֵת יַדְעֵתֶם אֵת אֲשֶׁר יִרְוּ** *that they would shoot?* Deu. 9. 7, Jos. 2. 10, 1 S. 2. 22; 24. 19. So **אֵת כָּל אֲשֶׁר**, 1 K. 19. 1 **וְאֵת כָּל-אֲשֶׁר הָרַג** *how all he had slain*.

It is common for the logical subj. of the object sent. to be attracted as obj. into the governing clause. Gen. 49. 15 **וַיֵּרָא מְנוּחָה כִּי טוֹב** he saw *rest that it was good* (that rest was). 1 K. 5. 17 **יָדַעַת אֶת-דָּוִד אָבִי כִּי לֹא יָכַל** *that my father D. was unable*. Gen. 31. 5, Ex. 2. 2, 2 S. 17. 8. Gen. 1. 4, 31, Nu. 32. 23.

Rem. 1. After the verb *say, &c.*, the words of the speaker are often quoted directly. Gen. 12. 12 **וַאֲמָרוּ אֵשֶׁתּוֹ זֹאת** they shall say, "this is his wife," *v.* 19; 20. 2, 13; 26. 7; 43. 7, Jud. 9. 48, 1 S. 10. 19, 2 S. 3. 13, 1 K. 2. 8, Ps. 10. 11. Or with some equivalent for *say*, Ps. 10. 4 "there is no

God" are all their thoughts. But there is a tendency to pass into the semi-oblique form, as Gen. 12. 13 אָמַרְתִּי נָא אֲחֹתִי אָהָּ say, *thou art my sister*. Gen. 41. 15, 2 S. 21. 4, Hos. 7. 2, Ps. 10. 13; 50. 21; 64. 6; Job 19, 28; 22. 17; 35. 3, 14. This is usual in language—

Die Welt ist dumm, die Welt ist blind,  
Wird täglich abgeschmackter!  
Sie spricht von dir, mein schönes Kind:  
Du hast keinen guten Charakter.

Rem. 2. Even when words are given directly they are often introduced by כִּי (כִּי recitativum). 1 K. 1. 30 I swear saying כִּי שׁ' בְּנֵךְ יִמְלֹךְ אַחֲרַי "Sol. thy son shall reign after me." Jud. 6. 16 כִּי אֶהְיֶה עִמָּךְ Je. said, "I will be with thee." Gen. 29. 33, Jos. 2. 24, Jud. 11. 13, 1 S. 13. 11, 1 K. 11. 22; 21. 6, 2 K. 8. 13, 1 Chr. 4. 9; 21. 18; 29. 14. Cf. Gen. 45. 26. Jud. 10. 10, where כִּי only in second clause.—Rarer אֲשֶׁר recit.; 1 S. 15. 20, 2 S. 1. 4, Neh. 4. 6, Ps. 10. 6 (last words, though the sense, *one-who* shall not have misfortune, is good). Ps. 118. 10–12, 128. 2 are hardly ex. (Hitz.), cf. Is. 7. 9, Job 28. 1. The clause with כִּי as well as the direct quotation in R. 1 occupies the place of obj. in the sentence.

Rem. 3. The כִּי of obj. sent. is sometimes omitted, Ps. 9. 21 may know אֲנָשׁ הֵפִיחַ *that they are men*. Am. 5. 12, Is. 48. 8, Zech. 8. 23, Job 19. 25, cf. 2 K. 9. 25.

Rem. 4. A clause with *and* occasionally takes the place of an obj. sent. Gen. 30. 27 וְנִחַשְׁתִּי וַיְבָרַכְנִי אֲנִי I have divined *and = that* Je. has blessed. 47. 6 אִם-יֹדַעְתָּ וַיֵּשְׁבִיבָם if thou knowest *and there be = that there are* among them. Dan. 2. 13 the law went out *and = that* the wise men were to be slain (ptcp.). Nu. 14. 21, Is. 43. 12.—A usual brachylogy occurs with *command*, Gen. 42. 25 וַיִּצְוּ יוֹ' וַיִּמְלְאוּ Jos. commanded (to fill) *and they filled*, Jon. 2. 11, cf. Am. 6. 11; 9. 9. In Ar., God decreed *that* the Christians *were defeated*, for, should be defeated and they were defeated.

## THE CAUSAL SENTENCE

§ 147. A lighter way of suggesting causality is afforded by *and*, especially in circums. clauses. Ex. 23. 9, ye shall not oppress a stranger **וְיָדַעְתֶּם נַפְשׁ הַזָּר** *because yourselves know* the feelings of a stranger; cf. Neh. 2. 3. Cf. § 137.

Commonly used is **כִּי** *because*, Gen. 8. 9. Similarly, **אֲשֶׁר** Gen. 30. 18, 1 S. 26. 16, 1 K. 3. 19, 2 K. 17. 4, (both, Zech. 11. 2), Jer. 20. 17.—Also the prep. **יַעַן** coupled with rel. **אֲשֶׁר** or **כִּי**. Is. 7. 5 **יַעַן פְּרִיעֵץ רָעָה** *because he has purposed* evil. The phrase is affected by Is., 3. 16; 8. 6; 29. 13; elsewhere, Nu. 11. 20, 1 K. 13. 21; 21. 29 (always with perf.). Very common **יַעַן אֲשֶׁר**; 1 S. 30. 22 **יַעַן אֲשֶׁר לֹא הָלַכְו עִמִּי** *because they went not* with me. Gen. 22. 16, Deu. 1. 36, Jud. 2. 20, 1 K. 3. 11; 14. 7, 15 (always with perf.—except Ez. 12. 12?). Also **יַעַן** simply as conj., Nu. 20. 12 **יַעַן לֹא הֵאֱמַנְתֶּם** *because ye believed not*, 1 K. 14. 13, 2 K. 22. 19. As a prep. with inf., Is. 30. 12 **יַעַן מֵאֲסַרְכֶם** *because of your rejecting*, 37. 29, Jer. 5. 14; 7. 13; 23. 38, Am. 5. 11, &c.—only in the prophets and 1 K. 21. 20.

Rem. 1. Several prep. have causal force, as **עַל**, **מִן**, **בְּ**, mostly in composition with **אֲשֶׁר** or **כִּי**. Gen. 39. 9 **תַּחַת בְּאִשֶׁר אַתָּה אִשְׁתּוֹ** *because thou art* his wife; v. 23. Is. 43. 4 **עַל אֲשֶׁר הִמִּית יְקַרְתָּ** *because thou art dear*. 2 S. 3. 30 **עַל אֲשֶׁר הִמִּית** *because he slew*. Deu. 29. 24, 1 K. 9. 9; neg., **עַל אֲשֶׁר לֹא** 2 K. 18. 12; 22. 13. So **עַל כִּי** Jud. 3. 12, Deu. 31. 17 (nominal sent.), Ps. 139. 14. With rel. omitted in neg. sent., Gen. 31. 20, Ps. 119. 136. Often **עַל** with inf., Am. 1. 3, 6, 9, 11, &c.—So **תַּחַת אֲשֶׁר לֹא** Deu. 28. 47 **תַּחַת אֲשֶׁר לֹא עָבַדְתָּ** *because thou hast not served*. 1 S. 26. 21, 2 K. 22. 17, Is. 53. 12. So **כִּי תַחַת כִּי**, Deu. 4. 37.—Of the same meaning is **עַקֵּב אֲשֶׁר**, Gen. 22. 18; 26. 5, 2 S. 12. 6 (**עַל אֲשֶׁר** in next clause). So **עַקֵּב כִּי**, Am. 4. 12, 2 S. 12. 10. Without rel., Nu. 14. 24. For other forms cf. Deu. 23. 5, Jer. 3. 8.

Rem. 2. Repetition of **יַעַן** for emphasis, Lev. 26. 43, Ez. 13. 10, cf. 36. 3.

## FINAL OR PURPOSE SENTENCE

§ 148. Lighter ways of expressing purpose are—(a) The use of ׀ (simple *vav*) with juss., coh., e.g. after an imper., or anything with the meaning of imper., as juss., cohort. Gen. 24. 14 **וְאָשְׁתָּה בְּדָד הַפִּיטָה נָא** let down thy pitcher *that I may drink*. Cf. Is. 5. 19 after **לְמַעַן** in first clause. Similarly after optative, neg., and interrog. sentences. See §§ 62, 63. In this case the *neg.* purpose is expressed by **וְלֹא** with impf., or sometimes **לֹא** simply (**בֹּל** in poetry, Is. 14. 21).

(b) The inf. cons. with **ל**. Jud. 3. 1 **לְנִסּוֹת בָּם אֶת־יִשְׂרָאֵל** *in order to prove* Israel by them. The *neg.* purpose in this case is expressed by **לְבַלְתִּי הַכּוֹת־אֹתוֹ**. Gen. 4. 15 **כֹּל־מֵצֵאוֹ** *that whoever found him might not kill him*. Gen. 38. 9. Cf. § 95.

§ 149. More formal telic particles are—**לְמַעַן אֲשֶׁר** with impf., Jer. 42. 6 **לְמַעַן אֲשֶׁר יֵיטֵב־לָנוּ** *that it may be well with us*; oftener **לְמַעַן** simply, with impf. or inf. cons., Gen. 27. 25 **לְמַעַן תְּבָרַכָה נַפְשִׁי** *in order that* my soul may bless thee. Jud. 2. 22 **לְמַעַן נִסּוֹת בָּם** *in order to prove* by them, cf. simple **ל** inf., Jud. 3. 1 (in *b* above). Jud. 3. 2, Jos. 11. 20.—Gen. 18. 19, Lev. 17. 5, 2 S. 13. 5.—Gen. 12. 13, Ex. 4. 5, Deu. 4. 1, Hos. 8. 4, Is. 41. 20.—Gen. 37. 22, 1 K. 11. 36, Am. 2. 7, &c. The simple **אֲשֶׁר** is also common, Deu. 4. 10 **אֲשֶׁר יִלְמְדוּן לְיִרְאָה אֹתִי** *that they may learn to fear me*. Nu. 23. 13, Deu. 4. 40; 6. 3 (cf. *v.* 2); 32. 46. The *neg.* clause is best made by **אֲשֶׁר לֹא**, Gen. 11. 7, Ex. 20. 26; but also by **לֹא אֲשֶׁר לֹא**, Deu. 20. 18, Nu. 17. 5, and by **לֹא לְמַעַן לֹא**, Ez. 19. 9; 26. 20, Ps. 119. 11, 80; 125. 3, Zech. 12. 7.

In the same sense **אֲשֶׁר בְּעֵבֹר** with impf., Gen. 27. 10; more usually **בְּעֵבֹר** simply with impf., Gen. 27. 4, or inf.

cons., 2 S. 10. 3.—Gen. 21. 30; 46. 34, Ex. 9. 14; 19. 9.—  
Ex. 9. 16, 1 S. 1. 6, 2 S. 18. 18.

On  $\text{פֶּן}$  *lest, that not*, cf. § 127 c.

Rem. 1. The form  $\text{לִמְעַן}$  Ez. 21. 20; so  $\text{לְבַעֲבוֹר}$  1 Chr. 19. 3. On the other hand  $\text{לְבַעֲבוֹר}$  2 S. 14. 20; 17. 14.—Jos. 4. 24 *rd.*  $\text{לִמְעַן יִרְאֶתֶם}$  inf.

Rem. 2. In Ez. 13. 3  $\text{וְלֹבֵלְתֵי רְאִי}$  is not telic, but probably means, and after that which *they have not seen*; possibly  $\text{וְלֹבֵלְתֵי}$  should be *rd.* =  $\text{לֹא רְאִי}$  (1 S. 20. 26). In Ez. 20. 9, 14, 22  $\text{וְהָחֵל}$  is inf. niph.—Jer. 27. 18  $\text{בָּאוּ}$  seems euphonic contraction for impf., cf. 42. 10; 23. 14 should perhaps be pointed in the same way  $\text{שָׁבוּ}$  = impf. Ex. 20. 20, 2 S. 14. 14.

Rem. 3. The particles  $\text{לִמְעַן}$ , &c. are always telic, and do not express merely result. But sometimes the purpose seems to animate the action rather than the agent, Am. 2. 7, Hos. 8. 4, Mic. 6. 16, Ps. 30. 13; 51. 6.

Rem. 4. Peculiar, Deu. 33. 11  $\text{כִּי־יָקִימוּן}$  *that they rise not up* (=  $\text{מֵאֲשֶׁר}$ ). Ps. 59. 14  $\text{וְאֵינָמוּ . . . בְּלֵה}$  *consume . . . that they be no more*, cf. Job 3. 9  $\text{וְאֵין}$ .

### CONSEQUENTIAL SENTENCE

§ 150. Lighter ways of expressing consequence are the use of *vav impf.* and *vav perf.* Also use of simple *vav*  $\text{וְ}$  with impf. (juss.) after neg. sent., as Nu. 23. 19  $\text{לֹא אִישׁ אֵל וְיִכְזֹב}$  God is not a man *so that* he should lie. So interrog. sent., Hos. 14. 10.

More formal particles of consequence are  $\text{כִּי}$  *that*,  $\text{אֲשֶׁר}$  *that, so that*. 2 K. 5. 7  $\text{אֵלֵי שְׁלַח אֶלַי}$  am I God, *that this person sends* to me? And often in questions, Gen. 20. 10, Ex. 3. 11, Nu. 16. 11, Job 6. 11; 7. 12, Ps. 8. 5.—Gen. 40. 15 I have done nothing  $\text{בְּפִי}$  *that they should have put*. With  $\text{אֲשֶׁר}$ , 2 K. 9. 37  $\text{זֹאת לֹא־אָמְרוּ}$  *that they shall not say*, This is Jez. Gen. 22. 14, Deu. 28. 27, 51, Mal. 3. 19, Ps. 95. 11, 1 K. 3. 12, 13.—Ez.



36. 27 וְעָשִׂיתִי אֶת אֲשֶׁר תֵּלְכוּ I will cause *that ye shall walk* (sent. of consequence construed as object sent.).

## COMPARATIVE SENTENCE

§ 151. This form of sent. has usually כִּי־אֲשֶׁר in prot. and כִּי in apod. Gen. 41. 13 הָיָה כִּי הָיָה אֲשֶׁר פָּתַרְתִּי לָנוּ כִּי הָיָה אֲשֶׁר פָּתַרְתִּי לָנוּ כִּי הָיָה אֲשֶׁר פָּתַרְתִּי לָנוּ *as* he interpreted to us, *so* it was. Ex. 1. 12, Jud. 1. 7, Is. 31. 4; 52. 14, 15; 65. 8, Ps. 48. 9; cf. transposed order, Gen. 18. 5, Ex. 10. 10, 2 S. 5. 25.—Or כִּי with inf. or noun in prot., Hos. 4. 7 כָּרְבַם כִּי הִקְטִינִי לִי *as* they multiplied, *so* they sinned. Ps. 48. 11; 123. 2, Pr. 26. 1, 8, 18, 19, 1 S. 9. 13. (temporal).

In the prot. כִּי־אֲשֶׁר may be omitted. Hos. 11. 2 קָרְאוּ לָהֶם כִּי הִלְכוּ *as* (the more) they called them, *so* they went away. Jud. 5. 15, Jer. 3. 20, Is. 55. 9, Ps. 48. 6. In vigorous style the compar. particle may be omitted both in prot. and apod., Is. 62. 5. The two clauses are then often equated by *vav*, especially in proverbial comparisons. Prov. 26. 14 the door turns on its hinges וְעָצֵל עַל־מִטָּתוֹ *and* (so) a sluggard on his bed. Pr. 11. 16; 17. 3; 25. 3, 20, 25; 26. 7, 9, 21, Job 5. 7; 12. 11; 14. 11, 12. And sometimes without *and*, Pr. 25. 26, 28, Job 24. 19.

Rem. 1. In some passages כִּי *so* expresses the corresponding immediateness of the result or consequence of the prot. Ps. 48. 6 they saw *so* they feared (as soon as they saw, &c.), cf. Nah. 1. 12, 1 K. 20. 40.

Rem. 2. With כִּי . . . כִּי or וְכִי . . . כִּי the first word is usually compared to the second, *so* . . . *as*. Gen. 44. 18 כִּי־פָרַעְתָּ כִּי־פָרַעְתָּ thou art *as* Ph. (*so* thou *as* Ph.), 18. 25 כִּי־צַדִּיק כִּי־רָשָׁע the righteous *like* the wicked, Hos. 4. 9, 2 Chr. 18. 3. But sometimes the reverse, *as* . . . *so*, 1 S. 30. 24, Jud. 8. 18, Is. 24. 2, Jos. 14. 11.

## DISJUNCTIVE SENTENCE

§ 152. The conj. *and* often expresses our *or, nor, e.g.* after a *neg.*, the *neg.* denying the whole combination of words.

Gen. 45. 6 אין חריש וקציר *neither earing nor harvest*. 1 K. 17. 1 ומטר טל יהיה אם *there shall not be dew or rain*. Gen. 19. 35, Nu. 23. 19, Deu. 5. 14, Jud. 6. 4, Is. 10. 14, 2 K. 5. 25, Ps. 37. 25; 129. 7. Or more strongly וגם, Jud. 2. 10 לא ידעו אתי וגם את המעשה *nor yet the work*, 1 S. 16. 8, cf. 28. 6. The conjunctive *both . . . and* becomes disjunctive *neither . . . nor* when preceded by *neg.*, § 136.

The disjunctive *or* is expressed by או, Gen. 24. 49 על ימין או על שמאל *to the right or to the left*. 44. 8 איך נגנב כסף או *how should we steal silver or gold?* Gen. 24. 50; 44. 19, Ex. 5. 3; 21. 18, 28, 32, 33, 37, Deu. 13. 2, Jud. 21. 22, 1 S. 2. 14.

When repeated, או . . . או is *whether . . . or* (sive . . . sive). Ex. 21. 31 יגח ארבת יגח או *whether it gore a boy or a girl*, Lev. 5. 2. In the same sense אם . . . אם, Ex. 19. 13 אם בהמה אם איש לא יהיה *whether beast or man, it shall not live*. Deu. 18. 3, 2 S. 15. 21. So אם . . . אם, Gen. 31. 52, Jer. 42. 6, Pr. 20. 11. Less commonly ו . . . ו, Ex. 21. 16.

#### RESTRICTIVE, EXCEPTIVE, ADVERSATIVE SENTENCES.

§ 153. Restrictive particles are אך, רק *only, howbeit*. Gen. 18. 32 אך הפעם *only this time*. Ex. 10. 17, Jud. 6. 39; 16. 28. Gen. 27. 13 אך שמע בקולי *only, however, listen to my voice*. Gen. 20. 12 *only not*. Ex. 12. 16, Nu. 22. 20, 1 S. 8. 9 (אך פו); 12. 20; 18. 8; 20. 39, 1 K. 17. 13. The use of רק is similar. Gen. 6. 5; 14. 24; 24. 8, Deu. 2. 28, Jud. 14. 16, 1 S. 1. 13, 1 K. 14. 8, Am. 3. 2. Both combined, Nu. 12. 2 הֲרַק אֶךְ בְּמִשְׁחָה דְּבַר י' *similarly אָפֶס*, Nu. 22. 35, cf. v. 20; 23. 13. On the affirmative force of אך &c., cf. § 118.

§ 154. Particles modifying in the way of exception something preceding are, בלתי אם *saving that*, בלתי or בלתי alone, כי אם *except*. Am. 9. 8 לא אשמיד כי לא *saving*

*that* I will not destroy. Nu. 13. 28, Deu. 15. 4, Jud. 4. 9. And אַפֶּס simply, 2 S. 12. 14.<sup>1</sup>—Am. 3. 3 shall two walk together נִוְעָרוּ אִם בְּלִתִּי אִם *except* they have met? Gen. 43. 3 בְּלִתִּי אֶחֱיֶכֶם אֶתְכֶם *except* your brother be with you, Is. 10. 4. There is often ellipse of the verb or its equivalent, Gen. 47. 18 *except our* bodies, Jud. 7. 14.—Am. 3. 7 Je. doeth nothing אִם-גָּלָה סוּדוֹ כִּי *except* he have revealed his counsel. Gen. 32. 27 כִּי אִם-בְּרַכְתֵּנִי *except* thou bless me. Ru. 3. 18, Is. 55. 10, Lev. 22. 6. And with ellipse or continuation of the verb, Gen. 28. 17; 39. 6, 9 *except* the bread, *except* thee, 1 S. 30. 17, 2 K. 4. 2. Naturally *except* chiefly follows a neg. or interrog. with neg. force, Mic. 6. 8, Is. 42. 19.

§ 155. The simple *vav* is often used where we employ adversative particles. Ps. 2. 6 וְאֲנִי נָסַכְתִּי *but* I have set. Gen. 17. 5 וְהָיָה שְׁמִיךָ *but* thy name shall be. Gen. 2. 17, 20; 3. 3; 37. 30; 42. 10, Ecc. 11. 9 *but know*. A more pronounced adversative is וְאוֹלָם, וְאוֹלָם *but, howbeit*. Gen. 28. 19, Ex. 9. 16, Nu. 14. 21, 1 K. 20. 23, Mic. 3. 8, Job 2. 5; 5. 8; 11. 5; 13. 3, 4; 14. 18. So גַּם is a correlative adversative, Am. 4. 6, 7 אֲנִי נִתַּתִּי וְגַם *and I on my part*. Gen. 20. 6, Jud. 2. 21, Ps. 52. 7, Job 7. 11, Pr. 1. 26.

After a neg. *but* is expressed by אִם, כִּי, Gen. 32. 29 לֹא יַעֲקֹב . . . כִּי אִם יִשְׂרָאֵל *not Jacob but Israel*. 1 S. 21. 5, 2 K. 23. 9, Jer. 16. 14, 15. Or simply by כִּי, Gen. 45. 8 לֹא אַתֶּם שְׁלַחְתֶּם כִּי א' *it is not you who sent but God*. 1 K. 21. 15, 2 Chr. 20. 15.

---

<sup>1</sup> When כִּי belongs to a phrase it may be omitted before another כִּי with a different sense, or the one כִּי serves both uses, e.g. כִּי אַף כִּי *how much more, &c.* may = כִּי אַף כִּי *how much more, when*, 2 S. 4. 11, 1 S. 21. 6; 23. 3, 2 K. 5. 13, Pr. 21. 27.



# INDEX OF PASSAGES REFERRED TO

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
1 5 . . . . .	47	4 5 . . . . .	48 a, 109	9 11 . . . . .	81, 101 R c
14 . . . . .	55 a, 113	6 . . . . .	39 b	13 . . . . .	51 R 2
20 . . . . .	101 R d	8 . 29 a, 51, 92, 101 R b		18 . . . . .	106 d
21 . . . . .	32 R 2, 99 R 1	9 . . . . .	100 b, 122	19 . . . . .	36 R 4
24 . . . . .	22 R 3	10 . . . . .	7 b, 39 b, 100 c	20 . . . 20 R 2,	83 R 2
31 . . . . .	32 R 2	12 . . . . .	63 R 3	23 . . . . .	21 e
2 4 . . . . .	22 R 3, 90, 91 a	13 . . . . .	34 R 2, 96 R 5,	24 . . . . .	10, 34
5 . . . . .	45, 96 Obs., 127	14 . . . . .	104 a	25 . . . . .	34 R 4
6 . . . . .	44 b, 54 b, 105	15 . . . . .	57	10 8 . . . . .	83 R 2
7 . . . . .	76	15 . . . 38 R 5, 95, 148		9 . . . . .	34 R 6, 44 a
8 . . . . .	39 c	18 . . . . .	79, 81 R 3	19, 30 . . . . .	108 R 3
9 . . . . .	19	19 . . . . .	38 R 1	21 . . . . .	1, 27, 34
10 . . . . .	54 b, 97 R 1, 100 b	26 . . . 1, 39 a, 73 R 6, 105,		11 1 . . . . .	29 e, 35
11 . 19 R 3, 22 d, 38 R 1		109		3 . . . 11 R c,	22 d, 62
12 . . . . .	102, 103	5 . . . . .	37 c	4 . . . . .	138 a
14 . . . . .	106 d	5 . . . . .	116 R 2	6 . . . . .	4 R 1, 35
15 . . . . .	24 a, 72, 96 Obs.	15 . . . . .	37 c	7 . . . . .	149
17 . . . . .	90, 106 b, 155	24 . . . . .	127 b	8 . . . . .	82
19 . . . . .	43 b, 44 b, 73 R 5	6 2 . . . . .	101 R c	9 . . . . .	108
22 . . . . .	78 R 5	4 . . . . .	9 c, 44 R 1, 54 b	11-25 . . . . .	37 c
23 . . . . .	21 R 1, 38 R 5,	6 . . . . .	39 c	12 1 . . . . .	101, 101 R b
	81 R 2	7 . . . . .	9 b, 43 a	2 . . . . .	62, 78 R 5
	44 b	14 . . . . .	55 a	7 . . . . .	99
3 1 . 11 R b, 19, 33, 127 a		17 . . . . .	29 b	8 . . . . .	140
2 . . . . .	43 b	21 . . . . .	44 a	9 . . . . .	86 R 4
3 . . . . .	9 R 2, 43 b, 43 c	7 1 . . . . .	72 R 1, 76, 114	12 . . . . .	57, 146 R 1
4 . . . . .	43 a, 86 b	2 . . . 9 R 2, 29 R 8, 38 R 4		14 . . . . .	34, 51
5 . . . . .	39 c, 56, 98 b, 100 b,	3; 9, 15 . . . . .	29 R 8	17 . . . . .	67 b, 67 R 2
	104 b	4 . . . . .	68	19 . . . . .	48 a, 73 R 5
8 . . . . .	70 a, 114	7 . . . . .	114	13 2 . . . . .	22 d
10 . . . . .	11 a, 104 b	10 . . . . .	51 R 1	3 . . . . .	101 R b
11 . . . . .	95, 146	11 . . . . .	28 R 5	5 . . . . .	99
12 . . . . .	106	13 . . . . .	11 c, 36 R 3	7 . . . . .	22, 103
13 . . . . .	7 c, 48 a, 105,	20 . . . . .	69 c	9 . . . . .	123, 130 R 2
	144 R 1	22 . . . . .	101 R c	10 . . . 29 e, 108 R 3,	145
14 . . . . .	68, 100 R 1, 110	23 . . . . .	10	11 . . . . .	11 R c
15 . . . . .	71, 71 R 3	8 3 . . . . .	86 R 4	13 . . . . .	103
17 . . . . .	48 b	7 . . . . .	22 c, 86 c	16 . . . . .	11 R b, 130 a
19 . . . . .	91 a, 92	8 . . . . .	125	14 2 . . . . .	144 R 3
22 . 35 R 2, 39 b, 56, 93,		11 . . . . .	146	3 . . . . .	101
	127 c	21 . . . . .	11 c	4 . . . . .	39 a, 68
23 . . . . .	9 d, 39 c	9 3 . . . . .	9 a, 9 R 2	6 . . . . .	29 a
24 . . . . .	20, 23	5 . . . . .	11 R d	9 . . . . .	37 R 5
4 2 . . . . .	29 a, 105	6 . 81, 101 R a, 132 R 2		10 . . . . .	28 R 6, 29 R 8
3 . . . . .	51	10 . . . . .	32 R 2, 98 R 1,	13 . . . . .	24 R 3, 28 R 4,
4, 5 . . . . .	47		101 R c		138 b

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
14 17.	. 90, 91 R 3, 145	19 15.	. 83 R 4, 145	24 14 :	1 R 2, 57, 72 R 1, 148
19.	. 22 R 3, 81	16.	. 91 a, 91 b	15.	. 138 a, 141 R 1
23.	. 101 R b	19.	. 53 c, 93	16.	. 24 d, 69 b
15 1.	. 4 R 1, 104 b	20.	. 96 Obs.	18.	. 83
2.	. 70 a, 138 b	21.	. 95	19.	. 41 c, 51 R 1, 145
3.	. 100 R 1	22.	. 83	21.	. 100 b, 125
4.	. 106	27.	. 101	22.	. 24 b, 36 R 3, 37 R 4, 139 R 1, 145
6.	. 58 R 1, 80, 109 R 2	29.	. 91 R 1	23.	. 7 a, 20, 60, 69 a, 122, 126
7.	. 9 a	32.	. 83 R 4, 117	25.	. 136
8.	. 7 b	33.	. 6, 32 R 3	27.	. 83, 106 c
10.	. 11 R d, 110	35.	. 83 R 4, 152	30.	. 91 c, 91 R 1, 100 a
12.	. 51 R 1, 94, 113	20 2.	. 101 R b, 146 R 1	31.	. 98 b, 105
16.	. 71 R 1	3.	. 98 b, 138 a	34.	. 104 b
17.	. 113, 141	4.	. 39 c, 110	38, 40.	. 53 a
18.	. 24 a, 41 a	5.	. 123	42.	. 130 a, 135 R 1
16 1.	. 105 R 1, 113	6.	. 65 d, 107	45.	. 45, 127 d
3.	. 28 R 5, 29 a, 91 R 2	7.	. 100 d, 104 b, 127 b	49.	. 152
5.	. 2, 23, 101 R d	9.	. 30, 44 a	56.	. 138 c
6.	. 103	10.	. 150	57.	. 62
7.	. 101 R d	11.	. 57 R 1, 127 b	58.	. 122, 126
8.	. 45 R 1, 100 R 1	13.	. 9 d, 31, 116 R 4	60.	. 107
10.	. 101 R c	15.	. 103	62.	. 105 R 1
11.	. 117 R 2	16.	. 37 R 4	63.	. 12
12.	. 24 a	17.	. 113	64, 65.	. 21 d
17 5.	. 81 R 3, 155	21 2.	. 9 b, 83 R 4	65.	. 6, 104 c
10, 12, 13.	. 88 R 5	3.	. 22 R 4	67.	. 20 R 4, 145 R 1
11, 14, 25.	. 72 R 3, 80	5.	. 81 R 3	25 1.	. 83
12.	. 9 R 2, 101 R c	7.	. 17 R 3, 41 R 2, 111	7.	. 37 c
17.	. 24 R 3, 126 R 2	8.	. 30, 81 R 3	8.	. 70 a
18.	. 134	9.	. 70 a	16.	. 106 R 2
18 1.	. 69 a, 138 b	10.	. 29 a, 29 b	21.	. 81
2.	. 101 R d	12.	. 109	26.	. 91 R 3
3, 4.	. 60	14.	. 24 b, 41 R 3	28.	. 98 a
5.	. 151	16.	. 87, 101 R b	32.	. 100 J
6.	. 29 d, 29 R 4	17.	. 8 R 3, 10 R 3	26 2.	. 60
7.	. 21, 21 d, 73 R 5	24.	. 107 R 1	7.	. 24 d, 146 R 1
8.	. 142	25.	. 58 b	9.	. 118
8, 10.	. 138 b	26.	. 8, 125	10.	. 39 d, 51 R 2, 57 R 1
9.	. 117, 117 R 3	30.	. 72 R 4	11.	. 98 a, 99
12.	. 11 c, 41 R 2, 92, 121, 138 a	31.	. 108	12.	. 38 R 5
13.	. 123 R 1, 138 c	34.	. 68	13.	. 86 R 4, 145
14.	. 11 R b, 34 R 2	22 2.	. 35 R 2	15.	. 1 R 3, 75
15, 20.	. 118	4.	. 50 b	16.	. 34 R 2
17.	. 100 b, 104 c, 122	5.	. 62, 101 R b	18.	. 48 c
18.	. 53 a, 67 a	6.	. 21 d	20.	. 104 c
21.	. 2, 22 R 4, 62	12.	. 11 R b, 63, 65 R 3, 98 b, 104 b	22.	. 57 R 1
22.	. 100 f, 145 R 3	14.	. 150	24.	. 104 b
24.	. 37 b, 73 R 5	16.	. 40 b, 120 R 5, 147	27.	. 138 c
25.	. 93, 123, 151 R 2	20, 21.	. 29 a	2.	. 40 a
26.	. 37 b	23.	. 36 R 4	3.	. 69 b
28.	. 37 f, 130 a	24.	. 50 b, 106 a	4.	. 65 a, 145, 149
29.	. 37 R 5, 90	23 1.	. 37 c	6.	. 70 a, 78
30.	. 63	10.	. 98 R 1	8.	. 98 a
32.	. 153	13.	. 134	9.	. 76
33.	. 105	24 3.	. 9 c, 28 R 4	10.	. 149
19 1.	. 140 R 1	4.	. 29 a	12.	. 53 b
2.	. 55 a	5.	. 9 d, 43 b, 86 a	13.	. 133, 153
4.	. 45, 127 d	6.	. 127 c	13, 14.	. 73 R 5
7.	. 63, 127 a	7.	. 53 a, 106	15.	. 27
9.	. 33, 86 R 1	8.	. 32 R 3, 63 R 2	19.	. 60 R 4, 126
10.	. 17 R 4	9.	. 4 R 1	21.	. 6 R 2, 124
11.	. 22 R 1, 101 R b	10.	. 24 R 6, 36 a, 138 a	24.	. 121, 126
13.	. 100 b, 100 c	11.	. 22 R 3, 91 a		
14.	. 98 b	12.	. 29 R 2		

GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§	GENESIS	§§
27	25 . . . . .	31	27 . . . . .	37	22 . . . . .
26 . . . . .	149	29 . . . . .	82	23 . . . . .	60, 91 R 4, 149
29 . . . . .	60	30 . . . . .	96 R 1	24 . . . . .	75, 92
30 . . . . .	98 c, 116 R 1	32 . . . . .	86 a	25 . . . . .	78, 127 b
33 . . . . .	86 a, 141 R 2	33 . . . . .	10 R 1	26 . . . . .	8 R 2, 53 b
34 . . . . .	34, 45, 50 a, 99,	34 . . . . .	48 a	27 . . . . .	105
36 . . . . .	100 e, 100 R 4	34 . . . . .	31, 39 c, 48 c	29, 30 . . . . .	127 b
41 . . . . .	1, 51 R 1, 67 b	40 . . . . .	83	33 . . . . .	105
42 . . . . .	6 R 2, 38 R 5, 126 R 3	42 . . . . .	131, 131 R 2	35 . . . . .	70 a
44 . . . . .	23	44 . . . . .	55 a	38	5 . . . . .
45 . . . . .	79, 83, 103	52 . . . . .	152	9 . . . . .	58 c, 72 R 1
48 . . . . .	68, 145	32	5 . . . . .	11 . . . . .	54 b, 95, 110, 130 b
28	3 . . . . .	6 . . . . .	48 b	12 . . . . .	70 a, 107, 127 c, 145
5 . . . . .	55 a	7 . . . . .	51 R 7	15 . . . . .	69 a
11 . . . . .	28 R 4	8 . . . . .	100 a	17 . . . . .	78 R 5
13 . . . . .	21 R 2, 69 a, 101 R c	9 . . . . .	109	18 . . . . .	107 R 1
15 . . . . .	9 c, 104 b	12 . . . . .	35	19 . . . . .	2
16 . . . . .	41 c, 145	12 . . . . .	53 c, 98 a, 127 c, 140	19 . . . . .	73
17 . . . . .	40 a, 118	15, 16 . . . . .	36 c, 37 b	25 . . . . .	9 c, 100 a, 141
18 . . . . .	7 b, 154	16 . . . . .	1 R 3, 12	28 . . . . .	21 d, 108
20 . . . . .	76	17 . . . . .	29 R 8	29 . . . . .	100 R 6
29	2 . . . . .	18 . . . . .	7 a	39	1, 12 . . . . .
2, 3 . . . . .	100 b, 130 c	23 . . . . .	6, 37 a	4, 5 . . . . .	69 b
4 . . . . .	101 R d, 108	26 . . . . .	51 R 1	6 . . . . .	143
6 . . . . .	54 b	27 . . . . .	154	9 . . . . .	154
8 . . . . .	104 c, 126	28 . . . . .	8 R 1	13 . . . . .	53 b, 102
9 . . . . .	126	29 . . . . .	155	18 . . . . .	48 c
14 . . . . .	53 b	30 . . . . .	45 R 1	20 . . . . .	50 a, 91 c, 92, 96
15 . . . . .	104 b, 141	31 . . . . .	22 R 3, 48 R 1, 140	21 . . . . .	25
16 . . . . .	29 d	33	3 . . . . .	22 . . . . .	3 R 2
17 . . . . .	126 R 3	3 . . . . .	107	23 . . . . .	100 R 2, 108
19 . . . . .	104 c	5 . . . . .	78 R 1	23 . . . . .	100 d
20 . . . . .	31, 103	8 . . . . .	8 R 1	40	1 . . . . .
21 . . . . .	33, 90, 104 a	9 . . . . .	63	3 . . . . .	27, 51 R 1, 114
22 . . . . .	11 R a, 72 R 1	10 . . . . .	91 R 1, 128 R 2	5 . . . . .	25
26 . . . . .	44 a, 93	12 . . . . .	62	7 . . . . .	27
27 . . . . .	4, 20	13 . . . . .	1 R 1, 132 a	8 . . . . .	68
30 . . . . .	33	14 . . . . .	62, 101 R b	13 . . . . .	67 b, 127 b
33 . . . . .	4, 146 R 2	17 . . . . .	105	15 . . . . .	9 c, 53 a
34 . . . . .	36 a	18 . . . . .	144 R 3	20 . . . . .	39 c, 150
30	1 . . . . .	34	5 . . . . .	23 . . . . .	79
8 . . . . .	51 R 1, 100 b, 104 b	7 . . . . .	44 a, 51 R 1, 93	23 . . . . .	47
16 . . . . .	34 R 6, 67 R 2	21 . . . . .	104 b, 106 d	41	1 . . . . .
18 . . . . .	6, 32 R 3, 101 R a	24 . . . . .	98 R 1	2-6 . . . . .	29 d, 100 a, 101 R d
20 . . . . .	3 R 2	31 . . . . .	101 R d	5 . . . . .	24 d
27 . . . . .	1	35	3 . . . . .	6 . . . . .	38 R 5
28 . . . . .	146 R 4	4 . . . . .	50 a, 99, 100 e	8 . . . . .	98 b
30 . . . . .	132 b	5 . . . . .	101 R d	9 . . . . .	27, 100 d
32 . . . . .	145 R 1, 145 R 3	7 . . . . .	113	10 . . . . .	111 R 1
34 . . . . .	87	10 . . . . .	116 R 4	11 . . . . .	1
35, 37 . . . . .	63, 126	13 . . . . .	81 R 3	12 . . . . .	51 R 7
37 . . . . .	32 R 5	17 . . . . .	9 d	13 . . . . .	11 R d, 27, 28 R 5
38 . . . . .	87	18 . . . . .	21 d	15 . . . . .	151
39 . . . . .	115	26 . . . . .	105	25 . . . . .	100 d, 146 R 1
41 . . . . .	113	37	2 . . . . .	25-27 . . . . .	106 d
31	1 . . . . .	2 . . . . .	32 R 2, 83 R 2,	33, 34 . . . . .	104 b
4 . . . . .	57, 90	3 . . . . .	100 R 2, 138 a	35 . . . . .	63
5 . . . . .	10	4 . . . . .	54 R 1	39 . . . . .	32
7 . . . . .	69 b, 69 R 2	7 . . . . .	91 R 4	40 . . . . .	91 c, 145 R 1
8 . . . . .	146	8 . . . . .	45 R 1, 98 a, 100 f	42 . . . . .	33, 71
13 . . . . .	38 R 5, 58 a	9 . . . . .	43 a, 86 a, 124	43 . . . . .	20 R 2, 75
14 . . . . .	54 b, 130 b	10 . . . . .	37 a	43 . . . . .	14, 28 R 5, 72 R 1
15 . . . . .	9 d, 20 R 4	13 . . . . .	123 R 2	49 . . . . .	145
19 . . . . .	11 R a, 114	14 . . . . .	75	51, 52 . . . . .	75
21 . . . . .	80, 81, 86 c	15 . . . . .	45 R 1, 100 a	57 . . . . .	115
24 . . . . .	30 c, 105 R 1	16 . . . . .	111 R 1	42	4 . . . . .
26 . . . . .	69 R 2, 114	18 . . . . .	50 a, 73 R 4, 145	6 . . . . .	111, 127 c
	101 R b, 127 c	19 . . . . .	24 R 3	7 . . . . .	99 R 3, 106 d
	47	21 . . . . .	51 R 1, 71, 78	8 . . . . .	14
				8 . . . . .	107
				11 . . . . .	104 b, 106 a

GENESIS		§§	GENESIS		§§	EXODUS		§§
42	14, 15	4 R 1	47	26	1 R 2, 38 R 6	5	16	100 d
	15	119, 120		30	107 R 1	6	3	101 R a
	16	125		31	21 d		6	57 R 1
	18	64, 132 b	48	1	108		9	101 R c
	19	23, 32 R 2		4	100 e		12	24 d
	21	118		7	p. 143 n., 106 b		28	25
	25	11 R d, 75, 146 R 4		10	101 R c, 113	7	9	65 R 4
	28	101		13	29 a		11	29 R 7
	30	26, 78 R 8		14	41 R 3		17	55 c
	35	11 R d, 141		15	3 R 1		20	73 R 6, 114
	36	1 R 2, 127 b		19	107		27	130 a
	38	132 a		22	35 R 2, 101 R d	8	10	29 R 8
43	3	86 R 1, 140 R 1, 154	49	4	17 R 2, 117, 145		11	88 R 1
	3, 5	140		7	59		12	65 R 2
	3, 7	86 a		8	106 c		17	55 c, 130 a
	4	130 a		12	101 R c		20	44 R 2
	5	100 d		15	116 R 3, 146		22	132 R 2
	7	43 b, 86 a, 122		17	49 a, 65 R 6		24	82, 86 b
	9	41 c, 51 R 2, 130 b		22	116	9	2	100 f
	10	38 R 5, 131, 131 R 2		25	78 R 1		7	101 R b
	12, 15	38 R 5		27	44 R 3, 142		15	131 R 2
	14	32 R 2, 130 R 4		31	108		18	96 R 3
	16	10	50	3	44 a		24	145
	22	8		5	62		32	17 R 1
	25	43 a		10	67 b, 144 R 3	10	1	6, 32
	28	29 a		15	131 R 1		3	41 R 2
	33	101		20	101 R d		5	108
44	1	10	EXODUS				7	146
	2	23	1	1	136 R 1		8	7 a, 79
	3	141		5	98 R 1		10	151
	4	41 R 3, 132 a		7	80	11	5	99
	5	44 a		10	53 c, 57		6	116 R 1
	7	45 R 1, 117 R 1		12	151		8	32 R 3
	8	43 b, 152		16	1 R 2, 55 b, 130 a	12	3	38 R 2
	11	83		18	47		8	101 R d
	12	41 R 3		19	53 b, 54 a		11	98 R 1, 140
	16	136		20	115		15	32 R 2
	18	151 R 2		21	1 R 3		16	81, 106 a
	21	17 R 4		2	146		18	38 R 3
	22	132 a		2	29 R 7		29	51 R 1
	27	107 R 1		7	53 a, 65 d		34	44 R 3, 145
	33	60, 70 a		9	3 R 2		48	11 R b, 88 R 2
	34	43 b		13	45 R 1		49	113, 116
45	1	11 R b, 127 a		14	118	13	3	88 R 2
	4	9 b		15	21 d		7	72 R 3, 80
	6	6 R 2, 9 c, 152		20	136 R 1		15	44 a, 97 R 1
	8	127 a, 155		3	100 R 2	14	2	101 R d
	11	29 d		7	45 R 1, 62		11	91 R 4, 128
	16	69 a		10	111 R 3		12	65 a, 90, 123
	18	34 R 5, 65 d		11	65 d		20	5, 50 b
	22	37 R 4		11	43 b, 150	15		72
	25	69 b		4	5		1	45
	26	146 R 2		8, 9	57		4	34 R 5, 115
46	4	86 c		9	101 R c		5	45 R 2
	20	81 R 3		10	24 d, 24 R 3, 145		9	59, 73
	26	98 R 1		13	25, 144		12, 14	45 R 2
	27	22 R 4, 36 R 3		14	44 a, 132 a		13	6 R 3
	33, 34	130 c		17	9 c		14	98 b
47	3	17, 116 R 3, 136		28	75, 80		16	32 R 5
	6	106 d, 146 R 4		5	114		19	48 c
	9	26		3	22 R 1, 152		20	116 R 2
	12	75		7	11 b, 55 a	16	1	38
	18	154		10	100 d, 127 b		3	135, 135 R 3
	21	106 c		11	10 R 3, 11 b		6	57 R 1
	24	38 R 6, 116						



EXODUS	§§	EXODUS	§§	LEVITICUS	§§
16 7, 8	. . . 104 <i>c</i>	26 16 . . .	38 R 6	9 6 . . .	83 R 1
8 . . .	. . . 127 <i>a</i>	19 . . .	37 <i>e</i> , 37 <i>f</i>	10 10, 11 . . .	96 R 4
16 . . .	. . . 69 R 3	26 . . .	36 R 3	14 . . .	. . . 26
21 . . .	. . . 132 <i>a</i>	33 . . .	34 R 4	11 26, 39 . . .	9 R 2
22 . . .	36 R 3, 38 R 4	27 7 . . .	91 R 1	47 . . .	45 R 1, 97 R 1
28 . . .	. . . 41 R 2	15 . . .	. . . 37 <i>a</i>	13 2 . . .	35 R 2
17 4 . . .	. . . 56	16 . . .	. . . 29 <i>d</i>	3, 4, 10 . . .	71 R 4
5 . . .	. . . 11 R <i>a</i>	21 . . .	22 R 3	9 . . .	116 R 2
7 . . .	. . . 122, 124	28 3 . . .	116 R 1	12 . . .	22 R 1
11 . . .	54 <i>b</i> , 116 R 5	10 . . .	37 R 5	42 . . .	130 R 5
18 4 . . .	. . . 101 R <i>a</i>	17 . . .	. . . 29 <i>c</i>	45 . . .	100 R 2
15 . . .	. . . 41 <i>a</i>	29 9 . . .	78 R 2	46 . . .	. . . 25
18 . . .	. . . 34 R 2	29 . . .	. . . 24 <i>c</i>	49 . . .	81 R 1
19 . . .	. . . 107	40 . . .	. . . 29 <i>d</i>	53, 56 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>
19-22 . . .	. . . 55 <i>a</i>	30 12 . . .	91 R 1	57 . . .	29 R 7, 130 <i>b</i>
20 . . .	. . . 142, 143	21 . . .	109 R 2	14 46 . . .	. . . 25
19 4 . . .	. . . 47	31 14 . . .	116 R 1	15 24 . . .	65 R 6
12 . . .	. . . 132 R 2	32 1 . . .	6 R 1	16 27 . . .	81 R 3
13 . . .	96 R 5, 152	4 . . .	. . . 76	17 4, 9 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>
19 . . .	. . . 86 R 4	9 . . .	. . . 24 <i>d</i>	5 . . .	. . . 149
20 5, 6 . . .	. . . 98 <i>c</i>	10 . . .	. . . 65 <i>a</i>	11 . . .	101 R <i>a</i>
10 . . .	. . . 32 R 2	12 . . .	. . . 138 <i>c</i>	14 . . .	116 R 1
12 . . .	. . . 60	13 . . .	. . . 11 <i>b</i>	18 18 . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
20 . . .	43 <i>c</i> , 149 R 2	26, 33 . . .	. . . 8	19 6 . . .	32 R 2
24 . . .	. . . 24 <i>b</i> , 53 <i>b</i>	28 . . .	. . . 37 <i>d</i>	8 . . .	116 R 1
25 . . .	48 <i>d</i> , 76, 132 R 2	29 . . .	48 R 2, 96 R 4	16 . . .	71 R 2
26 . . .	. . . 149	30 . . .	. . . 65 <i>b</i>	36 . . .	. . . 24 <i>c</i>
21 3 . . .	. . . 130 <i>a</i>	32 . . .	127 <i>b</i> , 135 R 1	20 14 . . .	72 R 4
5 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 130 R 3	34 . . .	10 R 3	22 6 . . .	. . . 154
11 . . .	36 R 4, 140	33 7-9 . . .	. . . 57	15 . . .	9 R 3
12 . . .	55 <i>c</i> , 86 R 2, 99	7-11 . . .	. . . 54 <i>b</i>	27 . . .	32 R 2
13 . . .	. . . 9 <i>d</i>	11 . . .	. . . 44 <i>a</i>	23 2 . . .	106 R 2
18 . . .	. . . 152	12 . . .	. . . 105	32 . . .	. . . 38
22 . . .	. . . 17 R 3	14 . . .	. . . 11 <i>c</i>	24 22 . . .	35 R 2
28 . . .	72 R 4, 79, 86 <i>a</i>	16 . . .	1.6 R 8	23 . . .	. . . 77
29 . . .	. . . 116 R 4	20 . . .	65 R 2	25 10 . . .	38 R 3
31 . . .	. . . 152	34 5 . . .	73 R 6	22 . . .	72 R 3
36 . . .	44 <i>b</i> , 130 <i>b</i>	7 . . .	. . . 86 <i>b</i>	33 . . .	116 R 2
37 . . .	. . . 36 R 3	15 . . .	. . . 127 <i>c</i>	48 . . .	145 R 1
22 2 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>	23 . . .	69 R 1	26 6 . . .	. . . 139
2-5 . . .	. . . 130 R 5	33 . . .	51 R 1	21, 23, 24 . . .	71 R 2
3 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 101 R <i>b</i>	35 5 . . .	29 R 7	36 . . .	. . . 67 <i>b</i>
3, 11, 12 . . .	. . . 130 R 3	36 24 . . .	37 <i>e</i> , 37 <i>f</i>	37 . . .	. . . 127 <i>b</i>
4 . . .	. . . 65 R 6	38 30 . . .	38 R 4	42 . . .	29 R 4
5 . . .	. . . 67 <i>b</i>	38 3 . . .	. . . 76	43 . . .	65 R 6, 147 R 2
7-11 . . .	. . . 130 R 5	39 24 . . .	. . . 37 <i>c</i>	27 24 . . .	10, 10 R 2
8 . . .	. . . 116 R 4	40 37 . . .	. . . 29 <i>c</i>		
9, 13 . . .	. . . 140		. . . 130 <i>b</i>		
23 4 . . .	. . . 86 <i>a</i>				
8 . . .	. . . 44 <i>a</i>				
9 . . .	. . . 105, 147				
12 . . .	. . . 53 R 1				
14, 17 . . .	. . . 38 R 5				
27 . . .	. . . 78 R 7				
30 . . .	29 R 8, 145				
31 . . .	. . . 98 <i>b</i>				
24 4 . . .	. . . 37 <i>e</i>				
5 . . .	. . . 29 <i>b</i>				
10 . . .	. . . 11 <i>c</i>				
25 11 . . .	. . . 78 R 2				
18, 28 . . .	. . . 76				
28 . . .	. . . 81 R 3				
31 . . .	. . . 80				
26 2 . . .	. . . 37 R 4				
3, 5 . . .	. . . 11 R <i>c</i>				

  

LEVITICUS	§§	LEVITICUS	§§
1 17 . . .	141 R 3	1 17 . . .	141 R 3
4 2 . . .	35 R 2, 101 R <i>c</i> ,	4 2 . . .	35 R 2, 101 R <i>c</i> ,
	130 R 5		130 R 5
23 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>	23 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>
5 1 . . .	130 <i>b</i> , 130 R 5	5 1 . . .	130 <i>b</i> , 130 R 5
2 . . .	. . . 152	2 . . .	. . . 152
9 . . .	101 R <i>c</i>	9 . . .	101 R <i>c</i>
11 . . .	38 R 6	11 . . .	38 R 6
13 . . .	35 R 2	13 . . .	35 R 2
24 . . .	10 R 2	24 . . .	10 R 2
6 3 . . .	29 <i>c</i> , 29 R 4,	6 3 . . .	29 <i>c</i> , 29 R 4,
4 . . .	. . . 73	4 . . .	. . . 73
7 . . .	88 R 5	7 . . .	88 R 5
13 . . .	. . . 29 <i>d</i>	13 . . .	. . . 29 <i>d</i>
7 21 . . .	130 R 5	7 21 . . .	130 R 5

  

NUMBERS	§§
3 1 . . .	. . . 25
29 . . .	106 R 2
26 . . .	72 R 4
39, 43 . . .	. . . 37 <i>c</i>
47 . . .	28 R 6
4 19 . . .	72 R 3
36 . . .	37 R 3
5 7 . . .	10 R 1
10 . . .	72 R 4
18 . . .	32 R 5
19 . . .	. . . 130 <i>b</i>
27 24 . . .	48 <i>d</i> , 57 R 3, 130 <i>c</i>
6 9 . . .	108 R 1
13 . . .	. . . 26
23 . . .	. . . 87
7 10 . . .	81 R 3

NUMBERS	§§	NUMBERS	§§	NUMBERS	§§
7 88 . . . . .	37 <i>c</i>	17 28 . . . . .	126 R 2	34 18 . . . . .	38 R 4
8 4 . . . . .	101 R <i>b</i>	18 3 . . . . .	136	35 6 . . . . .	37 <i>c</i>
9 6 . . . . .	113	19 7 . . . . .	111	23 . . . . .	100 R 3
10 . . . . .	130 R 5	20 3 . . . . .	134, 136 R 1	DEUTERONOMY	
11 . . . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	5 . . . . .	127 <i>b</i>	1 3 . . . . .	37 R 2, 38
13 . . . . .	9 R 2	8 . . . . .	114	4 . . . . .	99 R 2, 142
14 . . . . .	136	11 . . . . .	115	7 . . . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
15 . . . . .	91 R 1	12 . . . . .	147	15 . . . . .	76
18 . . . . .	25	26, 28 . . . . .	75	16 . . . . .	55 <i>a</i> , 88 R 2
20 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i>	21 2 . . . . .	130 R 3	19 . . . . .	32, 73 R 1
10 2 . . . . .	91 R 3	8 . . . . .	55 <i>c</i> , 99	27 . . . . .	91 R 4
4 . . . . .	38 R 5	8, 9 . . . . .	54 <i>b</i>	31 . . . . .	44 <i>a</i> , 146
7 . . . . .	91 R 1	9 . . . . .	57, 72 R 4, 130 <i>b</i>	44 . . . . .	22 <i>e</i> , 44 <i>a</i>
25 . . . . .	100 R 5	26 . . . . .	48 <i>c</i>	2 7 . . . . .	11 R <i>b</i> , 73, 73 R 1
11 4 . . . . .	135	22 6 . . . . .	53 R 1, 83 R 1	11, 20 . . . . .	44 <i>a</i>
8 . . . . .	54 R 1	11 . . . . .	50 <i>b</i> , 53 <i>b</i> , 91 <i>b</i>	24 . . . . .	8, 83
12 . . . . .	22 <i>e</i> , 124	13 . . . . .	91 R 4	27 . . . . .	29 R 8, 62
13 . . . . .	p. 143 <i>n</i> .	18 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i>	30 . . . . .	58 <i>a</i>
15 . . . . .	65 R 3, 86 <i>c</i>	19 . . . . .	63 R 3	34 . . . . .	72 R 4
17 . . . . .	101 R <i>a</i>	21, 22 . . . . .	50 <i>b</i>	3 5 . . . . .	28 R 4
20 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i> , 147	23, 25 . . . . .	91 R 4	11 . . . . .	123 R 2
22 . . . . .	81 R 3	28, 32, 33 . . . . .	38 R 5	18 . . . . .	70 <i>a</i>
25 . . . . .	32 R 2	29 . . . . .	131	21, 22 . . . . .	99 R 3
26 . . . . .	38 R 1	33 . . . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 131	24 . . . . .	8 R 2
29 . . . . .	100 <i>b</i> , 135 R 3	34 . . . . .	109	26 . . . . .	63
32 . . . . .	86 <i>c</i>	35 . . . . .	106 <i>c</i> , 153	29 . . . . .	75
33 . . . . .	44 R 3	39, 37, 38 . . . . .	86 <i>a</i>	4 5 . . . . .	75
12 1 . . . . .	114	37 . . . . .	118	6 . . . . .	1 R 2
2 . . . . .	153	23 3 . . . . .	7 <i>b</i> , 8	7 . . . . .	8 R 2
4 . . . . .	36 R 4	7 . . . . .	45 R 2, 60	10 . . . . .	9 <i>c</i> , 149
6 . . . . .	3 R 2	8 . . . . .	144	16, 19 . . . . .	53 <i>c</i>
8 . . . . .	22 R 3, 140	10 . . . . .	91 R 3	17 . . . . .	22 R 3
12 . . . . .	51 R 4	10, 23 . . . . .	41 R 2	21 . . . . .	91 R 1, 95, 96 R 1
14 . . . . .	132 R 2, 136 R 1	11 . . . . .	86 <i>c</i>	22 . . . . .	55 <i>c</i> , 100 <i>d</i> , 100 <i>e</i>
13 2 . . . . .	38 R 4	19 . . . . .	58 <i>a</i> , 65 <i>c</i> , 128 R 6,	23 . . . . .	127 <i>c</i>
13 . . . . .	117	20 . . . . .	150, 152	24, 34 . . . . .	99
18 . . . . .	126 R 1	25 . . . . .	132 <i>a</i>	26 . . . . .	40 <i>b</i>
20 . . . . .	124	25 . . . . .	86 R 3	27 . . . . .	71 R 1
28 . . . . .	154	24 1 . . . . .	29 R 8	33 . . . . .	48 <i>b</i>
14 2 . . . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 134	4, 16 . . . . .	97 R 1	37 . . . . .	11 <i>c</i> , 116 R 1
3 . . . . .	141 R 3	6 . . . . .	143	40 . . . . .	43 <i>c</i>
7 . . . . .	34	7, 19 . . . . .	65 R 6	41 . . . . .	45, 145
8, 27 . . . . .	9 R 2	9 . . . . .	116 R 1	42 . . . . .	100 R 5
15 . . . . .	132 <i>a</i>	17 . . . . .	51 R 2	47 . . . . .	22 R 3
16 . . . . .	96 R 1	23 . . . . .	91 <i>a</i>	5 4 . . . . .	140
21 . . . . .	81 R 2, 119, 146 R 4	25 14 . . . . .	28 R 5	19 . . . . .	28 R 4, 67 R 3
24, 31, 40 . . . . .	56	26 10 . . . . .	51 R 5	21 . . . . .	54 <i>a</i>
32 . . . . .	1	55 . . . . .	81 R 3	23 . . . . .	31, 116 R 4
35 . . . . .	115	59 . . . . .	108 R 1	26 . . . . .	32 R 3, 135 R 3
37 . . . . .	32 R 2	27 7 . . . . .	1 R 3	6 5 . . . . .	57 R 1
41 . . . . .	1 R 2	24 . . . . .	10 R 2	11 . . . . .	98 <i>a</i>
15 4 . . . . .	29 <i>a</i> , 38 R 6	16 . . . . .	28 R 5	15, 18 . . . . .	53 <i>c</i>
35 . . . . .	88 R 5	29 6 . . . . .	24 R 4	7 5 . . . . .	45 R 4
40 . . . . .	53 <i>c</i>	30 2 . . . . .	28 R 5	7 . . . . .	28 R 1, 33, 101 R <i>c</i>
16 5 . . . . .	57 R 1	3 . . . . .	88 R 1	14 . . . . .	17 R 5
9 . . . . .	34 R 2	6, 9 . . . . .	130 <i>b</i>	23 . . . . .	67 <i>b</i>
11 . . . . .	150	12 . . . . .	41 R 3	25, 26 . . . . .	65 R 2
13 . . . . .	86 <i>c</i>	31 13 . . . . .	114	8 2 . . . . .	6 R 2
15 . . . . .	72 R 4	15 . . . . .	73 R 7	3 . . . . .	75
29 . . . . .	81 R 2, 109, 127 <i>a</i> ,	28 . . . . .	35 R 1	7, 15 . . . . .	28 R 4
32 . . . . .	130 R 4	32 5 . . . . .	81 R 3	9 . . . . .	9 R 1
35 . . . . .	51 R 5	17 . . . . .	145	13 . . . . .	114
17 5 . . . . .	37 R 5	23 . . . . .	130 R 4	18 . . . . .	19 R 3
27, 28 . . . . .	9 R 2, 149	33 38 . . . . .	38 R 3	9 3 . . . . .	19 R 3
	41 <i>a</i>	34 2 . . . . .	29 <i>a</i>		

DEUTERONOMY	§§	DEUTERONOMY	§§	JOSHUA	§§
9 6, 13	24 <i>d</i>	25 13, 14	29 R 8	6 3	38 R 5, 87
7	60, 100 R 2, 146	15	24 <i>c</i>	9, 13	86 R 4
21	87	26 3, 17	40 <i>b</i>	7 1	67 <i>b</i>
25	37 <i>f</i> , 72 R 3	5	24 R 4	6	17 R 4
10 4	36 <i>b</i>	19	91 R 4	7	48 <i>d</i> , 83, 134
15	91 <i>b</i>	27 6	76	8	145 R 1
17	34 R 4, 44 <i>a</i> , 106 <i>d</i>	25	32 R 5	15	81 R 3
11 10	54 <i>a</i>	28 8, 21, 36	65 R 6	21	20 R 2, 20 R 4
12	22 R 3	21, 22	22 R 1	25	77
18	32 R 3	25	76	8 6	100 R 6
18-22	56	27, 51	150	11	20 R 4, 29 R 5
23	33	43	29 R 8	19	22 <i>b</i> , 73 R 1
24	44 R 2	48	32 R 5, 116 R 1	22	5
12 2	86 <i>a</i>	61	100 R 3	29	21 <i>e</i>
11	34 R 5	67	135 R 3	30, 31	51 R 2
20	62	29 17	128 R 4	33	20 R 4
22	79	22	91 R 3	9 2	71 R 2
13 1	63 R 2, 106 <i>c</i>	30 18, 19	40 <i>b</i>	9	67 <i>b</i>
2	130 <i>c</i> , 152	31 7	72 R 1, 75	12, 13	6 R 1
4	125	11	36 <i>a</i>	24	79
5	45 R 4	26	55 <i>a</i>	27	78 R 3
7	9 <i>b</i> , 62	32	72	10 1	48 <i>c</i>
11	77	8, 18	65 R 6	12	51 R 2
14 7	116 R 3	10	45 R 2	13	1 R 2
21	88 R 1	11	44 R 3	16	36 <i>b</i>
22	29 R 8	15	41 R 4, 143	24	22 R 4
15 2	88, 88 R 5, 108	17	128 R 1, 143	11 11	113
4	154	19	28 R 4	20	109 R 2
6	51 R 2	21	128 R 1	12 1	69 <i>a</i>
7	35 R 2, 101 R <i>c</i>	24	98 <i>b</i>	13 1	58 <i>b</i>
9	38 R 3	27	127 <i>c</i> , 131 R 1	4	69 R 2
16 4, 8, 13	36 <i>a</i>	29	131	5	29 R 5
18	67 <i>b</i>	35	25, 45 R 2, 113	9	20 R 4
19	44 <i>a</i>	36	17 R 5	14	116 R 1
21	11 R <i>b</i> , 29 <i>c</i>	37	143	14 9	120
17 2, 3	130 <i>b</i>	40	119, 120 R 5	11	151 R 2
8	34 R 2	41	130 <i>b</i>	14	73 R 5
14	62	33 6	65 R 3	15 3	44 R 2
15	9 R 2	11	71, 98 R 1, 149 R 4	19	135 R 3
17, 20	65 R 2	16	63 R 1	21	69 R 2
18	57	19	28 R 6	16 8	44 R 2
18 2	106 <i>d</i>			17 11	72 R 4
3	152	JOSHUA		14	138 <i>a</i>
16	63 R 3	1 9	123 R 2	16	81
19 2	36 <i>a</i>	2 4	116 R 1, 126	18 5	73 R 4
6	71	5	94	19 51	28 R 5
9	36 R 4, 37 R 5	7	145 R 1	20 5	130 R 2
10	53 <i>c</i> , 65 R 2	8	127 <i>d</i>	22 17	72 R 4
13	32 R 5	14, 20	32 R 3	20, 31	67 <i>b</i>
20 15, 20	9 R 2	17	32 R 3, 55 <i>c</i>	26	93
18	149	18	55 <i>c</i>	28	57 R 1, 136 R 1
21 1	41 R 3	3 4	32 R 5	29	117 R 1
3, 4	109	11	20 R 4	32	114
7	116	12	29 R 8, 38 R 4	24 10	86 R 1
10	116 R 1	14	29 R 5	14	32 R 5
11	28 R 6	16, 17	87		
14	86 <i>b</i>	4 3	86 R 3	JUDGES	
22 3	132 <i>a</i>	4	37 R 5	1 3	107
5	73	5	26	7	28 R 4, 98 R 1, 100 R 2
8	108 R 1	8	37 <i>a</i>	9	28 R 4
20	130 <i>b</i>	9	48 <i>b</i>	12	53 <i>b</i> , 132 R 2
23 5	91 R 4	24	149 R 1	14	8 R 3, 51
15	53 <i>c</i>	5 2	83	15	57 R 1, 135 R 3
24 4	145	8	101 R <i>d</i>	16	105 R 1
25 2	90 R 2	13	124		

JUDGES	§§	JUDGES	§§	JUDGES	§§
1 19 . . .	94, 95, 98 <i>b</i>	8 1 . . .	95, 144 R 1	15 2 . . .	63, 86 <i>a</i>
22 . . .	107, 115	2 . . .	116 R 3	7 . . .	120 R 5, 130 R 4
24 . . .	99	7 . . .	55 <i>b</i>	13 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 118
29, 30 . . .	105	11 . . .	28 R 1, 71 R 2, 138 <i>c</i>	16 2 . . .	53 <i>b</i> , 57 R 1
34 . . .	116 R 1	14 . . .	27	10 . . .	47
2 1 . . .	45 R 2	18 . . .	11 R <i>d</i> , 151 R 2	15 . . .	6 R 2
8 . . .	24 R 3	19 . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 119, 131	17 . . .	130 <i>b</i>
10 . . .	152	23 . . .	107	20 . . .	29 R 8
15 . . .	109	24 . . .	136 R 1	21 . . .	100 R 2
18 . . .	54 R 1	28 . . .	17 R 4, 47	27 . . .	99 R 1
18, 19 . . .	54 <i>b</i> , 130 <i>b</i>	30 . . .	98 R 1	31 . . .	138 <i>c</i>
21 . . .	47	32 . . .	29 R 5	17 3 . . .	37 <i>f</i>
22 . . .	149	9 2 . . .	90, 91 <i>a</i> , 124	5 . . .	106 <i>b</i>
3 1 . . .	148	4, 5 . . .	77	6 . . .	111
3 . . .	36 <i>b</i> , 101 R <i>b</i>	6 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	8, 9 . . .	43 <i>b</i> , 45 R 1
10 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	8, 14 . . .	60 R 1, 86 <i>a</i>	10 . . .	36 R 3
16 . . .	139, 139 R 1	9 . . .	41 R 2, 51 R 2	18 1 . . .	73 R 5
23 . . .	58 R 1	15 . . .	127 <i>b</i> , 130 <i>a</i>	2 . . .	91 R 4
24 . . .	100 <i>b</i>	16 . . .	32 R 5, 47	3 . . .	141
30 . . .	47	17 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	11 . . .	98 R 1, 100 R 7
4 4 . . .	19 R 1	19 . . .	130 <i>b</i>	16 . . .	37 R 1
6 . . .	60 R 4	27 . . .	135 R 3	18 . . .	8 R 1
8 . . .	130 <i>a</i>	28 . . .	43 <i>b</i> , 102	25 . . .	22 R 3
9 . . .	3 R 2, 154	29 . . .	65 <i>b</i>	28 . . .	144 R 3
11 . . .	48 <i>c</i> , 105 R 1	36 . . .	100 R 1, 111 R 1	19 4 . . .	36 <i>a</i>
14 . . .	4, 95	36, 37 . . .	115	11 . . .	86 R 2
19 . . .	76	48 . . .	1 R 1, 41 R 3, 146 R 1	12 . . .	9 R 2
20 . . .	116 R 6, 126	53 . . .	19 R 1	17 . . .	45 R 1
22 . . .	75, 97 R 1	55 . . .	11 R <i>d</i> , 115	18 . . .	72 R 3
24 . . .	86 R 4	10 2, 3 . . .	37 <i>c</i>	20 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>
5 1 . . .	72	4 . . .	37 <i>b</i>	22 . . .	28 R 6, 73 R 4
3 . . .	114	9 . . .	109	30 . . .	101 R <i>b</i> , 132 R 1
4 . . .	107 R 1	10 . . .	146 R 2	20 4 . . .	99
4 . . .	73 R 2	11 1 . . .	24 <i>c</i>	8 . . .	29 R 6
5 . . .	6 R 1	12 . . .	8 R 3	16 . . .	14, 45 R 1
8 . . .	44 R 1, 122	13 . . .	146 R 2	31 . . .	41 R 3, 114
10 . . .	28 R 1	25 . . .	86 <i>c</i> , 124	44 . . .	72 R 4
15 . . .	151	29 . . .	24 R 6	21 8 . . .	8 R 2
21 . . .	71 R 2	34 . . .	116 R 1	19 . . .	32 R 2
22 . . .	28 R 6, 29 R 8	35 . . .	101 R <i>a</i>		
27 10 R 3, 32 R 5, 41 R 4		36 . . .	92, 145 R 1	I SAMUEL	
6 2-6 . . .	54 <i>b</i>	38 . . .	114	I 1 . . .	19 R 1, 144 R 3
3 . . .	57, 130 <i>b</i>	39 . . .	1 R 2, 109	2 . . .	104 <i>c</i> , 113
4 . . .	29 R 5, 44 R 1, 54 R 1, 152	12 3 . . .	126 R 6 <i>a</i>	4-7 . . .	54 <i>b</i>
5 . . .	44 R 1	5 . . .	126	6 . . .	67 <i>b</i>
8 . . .	19 R 1	5, 6 . . .	54 R 1	7 . . .	29 R 8, 44 R 1, 145
13 . . .	132 R 2, 136 R 1	7 . . .	17 R 3	8 . . .	45 R 1
14 . . .	32 R 3, 123 R 2	14 . . .	37 <i>b</i>	9 . . .	84 R 1
16 . . .	53 <i>a</i> , 146 R 2	13 2 . . .	19 R 1	11 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 130 <i>c</i> , 130 R 3
18 . . .	96 R 2, 107 R 1	3 . . .	57 R 1	12 . . .	58 <i>c</i> , 82, 100 <i>c</i>
19 . . .	24 <i>b</i> , 41 R 3	8 . . .	22 R 4	13 . . .	44 <i>b</i> , 113
25 . . .	28 R 5, 111 R 2	12 . . .	132 R 2	16 . . .	24 R 3, 101 R <i>c</i>
28 . . .	81 R 3, 99	14 . . .	65 R 3	20 . . .	83 R 4, 127 <i>c</i>
30 . . .	65 <i>a</i>	17 . . .	8 R 1	22 . . .	69 R 1, 105, 145
7 2 . . .	34 R 2	23 . . .	108 R 2	23 . . .	63, 72 R 1, 133
3 . . .	8, 37 <i>c</i>	29 . . .	39 <i>d</i> , 131	24 . . .	36 <i>c</i> , 69 <i>b</i>
4 . . .	4	14 3 . . .	122	26 . . .	99
5 . . .	44 <i>a</i>	4 . . .	1 R 2, 81, 111 R 1	27 . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
7 . . .	11 R <i>d</i> , 37 <i>f</i>	6 . . .	91 R 3	2 . . .	72
13 . . .	58 R 1	8 . . .	91 R 4	3 . . .	17 R 2, 29 R 8, 83, 128 R 6
16, 19, 25 . . .	17 R 4	9 . . .	86 <i>c</i>	4 . . .	73 R 3, 116 R 2
19 . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 88, 141 R 2	12 . . .	47	5 . . .	101 R <i>b</i>
21 . . .	101 R <i>d</i>	14 . . .	32 R 5	10 . . .	65 R 6
22 . . .	37 <i>d</i> , 37 <i>f</i> , 136 R 1	15 . . .	123 R 2, 126 R 2	11 . . .	69 R 1, 100 R 2
		16 . . .	40 <i>a</i> , p. 143 <i>n.</i> , 131		

I SAMUEL	§§	I SAMUEL	§§	I SAMUEL	§§
2 13 . . . . .	132 R 2	12 2 . . . . .	58 a	19 1 . . . . .	91 b
13, 14 . . . . .	55 c	3 . . . . .	7 a	3 . . . . .	8, 132 a
13-16 . . . . .	54 b	4 . . . . .	11 R b	4 . . . . .	116 R 3
15 . . . . .	45, 53 b	11 . . . . .	70 b	6 . . . . .	120
16 50 b, 54 R 1, 86 R 2, 118, 130 R 4		19 . . . . .	65 R 3	10 . . . . .	32 R 3
18 . . . . .	98 R 1, 100 R 7	22 . . . . .	30	11 . . . . .	91 R 4
19 . . . . .	44 b, 111	23 . . . . .	32 R 2	13 . . . . .	31, 73 R 5
19, 20 . . . . .	54 b	13 2 . . . . .	11 R d	17 . . . . .	126 R 5
20 . . . . .	116 R 6	7 . . . . .	101, 145 R 3	22 . . . . .	32 R 2
23 . . . . .	32 R 2, 32 R 3	11 . . . . .	146 R 2	23 . . . . .	86 R 4
25 . . . . .	91 R 4	15 . . . . .	31	24 . . . . .	73
26 . . . . .	86 R 4, 136	19 . . . . .	44 b	20 2, 5 . . . . .	43 b
27 . . . . .	88 R 1, 126 R 3	14 9 . . . . .	86 R 4, 101 R d	3 . . . . .	119
28 . . . . .	72 R 1	12 . . . . .	75	8 . . . . .	110
30 . . . . .	86 a, 98 c	15 . . . . .	34 R 6	9 . . . . .	121
33 . . . . .	71 R 1, 115	21 . . . . .	94	13 . . . . .	72 R 4, 120 R 4
3 2 . . . . .	83 R 2	24 . . . . .	48 R 2	16 . . . . .	73 R 5
3 . . . . .	127 d	30 . . . . .	130 R 3, 131	17 . . . . .	67 b
5 . . . . .	83	33 . . . . .	93	19 . . . . .	83
8 . . . . .	38 R 5, 146	34 . . . . .	101 R b	29 . . . . .	106 R 2
12 . . . . .	87	36 . . . . .	63 R 1, 63 R 2	40 . . . . .	28 R 5
17 . . . . .	120 R 4	37 . . . . .	126 R 2	42 . . . . .	36 R 4
4 10 . . . . .	29 R 6	39 . . . . .	120 R 5	21 3 . . . . .	9 b, 11 R c, 75
12 . . . . .	138 b	42 . . . . .	73 R 5	9 . . . . .	128 R 3
15 . . . . .	24 R 3, 116	44 . . . . .	120 R 4	15 . . . . .	45 R 1
16 . . . . .	99 R 3	45 . . . . .	101 R c	16 . . . . .	4, 121
19 . . . . .	96 R 2	15 9 . . . . .	32 R 2, 32 R 4, 34 R 5	22 13 . . . . .	88 R 1
21 . . . . .	128 R 3	17 . . . . .	101 R d	15 . . . . .	83 R 2
5 9 . . . . .	145 R 1	19 . . . . .	48 b	23 2 . . . . .	53 a
11 . . . . .	65 a	20 . . . . .	146 R 2	10 . . . . .	73 R 7
6 3 . . . . .	100 a	23 . . . . .	50 b, 101	11 . . . . .	126 R 2
7, 10 . . . . .	1 R 3	25 . . . . .	65 R 2	22, 23 . . . . .	60 R 4
9 . . . . .	130 R 4	32 . . . . .	70 b	26 . . . . .	141
12 . . . . .	86 c	35 . . . . .	111	24 6 . . . . .	72 R 4
18 . . . . .	32 R 2	33 . . . . .	36 b	7 . . . . .	117 R 1
7 8 . . . . .	101	16 10 . . . . .	101 R d	11 . . . . .	73 R 5
9, 12 . . . . .	19 R 1	12 . . . . .	27, 28 R 5	14 . . . . .	44 a
10 . . . . .	141 R 1	18 . . . . .	32 R 2, 54 R 1	16 . . . . .	65 R 2, 101
16 . . . . .	54 R 1	23 . . . . .	144 R 3	18 . . . . .	104 a
8 7 . . . . .	72 R 1, 101 R c	17 1, 4 . . . . .	144 R 3	21 . . . . .	43 a
12 . . . . .	96 R 4	8 . . . . .	28 R 5, 45 R 1	25 2 . . . . .	36 a
22 . . . . .	55 a	14 . . . . .	34, 36 b, 106 d	3 . . . . .	24 d
9 1 . . . . .	144 R 3	17 . . . . .	32 R 4, 36 R 3, 37 R 4	15 . . . . .	25, 28 R 1
2 . . . . .	33	26 . . . . .	39 c, 116 R 4	17 . . . . .	101 R c
3 . . . . .	35 R 2, 72 R 4	31 . . . . .	73 R 5	19 . . . . .	29 R 2
6 . . . . .	44 a	32 . . . . .	53 b	20 . . . . .	58 c, 141 R 1
7 . . . . .	132 R 2	34 . . . . .	72 R 4	22 . . . . .	120 R 4
8 . . . . .	38 R 6	34-36 . . . . .	54 b	24 . . . . .	1, 133
11 . . . . .	100 a	38 . . . . .	75	26 . . . . .	88 R 5, 119
23 . . . . .	60 R 1	39 . . . . .	82	27 . . . . .	116 R 6
24 . . . . .	22 R 4	42 . . . . .	101 R d	34 . . . . .	48 d, 131
27 . . . . .	141	43 . . . . .	17 R 3, 104 c	42 . . . . .	101 R b
10 2 . . . . .	58 b, 101 R d	46 . . . . .	17 R 4	26 7 . . . . .	69 a
3 . . . . .	37 R 4	18 1, 3 . . . . .	11 c	9 . . . . .	41 R 2, 51 R 2
4 . . . . .	36 R 3, 37 R 4	2 . . . . .	82	11 . . . . .	117 R 1
5 . . . . .	65 R 6, 138 b	4 . . . . .	75	12 . . . . .	34 R 6
7 . . . . .	60 R 2	5 . . . . .	141 R 3	16 . . . . .	24 R 3, 72 R 4
8 . . . . .	63, 63 R 2	15 . . . . .	146	17 . . . . .	126
11 . . . . .	7 c, 144 R 1	17 . . . . .	34	19 . . . . .	130 b
12 . . . . .	109 R 2, 136 R 1	18 . . . . .	8 R 1, 43 b	20 . . . . .	72 R 4
16 . . . . .	86 a	19 . . . . .	91 R 1, 91 R 3, 96 R 5	27 9 . . . . .	54 R 1
19 . . . . .	9 R 2, 146 R 1	21 . . . . .	38 R 5	10 . . . . .	128 R 2
11 2 . . . . .	1 R 2, 109 R 2	23 . . . . .	90 R 1, 138 a	28 1 . . . . .	43 b
11 . . . . .	51			7 . . . . .	28 R 6
				9 . . . . .	107 R 1

1 SAMUEL	§§	2 SAMUEL	§§	2 SAMUEL	§§
28 14 . . . . .	73	11 11 . . . . .	120 R 2, 121	19 2 . . . . .	51 R 4
16 . . . . .	45 R 1	12 . . . . .	50 <i>b</i>	7 . . . . .	131
29 3 . . . . .	6 R 2	17 . . . . .	29 <i>a</i> , 102	8 . . . . .	40 <i>b</i> , 109, 132 R 2
10 . . . . .	132 <i>a</i>	20 . . . . .	146	20 . . . . .	91 R 2
30 2 . . . . .	41 R 3, 48 <i>c</i>	25 . . . . .	44 <i>a</i> , 72 R 4	21 . . . . .	71 R 1
6 . . . . .	109	12 4 . . . . .	32 R 2	25 . . . . .	9 <i>c</i> , 96 R 3
17 . . . . .	3 R 3	14 . . . . .	154	44 . . . . .	34 R 2
21 . . . . .	37 <i>f</i>	16 . . . . .	54 R 1	20 6 . . . . .	128 R 4
22 . . . . .	24 <i>c</i> , 147	18 . . . . .	53 <i>b</i> , 126 R 4	8 . . . . .	139
24 . . . . .	151 R 2	21 . . . . .	70 <i>a</i>	10 . . . . .	71 R 3, 114
		22 . . . . .	43 R 1	12 . . . . .	100 R 4
2 SAMUEL		13 12 . . . . .	117	19 . . . . .	28 R 6, 126 R 5
1 4 . . . . .	146 R 2	15 . . . . .	67 <i>b</i>	20 . . . . .	117 R 1
6 . . . . .	24 R 3, 86 <i>a</i>	17 . . . . .	4	21 3 . . . . .	65 <i>d</i>
9 . . . . .	22 R 1, 28 R 3	18 . . . . .	58 R 1	4 . . . . .	1 R 1, 41 R 3
21 . . . . .	100 R 3, 128 R 5	20 . . . . .	136 R 1	6 . . . . .	65 R 2, 79
22 . . . . .	44 R 1	25 . . . . .	65 <i>a</i>	9 . . . . .	36 R 4, 68
23 . . . . .	33, 136 R 1	26 . . . . .	132 R 2	22 14 . . . . .	65 R 6
24 . . . . .	98 <i>a</i> , 99	30 . . . . .	141 R 1	24 . . . . .	51 R 7
25 . . . . .	117	31 . . . . .	98 R 1	33 . . . . .	29 R 4
2 9 . . . . .	29 R 6	39 . . . . .	29 R 1	36 . . . . .	90 R 1
23 . . . . .	71 R 3, 101 R <i>d</i>	14 5 . . . . .	47, 118	23 3 . . . . .	71 R 2
27 . . . . .	119, 120 R 5, 131 R 2	10 . . . . .	55 <i>c</i> , 56, 99	4 . . . . .	128 R 3
32 . . . . .	69 <i>a</i>	11 . . . . .	101 R <i>c</i>	5 . . . . .	2
3 1 . . . . .	86 R 4	14 . . . . .	43 <i>c</i> , 149 R 2	6 . . . . .	22 R 3
9 . . . . .	120 R 4, 120 R 5	19 . . . . .	94	11 . . . . .	28 R 5
13 . . . . .	107 R 1, 146 R 1	20 . . . . .	149 R 1	15 . . . . .	135
16 . . . . .	86 R 4	25 . . . . .	93	17 . . . . .	117 R 1
24 . . . . .	86 <i>c</i>	32 . . . . .	90 R 1	24 3 . . . . .	38 R 5, 113, 136 R 1
33 . . . . .	43 <i>b</i>	15 4 . . . . .	135	13 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i> , 90 R 1, 116 R 1
34 . . . . .	91 R 1, 100 R 3	10 . . . . .	51 R 1	14 . . . . .	62
35 . . . . .	120 R 5	12 . . . . .	86 R 4	24 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i> , 86 <i>a</i>
39 . . . . .	136 R 1	21 . . . . .	25, 120 R 5, 152		
4 1 . . . . .	113	23 . . . . .	67 R 3, 115	I KINGS	
8 . . . . .	17 R 2	30 . . . . .	100 <i>f</i>	I 1, 2 . . . . .	109
10 . . . . .	94	31 . . . . .	78 R 8	2 . . . . .	55 <i>a</i> , 63, 65 R 2, 108
11 . . . . .	72 R 4, 154 <i>n</i>	32 . . . . .	98 R 1	4 . . . . .	34
5 2 . . . . .	19 R 3	33 . . . . .	130 <i>b</i>	5 . . . . .	37 R 1
8 . . . . .	98 <i>b</i>	34 . . . . .	130 <i>c</i> , 136 R 1	6 . . . . .	1 R 1, 101 R <i>c</i> , 108 R 1
10 . . . . .	24 R 6, 86 R 4	37 . . . . .	45 R 2	12 . . . . .	65 <i>d</i> , 67 <i>b</i>
19 . . . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 126 R 2	16 1 . . . . .	139	13 . . . . .	83 R 4
24 . . . . .	41 <i>c</i> , 72 R 4	4 . . . . .	40 <i>b</i>	20 . . . . .	106 <i>b</i> , 125
25 . . . . .	151	5 . . . . .	58 R 1, 86 R 4	21, 34 . . . . .	114
6 1 . . . . .	63 R 3, 72 R 4	10 . . . . .	8 R 3	26 . . . . .	I
6 . . . . .	73 R 5	13 . . . . .	57 R 1, 86 R 4	27 . . . . .	122
16 . . . . .	58 <i>c</i> , 141	18 . . . . .	118	30 . . . . .	120 R 5, 146 R 2
20 . . . . .	86 <i>c</i>	17 3 . . . . .	29 <i>e</i>	33 . . . . .	28 R 5, 38
23 . . . . .	106 <i>b</i>	5 . . . . .	I	40 . . . . .	98 <i>a</i>
7 3, 5 . . . . .	60 R 4	8 . . . . .	107 R 1, 146	41 . . . . .	138 <i>c</i>
7, 8 . . . . .	29 <i>a</i>	11 . . . . .	11 <i>c</i> , 40 <i>b</i>	51 . . . . .	120
9 . . . . .	10 R 3, 57 R 1	12 . . . . .	63 R 1, 63 R 2	2 2 . . . . .	55 <i>c</i>
23 . . . . .	8 R 2	15 . . . . .	11 R <i>e</i>	5 . . . . .	26, 47, 107 R 1
28 . . . . .	106 R 2	16 . . . . .	109	6 . . . . .	63 R 2
29 . . . . .	83, 91 R 1	17 . . . . .	55 <i>c</i>	8 . . . . .	78, 146 R 1
8 2 . . . . .	87, 116 R 5	18 3 . . . . .	86 <i>a</i> , 146	15, 18 . . . . .	107 R 1
8 . . . . .	29 <i>d</i>	11 . . . . .	101 R <i>d</i> , 132 R 2, 136 R 1	21 . . . . .	79
9 1 . . . . .	23	12 . . . . .	8, 131	22 . . . . .	60, 126 R 6 <i>a</i> , 136 R 1
2 . . . . .	126	14 . . . . .	63 R 2, 140	26 . . . . .	24 R 3, 110
3 . . . . .	126, 127 <i>d</i>	18 . . . . .	72 R 4	28 . . . . .	105
4 . . . . .	69 <i>a</i>	23 . . . . .	8, 60	31 . . . . .	24 R 4, 55 <i>a</i>
10 . . . . .	101 <i>d</i>	25 . . . . .	86 R 4	39 . . . . .	27, 28 R 5
13 . . . . .	24 <i>d</i>	29 . . . . .	91 <i>a</i> , 121	42 . . . . .	40 <i>b</i> , 55 <i>b</i>
10 9 . . . . .	116 R 4	32 . . . . .	133	44 . . . . .	57 R 1
11, 17 . . . . .	116 R 5	19 1 . . . . .	I, 135		

I KINGS	§§	I KINGS	§§	I KINGS	§§
3 4.	37 <i>d</i> , 44 R 2	10 21.	100 R 3, 128	18 26.	21/
6.	32, 107 R 1	22.	38 R 4, 38 R 5	28.	91 R 3
7.	90	29.	101 R 2	29.	101 R <i>b</i>
11.	58 <i>b</i> , 147	II 3.	113	30.	99
16.	36 <i>a</i> , 51 R 2	5.	12	39.	106 <i>d</i> , 115
18.	28 R 5, 36 R 4	7.	51 R 2	46.	108 R 3
22.	118	9.	22 R 4	19 1.	146
23.	5	10.	58 R 1, 95	2.	35 R 2, 120 R 4
25.	11 R <i>c</i>	14.	29 <i>a</i>	4.	69 <i>c</i>
26.	86 <i>b</i> , 136	16.	36 R 1	5.	6 R 2
4 1.	29 <i>a</i>	22.	146 R 2	6.	83
7.	54 R 1	30.	78 R 3	10.	111
13.	28 R 4	38.	130 <i>c</i>	11.	32 R 2, 32 R 4
5 2.	38 R 4	12 6.	65 R 2, 75, 100 <i>f</i>	13.	69 <i>a</i>
6.	14	8.	99 R 2	19.	38 R 3
6-8	54 <i>b</i>	12.	8 R 4	21.	29 R 7, 71
12.	14, 17, 37 <i>e</i>	13.	75	20 1.	17, 37 <i>e</i>
17.	78 R 2, 107 R 1,	16.	8 R 2, 8 R 3	6.	120 R 5
	146	17.	50 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>b</i>	7.	60 R 4
20, 22	107 R 1	19.	65 <i>d</i>	8.	63
23.	93	31.	15, 72 R 4	12.	91 R 1
29.	17	13 2.	144 R 3	14.	28 R 6
30.	36 <i>a</i>	2, 3	55 <i>c</i> , 100 R 4	16.	37 R 1
6 1.	91 R 2	12.	48 R 2, 144 R 1	18.	70 <i>a</i> , 111 R 3
7.	29 <i>e</i> , 80	13, 27	21 <i>d</i>	20.	58 R 1, 116 R 5
9.	78 R 2	18.	41 R 3	28.	56
18.	100 <i>d</i>	20.	141 R 2	31.	24 <i>c</i> , 106 <i>d</i> , 146
20.	78 R 2	21.	147	33.	50 <i>a</i>
32, 35	58 R 1	30.	117	35.	91 R 4
38.	38 R 3	31.	56, 57 R 1	37.	86 <i>c</i>
7 7.	43 <i>a</i>	14 4.	101 R <i>c</i>	39.	141
8.	45 R 2	5.	11 R <i>e</i> , 65 R 6	40.	4, 5, 141 R 1
10.	29 R 3	6.	75, 80	21 2.	4
12.	32 R 2	7.	76, 78 R 3, 147	3.	117 R 1
14.	29 <i>b</i> , 80	8.	93	6.	45 R 2, 130 <i>a</i> ,
15, 23, 26	44 R 2	10.	17 R 5		146 R 2
24.	17 R 6	11.	111	7.	45 R 1, 121
31.	38 R 6	13.	28 R 5, 147	10, 13	22 R 3
44.	37 <i>f</i>	14.	6 R 1	11.	99 R 2
8 1.	65 R 6, 145	24.	20 R 4	12.	58 <i>b</i>
5.	115	25.	28 R 5, 51 R 1	14.	39 R 1
8.	44 <i>b</i>	28.	145	15.	155
12.	145	15 13.	50 <i>b</i> , 101	19.	1, 25
27.	34 R 4, 44 <i>b</i> , 118	23.	28 R 5, 71, 71 R 3,	20.	126, 147
32.	93		72 R 3, 123 R 2	29.	147
41.	9 R 2	25, 28	38	22 3.	126 R 3
43.	69 R 1	16 8, 10, 15	38	6, 14	124
46.	44 <i>a</i>	11.	17	7.	65 R 2, 122, 123
47.	58 <i>a</i>	16.	22 R 3	8.	44 <i>a</i>
55.	67 R 3, 78	18.	22 R 3, 72 R 4	9.	19 R 1
59.	32 R 3	22.	73 R 4	10.	70 <i>a</i> , 80, 100 <i>f</i>
63.	111	24.	20 R 4, 29 <i>a</i> , 29 <i>d</i>	13.	29 R 7, 35 R 2,
64.	34 R 2	31.	90 R 1, 126 R 5		63, 71 R 2
9 6.	130 <i>c</i>	17 1.	152	16.	146
14.	37 <i>e</i>	14.	22 R 4	20.	5, 65 <i>d</i>
25.	54 R 1, 88	16.	116 R 2	22.	53 <i>a</i> , 60 R 4
26.	14	21.	63	24.	8 R 4
10 5.	44 R 2	24.	6 R 2	25.	9 <i>c</i>
6.	29 <i>e</i>	18 4.	37 <i>d</i>	27.	4, 29 <i>e</i>
7.	101 R <i>b</i>	7.	141, 141 R 1	28.	29 R 6, 130 R 4
8.	32 R 3	10.	54 <i>b</i> , 132	30.	73, 88
9.	50 <i>b</i> , 91 <i>a</i>	12.	141	35.	100 R 2
14.	37 R 3	13.	38 R 4, 47, 75	36.	117 R 3
16.	37 <i>e</i> , 37 R 4,	15.	120	41.	38
	44 R 2	21.	75, 130 <i>a</i>	47.	17

2 KINGS	§§	2 KINGS	§§	2 KINGS	§§
1 2 . . . . .	32 R 3, 125	7 8 . . . . .	19 R 1	16 14 . . . . .	29 c, 50 b
3 . . . . .	128	9 . . . . .	78 R 8, 128 R 1,	15 . . . . .	29 R 7
4 . . . . .	106 b	10 . . . . .	132 a, 132 R 2	17 . . . . .	29 c
8 . . . . .	24 R 3	13 . . . . .	20 R 4, 136 R 1	17 4 . . . . .	29 R 8
11, 13 . . . . .	83	16, 18 . . . . .	29 d	6 . . . . .	38 R 2
13, 14 . . . . .	37 R 5	19 . . . . .	136 R 1	13 . . . . .	28 R 6
2 9 . . . . .	136 R 1	8 5 . . . . .	141	21 . . . . .	78
10 . . . . .	82	8, 9 . . . . .	32 R 3	26 . . . . .	127 b
11 . . . . .	86 R 4, 100 f, 141	10 . . . . .	58 b	28-41 . . . . .	100 R 2
16 . . . . .	128 R 4	13 . . . . .	22 c, 43 b, 72 R 1,	29 . . . . .	29 R 8
17 . . . . .	36 a, 37 e	17 . . . . .	75, 146 R 2	18 4 . . . . .	58 b
3 1 . . . . .	38	22 . . . . .	36 R 3	9, 10 . . . . .	38
3 . . . . .	116	22 . . . . .	45 R 2	17 . . . . .	32 R 5
4 . . . . .	29 d, 37 d, 54 R 1	25 . . . . .	38	21 . . . . .	132 a
8 . . . . .	8 R 4, 144 R 1	29 . . . . .	29 R 1, 44 R 2	23 . . . . .	20 R 4, 37 d
11 . . . . .	65 c, 65 d, 122	9 1 . . . . .	35 R 2	26-32 . . . . .	60
13 . . . . .	118, 128 R 2	3 . . . . .	40 b	31 . . . . .	64
14 . . . . .	120 R 5, 131	4 . . . . .	29 b	32 . . . . .	55 b, 65 d, 96
16 . . . . .	29 R 8, 88 R 2	5 . . . . .	21 f	36 . . . . .	58 b
24 . . . . .	86 R 3	8 . . . . .	17 R 5	37 . . . . .	70 a
26 . . . . .	113	10 . . . . .	139	19 1 . . . . .	78 R 5
27 . . . . .	43 a	12 . . . . .	11 R e, 117	3 . . . . .	127 b
4 1 . . . . .	19 R 1, 107 R 1	15 . . . . .	29 R 1	4 . . . . .	9 b, 31, 53 b
8, 11, 18 . . . . .	21 R 2, 145	18 . . . . .	1 R 1, 7 b, 8 R 3	11 . . . . .	107 R 1, 121
9 . . . . .	30	20 . . . . .	44 a	14 . . . . .	116 R 1
13 . . . . .	67 b, 94, 122	25 . . . . .	28 R 5, 146 R 3	17 . . . . .	118
19 . . . . .	117	26 . . . . .	57 R 1, 120	22 . . . . .	7 a, 58 a
29 . . . . .	130 a	32 . . . . .	36 R 5	25 . . . . .	65 R 1, 109 R 2
41 . . . . .	136 R 1	33 . . . . .	102	27 . . . . .	90
43 . . . . .	4 R 1, 7 b, 88	35 . . . . .	91 R 4	28 . . . . .	56
5 2 . . . . .	71 R 1	10 2 . . . . .	136 R 1	32 . . . . .	77
3 . . . . .	135 R 2	2, 3 . . . . .	55 b	37 . . . . .	141 R 1
4 . . . . .	11 R e	4 . . . . .	107	20 3 . . . . .	146
5 . . . . .	29 R 3	6 . . . . .	28 R 6, 34	4 . . . . .	32 R 2, 73 R 1,
6 . . . . .	136 R 1	10 . . . . .	102		141 R 1
10 . . . . .	60 R 4, 65 d	13 . . . . .	73 R 5, 104 c	9 . . . . .	41 R 2, 124
11 . . . . .	21 R 2, 86 c	14 . . . . .	37 c	12 . . . . .	16
12 . . . . .	116 R 3, 126 R 4	15 . . . . .	32 R 5, 126,	13 . . . . .	32 R 2
13 . . . . .	64, 111 R 1	23 . . . . .	132 R 2	14 . . . . .	45 R 1
17 . . . . .	79, 132 R 2	25 . . . . .	128 R 4	21 6 . . . . .	82
20 . . . . .	51 R 2, 120 R 3	25 . . . . .	11 R b	12 . . . . .	113, 132 R 2
21 . . . . .	21 d	11 4 . . . . .	28 R 5, 75	13 . . . . .	86 c
22 . . . . .	6 R 2, 36 a	11 4 . . . . .	17	22 1 . . . . .	36 R 3
23 . . . . .	29 d, 83	12 . . . . .	17 R 4	8 . . . . .	111
25 . . . . .	152	14 . . . . .	117	13 . . . . .	9 a
26 . . . . .	121	14 10 . . . . .	35 R 2, 108 R 1	18 . . . . .	99
6 3 . . . . .	83, 107 R 1	12-17 . . . . .	44 R 2	20 . . . . .	17 R 3, 113
5 . . . . .	72 R 4	16 . . . . .	71 R 2	23 3 . . . . .	22 R 3
6 . . . . .	75	18 . . . . .	51 R 2	8 . . . . .	108 R 1
8 . . . . .	11 R e	21 . . . . .	67 b	9 . . . . .	44 b, 155
9 . . . . .	96 R 1	13 11 . . . . .	116	10 . . . . .	96 R 1
10 . . . . .	38 R 5	14 . . . . .	43 a, 67 b	17 . . . . .	20 R 4, 29 c
12 . . . . .	35 R 2, 44 a	19 . . . . .	39 d, 94, 131 R 2	24 3 . . . . .	101 R d, 109
16 . . . . .	10	20, 21 . . . . .	141 R 1		R 2
19 . . . . .	97 R 1	14 7 . . . . .	58 c	12 . . . . .	38
20 . . . . .	4	10 . . . . .	53 b	14 . . . . .	17, 37 e
22 . . . . .	111 R 1	12 . . . . .	29 R 6	25 1 . . . . .	17, 38 R 2
25 . . . . .	38 R 6	23 . . . . .	38	5 . . . . .	115
31 . . . . .	120 R 4	26 . . . . .	17 R 5, 76	8, 27 . . . . .	38
32 . . . . .	45	15 1 . . . . .	39 R 1	9 . . . . .	32 R 5
33 . . . . .	6 R 1, 100 f	13 . . . . .	29 d, 38	10 . . . . .	144 R 5
7 1 . . . . .	29 d	16 . . . . .	20 R 4	15 . . . . .	29 R 8
3 . . . . .	41 c, 145	17, 23, 27 . . . . .	38	16 . . . . .	32 R 2
4 . . . . .	130 b	21 . . . . .	123 R 2	17 . . . . .	36 R 3
7 . . . . .	1 R 1	30, 32 . . . . .	38	19 . . . . .	9 R 2



ISAIHAH	§§	ISAIHAH	§§	ISAIHAH	§§
1 2.	58 <i>a</i> , 105	5 28.	100 <i>f</i>	11 14.	29 R 5
3.	105	29.	59	12 1.	65 R 6
4.	24 <i>a</i> , 39 <i>b</i> , 117	6 1.	50 <i>b</i> , 138 <i>b</i>	5.	133
5, 6	22 R 3, 101 R <i>b</i>	2.	11 R <i>d</i> , 29 R 8,	6.	14
7.	98 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>c</i>	38 R 4, 100 <i>f</i> , 101 R <i>d</i>		13 2.	60 R 3
8.	58 <i>b</i>	3.	5, 29 R 8, 54 R 1,	3.	3, 24 <i>c</i>
9.	39 <i>d</i> , 131		102	4.	117 R 3
11.	28 R 4, 40 <i>b</i> , 73	4.	80	8.	24 <i>c</i> , 29 R 6, 101
13.	96 <i>Obs.</i> , 106 <i>a</i>	5.	24 <i>d</i> , 41 <i>a</i> , 110, 117	9.	41 R 1, 96
14.	90, 101 R <i>d</i>	6.	139, 143	14.	22 R 2, 139
15.	73, 111, 113	7.	56, 105 R 2	17, 18.	44 <i>a</i>
17.	84	8.	7 <i>a</i> , 101 R <i>b</i>	22.	113
18.	22 <i>e</i> , 40 <i>b</i>	9.	60 R 4, 67 <i>a</i> , 86 <i>c</i>	14 2.	73 R 4, 73 R 7,
19.	34 R 5, 83	10.	53 <i>c</i> , 108		100 R 5
21.	117	11.	41 <i>c</i> , 80, 128, 145	3.	91 R 2, 109
23.	44 <i>a</i> , 116 R 1	13.	83, 132 R 2	6.	67 <i>b</i> , 67 R 2
24.	62	7 2.	116 R 5	8.	44 <i>a</i> , 99
25.	101 R <i>d</i>	5.	101 R <i>d</i> , 147	17.	101
26.	81 R 2	6.	29 <i>a</i>	19.	28 R 1, 98 <i>b</i>
30.	24 <i>d</i> , 98 R 1	7.	1 R 2, 109 R 2	21.	1 R 2, 41 R 1,
2 2.	57 R 1, 100 R 2,	8.	101		109 R 2
	136 R 1	9.	130 R 3	23.	78 R 5, 84
7, 8	80	13.	34 R 2, 90	25.	105 R 2
8.	116 R 1	14.	11 <i>b</i> , 21 <i>e</i>	27.	99 R 3
9.	41 R 1, 49 <i>b</i> ,	15.	84	31.	29 R 6, 88 R 2
	73 R 5, 128 R 2	23.	17	32.	108
11.	51 R 2, 116 R 2	24.	29 <i>e</i> , 108	15 3.	29 R 6, 73 R 3
20.	3, 24 R 2, 116 R 1	25.	71 R 4, 108 R 3	7.	115, 143
22.	97 R 1, 101 R <i>b</i>	8 1.	101 R <i>b</i>	8.	69 R 1
3 1.	100 R 1	4.	108	16 2.	22 R 2, 69 R 1
3.	24 <i>d</i> , 98 R 1	6.	99, 147	4.	115
5.	17 R 5	9, 10.	64, 132 <i>b</i>	8.	116
6.	69 <i>a</i>	12.	10 R 2	9.	20 R 4, 75
7.	73 R 5, 75, 76	13.	106 <i>c</i>	10.	108 R 1, 109
8.	41 R 1	20.	116 R 1	12.	41 <i>c</i> , 130 <i>b</i>
9.	11 <i>b</i> , 41 R 3	23.	10 R 2	17 1.	101
12.	106 <i>b</i>	9 1.	22 R 1, 41 <i>b</i> , 106 <i>b</i>	2.	100 <i>d</i> , 139
15.	41 R 3	2.	28 R 1, 41 <i>b</i>	5.	91 R 3
16.	1 R 3, 51 R 2,	5.	24 <i>a</i> , 41 R 1, 49 <i>b</i>	6.	32 R 2, 36 R 5, 113
	86 <i>c</i> , 147	6.	23	13.	116 R 1
16, 17	56	8.	29 R 6, 115	14.	145 R 2
24.	29 <i>e</i>	11.	4 R 1, 22 R 3	18 1, 2.	116 R 5
26.	141 R 3	14.	106 <i>d</i>	2.	1 R 1, 99
4 1.	111	10 7.	29 <i>d</i> , 90	3.	96 R 5
2.	4, 6	10.	34 R 3	5.	41 R 4, 56
3.	106 <i>b</i>	12.	26	19 4.	31, 116 R 4
4.	41 <i>c</i> , 51 R 2, 130 <i>b</i>	13.	51 R 6	8.	28 R 3
5 1.	14, 24 R 3, 62,	14.	22 <i>e</i> , 91 R 1, 91 R 3	11.	32 R 5
	101 R <i>b</i>	15.	91 <i>c</i> , 91 R 2, 128 R 1	12.	65 <i>d</i> , 126 R 8
2.	77	20.	98 <i>c</i>	13.	111, 115
4.	94, 126 R 4	22.	73 R 2, 99	14.	67 R 1
5.	55 <i>b</i> , 88	25.	101 R <i>a</i> , 143	18.	67 R 3
6.	73 R 2, 78 R 3, 96 R 1	24.	56	19.	113
8.	100 <i>e</i> , 100 R 4, 127 <i>d</i>	26.	56, 101 R <i>d</i>	22.	86 <i>c</i>
9.	30, 120 R 3, 128	27.	57	20 1.	91 <i>a</i>
11.	28 R 1, 141 R 3	28.	41 <i>b</i>	2.	88
12.	29 <i>e</i> , 45 R 3	30.	32 R 1, 109 R 3	3.	70 <i>a</i>
13, 14	41 <i>b</i> , 41 R 1, 115	32.	69 R 2, 94	4.	24 <i>d</i> , 70 <i>a</i> , 71 R 1
17	41 R 1, 101 R <i>d</i> ,	II 3.	101 R <i>b</i>	6.	107
	111 R 1	5.	22 R 1	21 1.	93
19.	63 R 1, 148	6.	52, 138 <i>b</i>	5.	84, 88 R 2
23.	100 <i>e</i> , 116 R 1	8.	41 <i>b</i> , 111, 111 R 3	7.	32 R 1, 67 <i>b</i> , 132 <i>a</i>
24.	91 <i>a</i> , 96	9.	73 R 7, 100 R 5	8.	70 <i>a</i>
25.	4 R 1, 17 R 4, 49 <i>b</i>	10.	106 <i>b</i>	II.	108
26.	71 R 2	13.	105 R 2	12.	83

ISAI AH	§§	ISAI AH	§§	ISAI AH	§§
22 2.	24 c, 98 b, 98 R 1	30 14.	44 R 3, 67 R 1	41 7.	72 R 4
3.	98 R 1, 101 R c	15.	84 R 1	15.	24 R 3
11.	109 R 2	16.	32 R 6, 118	20.	14 R 2, 53 R 1
13.	84, 88 R 2	19.	41 a, 86 b	23.	63 R 1
16.	21 f, 69 R 1	20.	113	24.	34 R 3, 144
17.	86 c	22.	24 R 2, 116 R 1	25.	69 R 4, 144
24.	32 R 5	31 1, 3	105 R 2	26, 28	65 d
23 4.	128 R 6	4.	151	28.	63 R 1, 132 b
5.	23	5.	55 b, 86 R 4	42 2.	73 R 5
12.	28 R 6, 32 R 1, 97 R 1	6.	10 R 2	6.	65 R 6
15.	101 R d	8.	128 R 1	7.	31
16.	82	32 2.	23, 24 c	16.	143
24 2.	20 R 4, 151 R 2	4.	14	17.	67 b
7.	22 R 3	8.	14, 111	18.	21 f
12.	80, 113	11.	113	21.	83 R 1
16.	67 b	12.	108	22.	88 R 3, 88 R 5
18.	49 b	13.	28 R 3	24.	6 R 3, 9 R 1, 84
23.	32 R 6	33 1.	83 R 2	43 4.	92
25 9.	65 b, 65 R 1	4.	67 R 1	9.	41 R 5
26 3.	100 R 7	6.	28 R 1, 106 d	10, 13.	106 R 2
7.	76	9.	116 R 6	12.	146 R 4
9.	109 R 3	10.	40 b	13.	14 R 2, 32 R 2
10.	132 R 2	14, 16	73	25.	106 R 2
27 1.	30	24.	98 R 1	28.	24 c, 51 R 6
4.	65 R 4	34 4.	22 e, 67 R 1	44 8.	145
5, 6	65 R 6	10.	34 R 4	12, 13.	49 b
11.	17 R 2	13.	73 R 2, 116	14.	93
12.	35 R 2	16.	11 R c	16.	117
13.	109	35 1, 2	65 R 6	21.	73 R 4
28 1.	28 R 3, 98 b	2.	28 R 1, 41 R 1, 86 R 3	28.	96 R 4
2.	22 R 3, 41 b	3.	31	45 1.	96
4.	28 R 3, 32 R 5, 108 R 1	9.	32 R 5	4.	50 b
6.	101	36 6.	54 a	4, 5	139
7.	22 d, 101 R c	8, 16	20 R 4	9, 10	45 R 1
8.	22 R 3	9.	27, 35 R 2	14.	127 d
9.	28 R 1, 75	18.	127 c	17.	16, 67 b
13.	53 c	37 16	106 R 2	19.	69 R 1
15.	69 R 4, 76, 78 R 3	22.	22 R 3, 24 a, 28 R 6	23.	120
16.	28 R 3, 99	29.	56, 90 R 1, 147	46 4.	106 R 2
17.	78 R 5, 111 R 1	30.	60 R 2, 88	9.	127 d
19.	145	38 7.	146	47 1.	83 R 1, 140
21.	32 R 1, 101 R d	10.	80	8, 10	127 d
24.	108 R 1	15.	58 R 1, 101 R d	9.	36 R 4, 41 R 1
26.	58 b	17.	101	11.	139
27.	44 a, 128 R 6	18.	98 R 1, 128 R 6	12.	9 R 3
28.	44 a, 86 a, 86 R 2	20.	94	48 3.	51 R 6
29.	19 R 4, 65 R 2	39 1.	48 c, 48 R 2	8.	146 R 3
29 1.	18, 25	3.	29 R 1	9.	101
2.	73 R 7	40 1.	40 b	12.	106 R 2
4.	83	7, 8	40 c	13.	132 R 2
7.	98 R 1	10.	101 R a	18.	39 d, 134
8.	54 a, 100 a	14.	17 R 2	20, 21	49 b
9.	88 R 4	17.	34 R 3, 80, 127 d	49 4.	71 R 2
11, 12	54 a, 132 a	18.	8 R 2	6.	34 R 2, 111 R 2
14.	86 R 3	20.	24 R 5, 44 R 3, 143	21.	138 b
15.	82	22, 23	99 R 2	50 2.	65 R 6, 86 a, 126 R 4, 128
16.	51 R 5, 117, 122	24.	49 a	4.	72 R 4, 75
20.	58 a	25.	40 b, 65 d	9.	144 R 1
30 1.	101	26.	69 R 2, 101 R c	10.	73 R 1
6.	14 R 2	27.	45 R 1, 53 R 1	11.	101 R b
7.	71 R 2	30 a.	59, 132 R 2	51 1.	143
8.	109 R 2	41 1.	101	2.	44 R 3, 51 R 6
12.	96, 147	2.	22 R 2, 144	9.	101 R d
		4.	106 R 2	9, 10	106 R 2
		5.	45 R 2		

ISAIAH		§§	JEREMIAH		§§	JEREMIAH		§§	
51	10.	22 R 4	1	5.	45	8	13.	86 R 2, 144	
	12.	44 R 3, 106 R 2		11.	111 R 1		15.	88 R 2	
	19.	8 R 1		12.	82	16.	28 R 1, 32 R 6, 49 b		
	21.	28 R 1, 98 R 1	2	1.	60 R 4	18.	101 R 2, p. 143 n.		
52	6.	106 R 2		2.	100 R 3, 101 R b	23.	65 b, 135 R 3		
	12, 13	51 R 3		5.	8 R 2	9	1.	65 b, 135 R 3	
	15.	10, 41 R 1		6.	143		5.	96 R 3	
53	2.	65 c		8.	144		14.	29 R 7, 98 c	
	3.	28 R 4, 100 R 7		11.	138 a, 144		17.	73 R 2	
	4.	28 R 4, 76, 98 b, 118		16.	71		21.	136 R 1, 139	
	5.	3, 39 R 1, 101 R c, 109		17.	100 R 6		23.	72 R 1, 88, 108 R 1	
	6, 7	22 e		17, 19	90 R 1	10	3.	1 R 2	
	7.	138 b		18.	8 R 3		4.	78 R 5	
	9.	101 R d		21.	32 R 2, 71 R 4, 101 R b		5.	84	
	11.	32 R 1, 83 R 5		25.	32 R 5		10.	116 R 4	
54	11.	100 R 3		27.	22 R 3, 55 c		14.	101 R c	
	14.	60 R 2		28.	69 R 3		20.	73 R 1	
	15.	130 R 3		31.	21 f	11	7.	87 R 1	
55	4.	28 R 4		32.	140	12	1.	104	
	5.	143		34.	116 R 6		4.	116	
	9.	151		37.	138 a		6.	83 R 5, 106 a	
	10.	51 R 2, 154		3 I.	88 R 2		8.	73 R 6	
	13.	44 R 3, 143		5.	73 R 5, 116 R 6		12.	28 R 5	
56	3.	22 R 4		7, 10	32 R 1	13	4.	20 R 2	
	5.	116 R 1		15.	87		7.	44 b	
	9.	22 R 3		20.	151		10.	32 R 3, 65 R 6	
	10.	28 R 1, 90		25.	65 R 5		12.	86 b	
57	2.	71 R 2	4	3, 4	60		18.	82, 83	
	3.	144 R 4		5.	83 R 5		19.	29 R 6, 116 R 5	
	8.	116 R 6		7.	128		20.	142, 143	
	11.	136 R 1		10.	58 b		27.	24 R 4	
	17.	51 R 6, 87, 87 R 1		11.	28 R 3, 95	14	8, 9	143	
	20.	32 R 2, 70 a, 84		13.	41 a		15.	138 c	
58	6.	88, 88 R 3		14.	116		16.	100 R 2	
	10.	65 R 6		19, 21	65 R 5, 65 R 6		18.	130 b	
	11.	78 R 5		22.	100 R 3		19.	88 R 2	
59	2.	100 R 2		28.	109 R 3		22.	106 R 2	
	4, 13	84, 88 R 2		30.	97 R 1, 141 R 3	15	9.	24 R 6	
	8, 12	116	5	1.	60 R 4, 125		10.	29 R 6	
	10.	65 R 5		7.	8 R 4		13.	136 R 1	
	19.	140		9.	11 R e		15.	32 R 5, 90	
60	7.	101 R d		13.	19 R 2		18.	126 R 7	
	14.	24 R 6, 71 R 2		15.	9 R 2, 143	16	6.	108, 109	
61	10.	65 R 6, 73 R 3		18.	78 R 7		12.	82, 95	
	10, 11	22 R 2		22.	132 R 2		13.	72 R 4	
62	1.	44 R 3	6	8.	100 R 3		14, 15	155	
	5.	151		10.	65 R 5		17	2.	32 R 2
	12.	100 R 3		13.	34		5-8	54 a	
63	3.	65 R 6		14.	101 R d		6.	73	
	3-5	51 R 6		15.	86 b, 96 R 5		10.	96 R 4	
	7.	32 R 1		16.	8 R 4, 32 R 2		18.	62, 107	
	11.	28 R 3, 98 c		20.	32 R 2		23, 24, 27	95	
	19.	39 d, 134		29.	86 c	18	4, 8	132 a	
64	9, 10	24 R 2	7	6.	109		15.	100 R 3	
	10.	28 R 4, 116 R 2		9.	88 R 2		16.	73 R 6	
65	1.	81, 144		9, 10	55 b		18.	62	
	2.	99 R 1		13.	87 R 1	19	1.	11 R a	
	4.	29 e		17.	122, 123		12.	96 R 4	
	5.	73 R 4		18.	88 R 1		13.	88 R 1	
	18.	60 R 2, 78 R 3		19.	11 b	20	7.	73 R 4	
	20.	71 R 1	8	3.	41 c, 81		8.	145	
66	6.	117 R 3		5.	29 R 5, 67 b		9	32 k 4, 132 a	
	10.	67 b		7.	40 c	10		53 R 1, 65 b	
				9.	7 b	11.		67 R 2, 143	

JEREMIAH	§§	JEREMIAH	§§	EZEKIEL	§§	
20 17, 18	45 R 2, 48 a	38 23	108	13 12	132 R 2	
21 1	91 a	39 11	48 R 2	22	29 R 4, 96 R 4	
9	55 c	14	91 R 4	14 3	86 a	
22 4	28 R 5, 116 R 1	41 4	96 R 5	7	65 R 6	
10	86 c	6	86 R 4	22	72 R 4, 132 R 2	
14	88 R 1	42 6	149	15 4	132 R 2	
16	19	10	86 R 2, 149 R 2	16 4	86 R 2	
17	32 R 5	16, 17	57 R 3	7	34 R 4	
18	117	19	40 b	27	29 R 4	
19	67 b, 87	44 19	84 R 1, 96 R 4	34	109	
24	120 R 5, 130 R 3	25	84 R 1, 114	38	67 R 2	
30	76, 83 R 2	26	119	17 9	91 R 3	
23 14	55 b, 149 R 2	28	11 R f	10	91 a	
17	86 c	46 5	1 R 1, 86 R 3	21	72 R 4	
18	65 d	6	128 R 2	18 5, 18	130 R 5	
28	71 R 2	9	28 R 6	6	29 e	
29	44 R 3, 143	16	32 R 2, 99 R 1	10	35 R 2	
36	31, 116 R 4	48 2	101	19	41 R 2	
39	56, 86 c	9	86 R 2	20	101 R a	
24 2	29 e, 32 R 2	32	20 R 4	23	86 a	
25 4	87 R 1	36	25, 115	29	116 R 6	
5	64	38	29 e	32	136 R 1	
26	20 R 4	45	24 R 3, 101 R c	19 9	149	
29	121	49 12	106 R 2	20 9	149 R 2	
30	67 R 3	36	21 e	26	146	
34	96 R 5	50 10	69 b	38	116 R 6	
26 5	87 R 1	34	86 R 3	21 19	32 R 2	
18	71 R 4	46	113	20	96 R 1, 149 R 1	
27 3	32 R 2, 99 R 1	51 24, 35	69 b	25	72 R 3	
7	1	46	127 c	31	88 R 2	
8	72 R 4, 91 R 4	49	94	22 4	116 R 6	
16	69 R 2	52 7	44 R 2, 50 a	18	29 c	
18	69 a, 149 R 2	20	29 R 4	24	100 R 3	
28 9	9 b, 146	EZEKIEL			23 16	69 b
16	21 R 1	1 1	38	28	10	
30 6	98 R 1, 125, 140	8	36 R 4	30, 46	88 R 2	
12	32 R 5	23	11 R c	32	116 R 6	
14, 15	96 R 2	2 8	29 e	40	9 R 3	
21	41 R 2	9	31	42	113	
31 1	29 R 7	3 3	63 R 2	43	1	
5, 6	41 a	21	29 R 7	24 2	11 c	
7	67 R 2	4 13	32 R 2	25 3	117	
9	116 R 6	14	100 R 3	12	67 b	
15	116 R 1, 127 b	5 16	63 R 3	26 10	28 R 1	
18, 25	143	6 9	11 c	14	116 R 6	
2 4	86 a, 111, 140	11	28 R 3	17	22 R 4	
10	21 e	7 2	36 R 3	20	149	
12	20 R 4	8 6	32 R 5	27 15	3 R 2	
14	32 R 2, 55 a	14	91 R 1	30	70 b	
20	136	8 6	69 R 2	34	100 R 6	
33, 44	88 R 1	9 2	32 R 2, 99 R 2	36	29 e	
33 20	29 R 4	2, 3, 11	100 R 7	28 7	32 R 5	
22	28 R 1	10 3	98 R 1	16	101	
34 3	86 a, 111	9	29 R 7	29 7	54 a	
35 14	79	15	32 R 2	30 2	117	
36 18	44 R 1	11 7	1 R 2	16	24 R 4	
22	72 R 4	12	86 R 3	31 16	28 R 4	
23	88 R 1	13	9 R 1	32 25	108 R 2	
32	38 R 5	12	67 R 3	33 4	108 R 1	
37 9	9 R 3, 11 c, 51 R 4	13	69 b	18	14 R 2	
17	126	12 24	147	33	109 R 2	
21	88 R 1	13 2	28 R 1	34 11	56	
38 4	79	3	149 R 2	12	32 R 2	
14	32 R 2	7	108	35 10	72 R 4	
16	99 R 2			36 3	72 R 1, 147 R 2	



AMOS	§§	MICAH	§§	HABAKKUK	§§
5 8, 9	. . . . . 98a	1 10.	. . . . . 86b	1 14.	. . . . . 100 R 3
12.	. . . . . 146 R 3	2 1, 2	. . . . . 54a	2 1.	. . . . . 65 R 5
15.	. . . . . 43b	3.	. . . . . 71 R 2	14.	. . . . . 73 R 7, 90, 143
16.	. . . . . 117	4.	. . . . . 108	15.	. . . . . 88 R 1
19.	. . . . . 22c, 54a	7.	. . . . . 32 R 2	16.	. . . . . 34 R 2
26, 27	. . . . . 57 R 1	8.	. . . . . 98 R 1	17.	. . . . . 23
6 1.	. . . . . 34 R 5, 144 R 4	10.	. . . . . 143	18.	. . . . . 41 R 2
2.	. . . . . 24 R 6	11.	. . . . . 131	19.	. . . . . 24 R 4, 117
3.	. . . . . 19 R 2, 49a	12.	. . . . . 20 R 4, 29 R 6	3 2.	. . . . . 45 R 4
8.	. . . . . 100 R 5	13.	. . . . . 49b, 50b	8.	. . . . . 29 R 4
10.	. . . . . 11c	3 2-5	. . . . . 99	9.	. . . . . 67b, 78 R 3, 86 R 3
11.	. . . . . 95, 126, 127d	4.	. . . . . 65 R 6	10.	. . . . . 45 R 2
11.	. . . . . 146 R 4	5.	. . . . . 55c, 99 R 2,	13.	. . . . . 91 R 3
12.	. . . . . 17 R 6, 108		. . . . . 132 R 2	15.	. . . . . 109 R 3
13.	. . . . . 128 R 1	5, 9	. . . . . 100 R 4	17.	. . . . . 116
7 1.	. . . . . 100a	6.	. . . . . 101 R c, 109	ZEPHANIAH	
2.	. . . . . 130b	8.	. . . . . 155	1 2.	. . . . . 86 R 2
2, 5	. . . . . 8 R 1	9.	. . . . . 14	8, 12	. . . . . 57 R 2
4.	. . . . . 57 R 1	11.	. . . . . 44a	9.	. . . . . 98a
6.	. . . . . 4 R 1	12.	. . . . . 80	14.	. . . . . 70b
7.	. . . . . 139	4 6.	. . . . . 14, 63 R 3, 99	2 1.	. . . . . 88 R 4, 100 R 3, 145
12.	. . . . . 45 R 4, 101 R b	9.	. . . . . 67b, 86 R 3	2.	. . . . . 91 R 1, 128
13.	. . . . . 22 R 3, 104	11.	. . . . . 116	12.	. . . . . 21f
14.	. . . . . 104	12.	. . . . . 22e	13.	. . . . . 65 R 6
17.	. . . . . 105	13.	. . . . . 76	14.	. . . . . 136
8 4.	. . . . . 96 R 4	14.	. . . . . 24 R 3, 101 R a	15.	. . . . . 127d
5.	. . . . . 65d	5 2.	. . . . . 41c, 108 R 1	3 4.	. . . . . 14, 24c, 24 R 3
9.	. . . . . 57 R 2, 73 R 7	4.	. . . . . 24a, 29e	5.	. . . . . 100 R 3
14.	. . . . . 119	7.	. . . . . 130b	7.	. . . . . 83
9 1.	. . . . . 28 R 5, 108 R 1	8.	. . . . . 65 R 6	11.	. . . . . 24 R 2
2-4	. . . . . 130a	6 7.	. . . . . 76	17.	. . . . . 44 R 3, 143
5.	. . . . . 49a, 51 R 4,	8.	. . . . . 91 R 3	19.	. . . . . 14
	. . . . . 100 R 4	13.	. . . . . 87	20.	. . . . . 96 R 3
7.	. . . . . 126 R 4	14.	. . . . . 65 R 6	HAGGAI	
8.	. . . . . 86b, 86 R 1, 154	16.	. . . . . 51 R 4, 149 R 3	1 4.	. . . . . 32 R 2, 70a
9.	. . . . . 109, 146 R 4,	7 1.	. . . . . 117, 128 R 6, 143	6.	. . . . . 109
11.	. . . . . 101 R d	2.	. . . . . 77, 127b	9.	. . . . . 88 R 2
OBADIAH		3.	. . . . . 49a, 106d	12.	. . . . . 126
1 5.	. . . . . 130b	4.	. . . . . 34 R 3	15.	. . . . . 96 R 5
8.	. . . . . 56	8.	. . . . . 130 R 4, 132 R 2	17.	. . . . . 22 R 1, 28 R 1,
9, 10	. . . . . 101 R c	10.	. . . . . 65 R 6, 113		. . . . . 72 R 4, 128 R 3
10.	. . . . . 23	16.	. . . . . 22 R 3	19.	. . . . . 101 R b
12-14	. . . . . 63	17.	. . . . . 101		
JONAH		19.	. . . . . 83		
1 3, 4	. . . . . 14	NAHUM		ZECCHARIAH	
6.	. . . . . 8 R 3, 70a	1 2.	. . . . . 24 R 3	1 2.	. . . . . 67b
8.	. . . . . 8 R 4	4.	. . . . . 49a	13.	. . . . . 29e
10.	. . . . . 67b	8.	. . . . . 78 R 7	14.	. . . . . 67b
11.	. . . . . 65d	12.	. . . . . 151 R 1	2 5.	. . . . . 139
14.	. . . . . 62	2 3.	. . . . . 108 R 1	8.	. . . . . 71 R 1
2 7.	. . . . . 106b	6.	. . . . . 69b	3 1.	. . . . . 21c
8.	. . . . . P. 143 n.	9.	. . . . . 1 R 1	3.	. . . . . 100 R 2
11.	. . . . . 146 R 4	3 4.	. . . . . 24 R 3	4.	. . . . . 88 R 1
3 3.	. . . . . 34 R 6	11.	. . . . . 65 R 6	8.	. . . . . 21f
4.	. . . . . 69c	16.	. . . . . 49a	4 7.	. . . . . 32 R 2
9.	. . . . . 43 R 1	HABAKKUK		10.	. . . . . 29c
4 2.	. . . . . 82	1 2, 3	. . . . . 41 R 2	5 11.	. . . . . 116 R 6
10.	. . . . . 24 R 3	5.	. . . . . 88 R 4	6 10.	. . . . . 88 R 2
11.	. . . . . 121	6.	. . . . . 143	12.	. . . . . 144 R 3
MICAH		10.	. . . . . 51 R 4	14.	. . . . . 113
1 2.	. . . . . 21f	11.	. . . . . 6 R 1	7 2.	. . . . . 48 R 2
9.	. . . . . 109 R 2, 116, 116 R 6	13.	. . . . . 34 R 2	5.	. . . . . 73 R 4, 88 R 1,
					. . . . . 136 R 1

ZECHARIAH		§§	PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§				
7	7.	72	R 4	6	11.	68	22	8.	73	R 6
	9.	67	b	7	5.	98	c	22.	41	R 5, 51
	11.	101	R c		7.	41	R 5			101
	14.	17	R 5	10.		31		29.		100a
8	2.	67	R 2	11.		22	R 3	30.	41	R 1, 49
	10.	51	R 6	8	5.	19	R 4, 43	b, 150	32.	97
	13.	29	e	6.	7.	51	R 4, 75, 78	R 2	23	2.
	15.	83		7.	5.	51	R 5	4.		19
	17.	72	R 4	8.	8.	19	R 4	6.		101
	23.	146	R 3	9	7.			1	24	4.
9	5.	65	R 6	16.		6	R 3, 143	8.		7
	9.	17	R 3, 136	18.		69	R 2	25	2.	62
10	7.	65	R 6	19.		128	R 6	9.		65
11	2.	32	R 2	21.		146	R 3	10.		29
	4.	24	c	10	4.	146	R 1	11.		56
	5.	116	R 1	5.	6.	29	e, 69	R 1, 106	b	94
	7.	35	R 2	6.		146	R 2	14.		9
12	10.	9	R 3, 88	11, 13		146	R 1	26	1.	44
13	9.	91	R 1, 91	16.		41	R 5	4, 5		45
14	4.	32	R 5	11	2.	41	R 3	6.		62
	10.	32	R 2	3.		41	R 2	27	1.	7
	12.	88, 116	R 1	4.		102, 106	b	2.		58
				6.		65	R 6	6.		62
				12	3.	29	R 8, 67	R 3	9.	65
				4.		65	R 6	10.		51
				6.		40	b, 144	28	1.	101
				8.				30		39
				13	4.	67	R 2	1.		21
				5.		73		10.		8
				14	2.	65	R 5	13.		149
				5.		67	b	31	5.	6
				7.		135	R 3	6.		41
				16	6.			20.		32
				9.		51	R 2	24.		101
				11.		17	R 2	32	1.	98
				17	3.	90	R 1	2.		143
				5.		88	R 5	5.		51
				8.		45	R 4	8.		109
				9.		6	R 3	9.		128
				10.		17	R 4, 109	R 3	10.	94, 32
				11.		71		33	17.	22
				13, 14		109	R 3	34	6.	128
				18	1.			8.		49
				4.		97	R 1	35	2.	101
				7.		45	R 2	8.		69
				12.		51	R 5	12.		78
				18.		32	R 2	14.		101
				22.		101		15.		144
				28.		31		16.		28
				31.		106		19.		29
				33.		78	R 2, 98	c, 99	36	7.
				35.		116		13.		41
				36.		90	R 1	37	3.	73
				40.		98	R 1	14.		22
				41.		78	R 7	27.		64
				47.		41	R 5	31.		116
				19	8, 9, 10	98	b	38.		41
				10.		29	e	40.		49
				11.		97	R 1, 99	38	9.	58
				20	4.	63	R 1	14.		143
				7.		41	a	15.		100
				8.		5		20.		29
				9.		58	a	39	6.	28
				21	2.	65	R 6	7.		101
				13.		78	R 7	8.		41
								12.		132, R 2

  

MALACHI		§§	PSALMS
1	4.	83	
	7, 12	100	R 6
	8.	126	R 1
	10.	135	
	10, 11	22	R 3
	11.	109	
	13.	117	
2	6.	113	
	11.	116	R 5
	12.	65	R 6
	13.	78	R 2
	15.	100	R 6
	16.	144	R 4
3	9.	21	f
	10.	125	
	19.	150	
	24.	77	

  

PSALMS		§§
1	1.	21
	3.	101
	3-6	44
	4.	9
	2	1
	2.	19
	6.	3, 24
	8, 10	22
	9.	24
	12.	28
	3	3.
	5.	50
	6.	51
	8.	71, 71
	9.	133
	4	7.
	8.	25, 28
	4.	68
	5.	73
	7.	24
	13.	78
5	9, 10	41

PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§
40 6.	95, 132 R 2	59 17.	25	81 9	134
41 3.	128 R 2	60 5.	29 <sup>e</sup>	14	131, 134
7.	130 <i>b</i>	10.	23	83 5	101
42 2.	143	11.	41 R 2	6	71 R 2
4.	91 R 1, 96 R 5	12.	51 R 5	10	101 R <i>d</i>
5.	65 R 5, 73 R 4	13.	130	15	143
6, 12	51 R 4	61 8.	65 R 4	19	109 R 3
6, 7, 12	p. 143 <i>n.</i>	62 4.	32 R 2, 99 R 1	84 4	40 <sup>c</sup>
43 1.	128 R 1	5.	116 R 1	85 9	136 R 1
5.	p. 143 <i>n.</i>	10.	34 R 3, 132 R 2	14	65 R 6
44 3.	109 R 3	63 7.	17 R 2	87 3	109
5.	106 R 2	64 6.	146 R 1	5	106 R 2
10, 11	51 R 5	7.	27	88 5	101 R <i>d</i> , 140
19.	128 R 6	8-10	49 <sup>b</sup>	6	98 R 1
21.	130 <i>b</i> , 131 R 1	9.	116 R 1	8	77
45 8.	77	65 4.	17 R 3	9	17 R 2
9.	29 <sup>e</sup>	5.	25, 32 R 5, 141	11	83 R 4, 141 R 3
12.	136 R 1	66 6.	65 R 5	89 28	91 R 4
13.	34	9.	19 R 2	40	101
14.	28 R 3	10.	91 R 3	48, 51	1 R 1
46 3.	91 R 2	17.	109 R 2	51	32 R 1
4.	132 R 2	67 3.	96 R 5	90 2	145
5.	17 R 2, 32 R 5	68 5.	101 R <i>a</i>	3	65 R 6
7.	45 R 2	10.	136 R 1	15	25
47 4.	65 R 6	15.	65 R 6, 109	91 6	68
48 6, 11	151, 151 R 1	16.	34 R 6	14	59
49 4.	17 R 2	22.	28 R 3	92 9	29 <sup>e</sup> , 69 R 1
7.	99	69 5.	29 R 4	11	19 R 4
8.	86 <i>b</i>	10.	23	12	32 R 2
8-10	65 <sup>c</sup>	11.	109 R 3	94 9	126 R 2
11.	118	15.	62, 65 R 3	17	73, 131
13.	22 R 2, 143	22.	51 R 5	22, 23	49 <sup>b</sup>
14.	143	31.	45 R 2	95 7	134
15.	94	71 21.	63 R 2	8	101 R <i>d</i>
50 3.	109, 128 R 2	72 13, 16	65 R 6	10	22 R 3, 50 <sup>a</sup>
5.	101 R <i>d</i>	19.	81 R 2	11	150
10.	22 R 3	73 2.	116	96 4	97 R 1
16.	50 <sup>a</sup>	10.	32 R 5	97 1	39 R 1
18.	130 <i>b</i>	13.	71 R 2	99 6	101 R <i>a</i>
20.	83, 141 R 3	15.	131 R 1	101 3	91 R 3
21.	86 R 3, 146 R 1	17.	45, 65 R 5	5	22 R 3
51 3.	28	27.	98 R 1, 101	102 5	101 R <i>c</i>
4.	83	28.	91 R 3, 116 R 3	9	98 R 1
6.	149 R 3	74 7.	101	14	83, 141 R 3
14.	75	11.	136 R 1	28	106 R 2
18.	65 <sup>e</sup>	15.	32 R 5	103 5	116
52 5.	34 R 2	23.	98 R 1	14	100 R 7
9.	45 R 3, 50 <sup>a</sup> , 51 R 4	75 3.	71 R 2	104 6	78 R 2
53 6.	98 R 1	76 6.	67 R 2	6-8	45 R 2
54 6.	101 R <i>a</i>	7.	136	14, 15	96
55 3.	65 R 5	8.	97 R 1, 145	15	75
7.	65 <sup>b</sup> , 65 R 4	11.	17 R 2	16	34 R 6
9.	69 R 2	77 4, 7	65 R 5	18	32 R 2
13.	65 <sup>c</sup>	78 6.	44 R 3	20	22 R 3, 65 R 6,
18.	51 R 4, 65 R 5	9.	28 R 6		132 <sup>b</sup>
19.	101	15, 26, 49, 50.	51 R 5	21	96 R 4
22.	29 <sup>e</sup>	17, 20	45 R 2	22, 27-30	132 R 2
56 3.	71 R 2	49.	32 R 5	25	6 R 1
4, 10	25	79 10.	99	32	51 R 4, 51 R 6
57 5.	65 R 5, 98 R 1	80 5.	41 R 2	33	3 R 1
7.	41 R 5	9.	45 R 2	106 13	83
58 2.	71 R 2	11.	34 R 6, 80	14	67 <sup>b</sup>
5.	65 R 6, 143	15.	6 R 1	18	51 R 5
9.	71 R 1	81 6.	25, 144	23, 26, 27	91 R 4
59 16.	50 <sup>b</sup> , 130 R 4	7, 8	51 R 5	43	44 R 1



PSALMS	§§	PSALMS	§§	PROVERBS	§§
107	6, 13	134	2	8	6
	26-29	135	17		22, 25
	29	136	4-7		30
108	2, 7		19, 20		32
109	2	137	3	11	9
	3		8		12
	4		8, 9		10
	7	138	3		4
	19	139	8, 9		25
	24		11		132
	28		12		26
110	2		13		34
	3		14		51
111	7		18		71
	8		19		132
114	3		22		134
	8		22		67 <sup>b</sup>
115	7	140	9		65
	8		12		24
116	5	141	5		128
	14, 15, 18		10		132
	15	142	4		116
118	8, 9	143	7		65
	11	144	2		144
	19		3		51
	20		13		115
119	5	146	2		3
	11, 80		4		132
	17	147	5		101
	21		18		116
	41, 77	148	13		132 <sup>b</sup>
	62	149	2		22
	72		6		16
	75, 78, 86				139
	86				3
	92				5
	103				12
	136				13
	137, 155				20
120	5				18
	7				3
	121				9
	123				10, 17
	4				13, 22
124	1, 2				19
	3				8
	4				25
125	1				20
	4				3
	5				7
126	6				10
127	1				13
	2				21
128	5				3, 9
129	3				33
	6				91
	8				28
130	1				81
	2				8
131	2				16
132	1				19
	5				22
	11, 12				29
	15, 16, 18				7
133	1				11
					13
					19
					22
					13
					5
					24
					86
					21
					8
					24
					15
					25
					24
					8
					14
					145
					29 <sup>e</sup>
					25
					108
					130
					44 <sup>a</sup>
					67
					132
					16
					48 <sup>d</sup>
					24
					151
					22
					24
					132
					7
					98
					116
					40 <sup>c</sup>
					116
					84
					24 <sup>a</sup>
					65
					20
					22
					32
					54 <sup>a</sup>
					116
					151
					40 <sup>b</sup>
					88
					132
					24
					48 <sup>d</sup>
					24
					54 <sup>a</sup>
					132
					48 <sup>d</sup>
					94
					108
					101
					145
					29
					64
					91
					28
					81
					84
					24
					49 <sup>a</sup>
					40 <sup>c</sup>
					1
					29 <sup>e</sup>
					71
					24
					86
					24
					1
					65
					24

PROVERBS	§§	JOB	§§	JOB	§§
24 11.	134	4 11.	51 R 5	12 3.	100 R 3
23.	84	15, 16	14, 45 R 2	7.	116
27, 33, 34	57 R 1	19.	81	9.	41 R 2
31.	80	20.	73 R 5	11.	151
32.	107 R 1	5 7.	24 R 3, 151	17.	70 a, 71 R 1
25 3, 20, 25	151	11.	51 R 5, 69 R 2	18, 22-25	49 a
4.	50 b	15, 16.	49 b	24.	128 R 3
4, 5 84, 88 R 2, 132 R 2	73	20, 23.	41 b	13 5.	65 b, 135
17.	24 R 3	22.	60 R 2, 128 R 2	7.	126 R 1
24.	93	24.	29 e	13.	8
26 2.	151	6 2.	108 R 2, 134	19.	131 R 2, 144 R 1
7, 8, 14	108 R 3, 132 R 2	3.	17 R 2	27.	65 R 6
12.	143	4.	73 R 4	14 1.	98 b
17.	99 R 1	8.	135, 135 R 3	2.	49 a
18.	132 R 2	9.	83	4, 13.	135 R 3
26.	65 R 3	9, 10.	65 b	10.	51 R 4
27 2.	116 R 1	10.	3 R 2	11.	151
16.	116 R 1	11.	150	19.	116
28 1.	116 R 1, 139	12, 28.	122	22.	p. 143 n.
20.	17 R 2	13.	126 R 2	15 3.	101
21.	84	17.	45 R 2, 109 R 1	7.	45 R 1, 71 R 1
29 1, 8	24 R 3	21.	51 R 4	10.	24 R 5
21.	132 R 2	25.	84	16.	97 R 1
30 3.	16, 128 R 6	27.	73 R 5	21.	69 R 4
15, 24, 29	106 R 2	7 2.	44 R 3, 143	33.	65 R 6
25.	128 R 1	3.	108 R 2	16 3.	126 R 1
28	108 R 3	4.	130 b	4.	131
31 1.	29 R 1	9.	40 c, 49 a	8.	141 R 3
9.	71 R 2	12.	150	9, 10.	73 R 6
29.	32 R 1	13.	101 R a	16.	116 R 4
		14.	81	17.	101 R d
		17.	43 b, 51 R 4	20, 21.	65 b
		20.	101 R d, 132 R 2	17 1.	17 R 3
		8 3.	124	2.	65 R 6
		4.	130 b	18 7.	24 R 2
		6.	131 R 2	9, 12.	65 R 6
		8.	73 R 5	14, 15	109, 109 R 2
		9.	29 e	19 3.	6 R 2, 83
		12.	44 R 3	4.	132 R 2
		19.	115	7.	81 R 4
		9 2.	7 b, 118	18.	65 R 5, 130 R 4
		4.	24 d, 48 b, 73 R 5		132 R 2
		5.	139	19.	6 R 3
		11-13	44 a	23.	21 e, 135 R 3
		15, 16	130 b	25.	70 a, 71 R 1, 146 R 3
		19.	117	26.	101 R c, 108 R 2
		26.	44 R 3, 101 R d	28.	146 R 1
		27.	96 R 3	20 4.	96 R 5
		29.	43 b	11.	116
		32, 33	65 c, 65 R 4	14.	130 R 4
		10 1.	p. 143 n.	17.	28 R 6, 61, 128 R 2
		7.	101 R d	23, 26, 28	65 R 6
		8.	51 R 4	26.	113
		14.	130 b, 131 R 1	21 5.	22 R 3
		16.	83	7.	71
		16, 17	65 R 6	9.	101 R c
		22.	51 R 4, 128 R 3	16.	41 R 5
		11 2.	24 R 3	21.	116 R 2, 145 R 1
		5.	135 R 3	22.	105
		6.	65 d, 73 R 7	34.	71 R 2
		13.	130 b	22 3.	124
		15.	101 R c, 131 R 2	12.	69 R 1
		16.	41 R 3, 143	17.	146 R 1
		17.	34 R 3, 63 R 1, 109	21.	14 R 2
		12 2.	118	28.	65 b, 65 R 6

JOB	§§	JOB	§§	RUTH	§§
22 30 . . . . .	128 R 3	37 7 . . . . .	91 R 2	3 9 . . . . .	57 R 1
23 3 . . . . .	135 R 3	38 12 . . . . .	1 R 1	11 . . . . .	24 R 3
3-5 . . . . .	65 <sup>b</sup>	24 . . . . .	65 R 6	15 . . . . .	37 R 4
9-11 . . . . .	65 R 6	26 . . . . .	128 R 3, 143	18 . . . . .	154
10, 13 . . . . .	132 R 2	28, 31, 32 . . . . .	126 R 1	4 1 . . . . .	11 R c
13 . . . . .	48 d, 101 R	35 . . . . .	126 R 4	3 . . . . .	22 R 4, 41
17 . . . . .	11 c	39 25 . . . . .	117	15 . . . . .	9 R 2
24 2, 11 . . . . .	49 a	26 . . . . .	65 R 6		
5 . . . . .	28 R 1, 70 a	40 2 . . . . .	88 R 2, 88 R 5	LAMENTATIONS	
10 . . . . .	70 a, 71 R 1	8 . . . . .	123 R 1	1 1 . . . . .	24 d, 117
14 . . . . .	65 R 6, 83, 141 R 3	9 . . . . .	65 R 6	4 . . . . .	109
22 . . . . .	159	10 . . . . .	73 R 3	5, 9 . . . . .	71 R 2
25 . . . . .	65 R 6	19 . . . . .	65 R 6, 98 c	8 . . . . .	67 b
25 2 . . . . .	84, 84 R 1	41 3 . . . . .	65 d	10 . . . . .	1 R 1, 28 R 5, 41 R 3,
5 . . . . .	101 R b	42 12 . . . . .	37 d	8 . . . . .	83 R 1, 98 R 1
26 2 . . . . .	128 R 1			11, 19 . . . . .	65 R 1
4 . . . . .	78 R 8	SONG		14 . . . . .	144
7 . . . . .	8	1 1 . . . . .	34 R 4	17 . . . . .	73 R 6
27 2 . . . . .	119	3 . . . . .	143	18 . . . . .	106 R 2
3 . . . . .	28 R 3	6 . . . . .	28 R 5	21 . . . . .	41 R 5
5 . . . . .	117 R 1	9 . . . . .	17 R 6	2 13 . . . . .	20 R 4, 65 d
6 . . . . .	1 R 1, 101 R c	11, 13, 14 . . . . .	20 R 2	16 . . . . .	41 R 4
8, 22 . . . . .	65 R 6	2 7 . . . . .	40 b	20 . . . . .	122
12 . . . . .	67 b, 86 R 3	13 . . . . .	20 R 2	22 . . . . .	58 a
19 . . . . .	71 R 1	14 . . . . .	75	3 1 . . . . .	143
28 5 . . . . .	101 R d	3 2 . . . . .	65 R 5	2 . . . . .	75
8 . . . . .	24 R 3	3 . . . . .	121	15 . . . . .	75, 78 R 5
25 . . . . .	51 R 5	7 . . . . .	29 R 7	20 . . . . .	p. 143 n.
29 2 . . . . .	101 R d, 135 R 3	10 . . . . .	78 R 2	26 . . . . .	136 R 1
3 . . . . .	73 R 1	4 2 . . . . .	1 R 3	27 . . . . .	146
10 . . . . .	116 R 2	3 . . . . .	20 R 2	41 . . . . .	101 R b
12 . . . . .	100 R 3	9 . . . . .	35 R 1	44 . . . . .	28 R 5
24 . . . . .	141 R 3	11 . . . . .	73 R 2	45 . . . . .	84 R 1
30 1 . . . . .	24 R 5	16 . . . . .	64	48 . . . . .	73 R 2
6 . . . . .	34, 94	5 2 . . . . .	65 R 5	50 . . . . .	65 R 5
16 . . . . .	p. 143 n.	3 . . . . .	73	56 . . . . .	41 R 5
25 . . . . .	22 R 3	5 . . . . .	107 R 1	4 14 . . . . .	83
28 . . . . .	141 R 3	8 . . . . .	24 d	5 6 . . . . .	69 R 2
31 5, 9 . . . . .	130 b	9 . . . . .	8 R 2, 55 c	10 . . . . .	116 R 6
11 . . . . .	1 R 2	6 8, 9 . . . . .	1 R 3, 106 R 2		
15 . . . . .	98 c	9 . . . . .	113	ECCLESIASTES	
18 . . . . .	73 R 4	7 3 . . . . .	128 R 2	1 2 . . . . .	34 R 4
31, 35 . . . . .	135 R 3	8 . . . . .	6 R 1	9 . . . . .	8
34 . . . . .	141 R 3	10 . . . . .	32 R 2, 32 R 5	13 . . . . .	32 R 5
32 3 . . . . .	48 a	13 . . . . .	101, 125	16 . . . . .	107 R 1
4 . . . . .	24 R 5	8 1 . . . . .	28 R 5, 132 R 2	17 . . . . .	106 R 2
13 . . . . .	127 c	4 . . . . .	8 R 3	2 1, 11, 15 . . . . .	107 R 1
22 . . . . .	83 R 1	5 . . . . .	144	16 . . . . .	101 R d
33 11 . . . . .	65 R 6	6 . . . . .	34 R 6	19 . . . . .	126 R 1
21 . . . . .	65 R 6	RUTH		3 2 . . . . .	96 R 5
27 . . . . .	32 R 5, 65 R 6	1 1 . . . . .	136 R 1	14 . . . . .	95
34 8 . . . . .	96 R 4	4 . . . . .	38 R 1	15 . . . . .	94
29 . . . . .	65 R 6, 136	9 . . . . .	65 d	4 1, 2 . . . . .	88 R 1
31 . . . . .	110	12 . . . . .	34 R 2, 130 b	3 . . . . .	88 R 5
32 . . . . .	144	13 . . . . .	109	5 4 . . . . .	72 R 4
37 . . . . .	65 R 6	17 . . . . .	120 R 4	5 . . . . .	126 R 5
35 3, 14 . . . . .	146 R 1	21 . . . . .	70 a, 138 c	15 . . . . .	28 R 3
10 . . . . .	16	22 . . . . .	22 R 4	6 10 . . . . .	146
15 . . . . .	128 R 3	2 3 . . . . .	28 R 5	7 12 . . . . .	24 R 3
36 4 . . . . .	17 R 2	7 . . . . .	55 a, 69 a, 145	25 . . . . .	78 R 6
7 . . . . .	49 b	16 . . . . .	86 R 3	26 . . . . .	9 R 2, 22 c
9 . . . . .	50 b	17 . . . . .	29 d	8 2 . . . . .	136 R 1
14, 15 . . . . .	65 R 6	21 . . . . .	28 R 5, 41 c	10 . . . . .	32 R 5
37 4, 5 . . . . .	65 R 6	3 8, 14 . . . . .	69 a	9 1 . . . . .	96 R 4, 146
5 . . . . .	71 R 2				



2 CHRONICLES	§§	2 CHRONICLES	§§	2 CHRONICLES	§§
1 4 . . .	22 R 4	9 21 . . .	44 <sup>b</sup>	23 1 . . .	73 R 7
10 . . .	32 R 3	28 . . .	108	25 16 . . .	108, 126 R 5
2 12 . . .	73 R 7	10 8 . . .	116 R 1	20 . . .	22 R 3
13, 14 . . .	22 <sup>d</sup>	11 12 . . .	29 R 8	26 13 . . .	17
3 4-9 . . .	78 R 2	16 9 . . .	113, 144, 144 R 5	27 7 . . .	123 R 2
4 10 . . .	32 R 5	11 . . .	123 R 2	28 9 . . .	101 R 6
13 . . .	29 <sup>c</sup>	12 . . .	71 R 3	20 . . .	73 R 4
5 11 . . .	95	17 12 . . .	86 R 4	29 27 . . .	25, 136 R 1
7 17 . . .	96 R 4	14 . . .	116 R 6	36 . . .	22 R 4
18 . . .	73 R 5	18 3 . . .	151 R 2	30 10 . . .	100 R 2
8 11 . . .	28 R 5	19 5 . . .	29 R 8	19 . . .	144 R 5
13 . . .	96 R 4	20 6 . . .	95, 106 R 2	31 7, 10 . . .	111 R 2
16 . . .	20 R 4	15 . . .	155	32 32 . . .	123 R 2
18 . . .	29 R 3	17 . . .	95	33 20 . . .	69 R 1
9 9, 13 . . .	29 R 3	22 . . .	144 R 5	34 22 . . .	144 R 5
20 . . .	128	22 6 . . .	44 R 2	36 16 . . .	100 R 2

## CORRECTIONS IN INDEX OF PASSAGES

Ex. 10 7 *read* 11 7.

32 12 " 33 12.

Jud. 9 4, 5 " 9 45.

1 K. 12 19 " 12 9.

Is. 3 1 *add* 17 R 5, and *delete* ref. Is. 35.

14 21 *read* 14 24.

52 12, 13 " 51 12, 13.

Job 4 19 " 4 9.

1 Chr. 28 19 " 2 Chr. 28 19.

*Delete* references Numb. 27 24, Deut. 4 17, Song 2 13.

# INDEX OF SUBJECTS

(*Figures refer to §§.*)

- ABSOLUTE object, 67.  
 Abstract ideas, expressed by *fem.*, 14; by *plur.*, 16.  
 Accentuation of p̄tcp. with Art. 22 R 4; error in, 141 R 1.  
 Accusative, idea of, 66; kinds of, 66; acc. of absolute obj., 67; cognate acc., 67, in plur., 67 R 2; organ of expression as cog. acc., 67 R 3; acc. of time, 68; of place, 69, 69 R 1, 69 R 2; acc. of condition, 70; adverbial acc., 70, 71 R 2; acc. of specification, 71, 71 R 3; of motive, 71 R 4; acc. of direct obj., 72; verbs governing obj., 73; verbs with two acc. of obj., 74-77; acc. of product, 76; predicate acc., 76, 78 R 6; two acc. of different kinds, 78; acc. after pass. 79 seq. *Nota acc.* rare in poetry, 72; cases where use necessary, 72 R 1; rare except with acc. of obj., 72 R 3; apparent anomalous use, 72 R 4.  
 Active infin. for pass., 96 R 5.  
 Addition, idea of, expressed by prep., 101 R b, 101 R d.  
 Adjective, placed exceptionally before noun, 30 R 1; concord of, 30; with dual, 31; with plur. of Eminence, 31, 116 R 4; with collectives, 31, 115; determination of adj., 30, 32 R 2, demons. adj., 32, 32 R 3; adj. used nominally, 32 R 5, 28 R 3; the epithet used instead of noun, 32 R 6; adj. little developed in early Shemitic, 24, 102. *See* Comparison.  
 Adverb, 70 b; follows verb, except negatives, 110; adverbial use of inf. abs., 87; adverbial idea expressed by a verb, 82; some adv. of time, 145 R 3.  
 Adversative Sent., 155.  
 Affirmative Sent., 118; the oath, 119.  
 Agreement of subj. and pred., 112; simple subj., 113; dual subj., 113; composite subj., 114; when consisting of noun and pron., 114; when of different genders, 114. Agreement of collectives, 115; of plur. of Eminence, 31, 116 R 4; of *plur. inhumanus*, 116; anomalies in agreement, 116 R 1, 116 R 3, 116 R 6; agreement with gen., 116 R 2; names of nations, 116 R 5.  
 Answer, in interrog. sent., 126.  
 Anticipative pron. resumed by noun (permutative), 29 R 7.  
 Apposition, nominal, 29 seq.; repetition of prep., &c., before proper name, 29, 29 R 2; some apparent cases may be acc. of specification, &c., 29 R 4, and others due to errors of text, 29 R 5; the word *all* in appos., 29 R 6; appos. (permutative) to pron., 29 R 7; various senses of same word repeated in appos., 29 R 8; words in appos. as double acc. of obj., 76.  
 Article, 19 seq.; numeral *one* for indef. Art., 19 R 1; pred. and inf. without Art., 19; Art. not used with words determinate in themselves or by consn., 20; exceptions to this rule, 20 R 4; Art. with vocative, 21; with classes and in comparisons, 22, 22 R 2; omitted in poetry, 22 R 3; used as Rel., 22 R 4; with p̄tcp., 22 R 4, 99.  
 Attributive (Adj.) circumscribed by gen. of noun, 24; especially with the words *man, woman*, &c., 24 R 3, and in neg. clauses, 128 R 3, 128 R 5; by perf., 41 R 3, and impf., 44 R 3.  
*Beth essentia*, 101 R a.  
 CARDINAL Numbers, 35 seq.  
 Cases, 18.  
*Casus pendens*, 106.  
 Causal Sent., 147; causal sense of prep., 101 R c, 147 R 1.  
 Circumscription of Gen. by prep., 28 R 5.  
 Circumstantial Clause, 137 seq.; order of words in, 137; p̄tcp. greatly used, 138; circumstance placed parallel to main action, 141; use of impf. in cir. cl., 44 R 3, 141 R 3.  
 Cognate acc., 67. *See* Acc.

- Cohortative, occasionally in 3rd pers., 63 R 1; use of, 62; with light vav, 65; anomalous ooh. forms, 65 R 5; with strong vav, 51 R 7.
- Collectives, used for plur., 17; concord of, 115.
- Comparative Sent., 151.
- Comparison of adj., 33 seq.; *tertium compar.* expressed by verb, 33, sometimes unexpressed, 33 R 3; superlative, 34; expressed by noun with its gen. pl., 34 R 4; by abstract noun with gen., 34 R 5; by use of divine name, 34 R 6; by adj. and gen., 32 R 5.
- Complement of verbal sent. 110; order of words in sent., 111.
- Compound Sent., 106.
- Condition, acc. of, 70; chiefly adj. or ptcp., occasionally noun, 71 R 1.
- Conditional Sent., 129; cond. particles, 129; protasis strengthened by inf. abs., 130 R 3; hypothetical sent., 131; idiomatic cond. sent. with two vav perf., 132; with two imper., 132; without conditional particles, 132 R 2.
- Conjunctive Sent., 136; exegetical use of *and*, 136 R c; use of *and* to express informal consequence or conclusion, 136 R d; in letters, 136 R d.
- Co-ordination of verbal ideas for subordination, 83, 51, 51 R 1; of clauses in interrog. sent., 126 R 4; in obj. sent., 146 R 4.
- Copula, logical, unexpressed in nominal sent., 104; 3 pers. pron. as copula, 106 *in fin.*; regulated as to gen. and numb. by subj., 106 R 2.
- Consequential Sent., 150.
- Construct, 18; before adverbs, &c., 24 R 4; before a clause, 25; before prepp., 28 R 1; before vav cop., 28 R 1; apparent separation from gen., 28 R 3; attraction of noun in appos. into cons., 28 R 6; Art. anomalously with cons., 20 R 4.
- Conversive Tenses, 46 seq.
- DATES, expression of, 38.
- Dative, expressed by prep. *to*, 101 R b; *dat. commodi*, 101 R b; ethical *dat.*, 101 R b.
- Demonstrative pron., 4; adj., 32, 32 R 3.
- Determination of noun, *see* Art.; of adj., 30; of noun with numerals, 37 *in fin.*; of numerals, 37 R 5.
- Disjunctive Sent., 152.
- Distributive Numerals, 38 R 4.
- Dual, concord of, with adj. and verb, 31, 113; of numeral as multiplicative, 38 R 5.
- ELEGY, how raised, 117.
- Ellipse of pronom. obj., 73 R 5; of pron. subj. and obj. to inf. cons., 91 R 1; of pron. subj. to ptcp., 100; of obj. of verb by brachylogy, 73 R 5.
- Eminence, plur. of, 116; concord of, 31, 116 R 4.
- Emphasis on subj. expressed by *casus pendens*, 106; shown by expression of pron. in verbal sent., 107, 107 R 1; expressed by repetition of word, 29 R 8.
- Equation, vav of, 151.
- Ethical Dative, 101 R b.
- Exceptive Sent., 154.
- Exclamation. *See* Interjec. Sent.
- FEMININE, of living creatures, 12; classes of inanimate things, 13; abstracts and collect., *nomen unitatis*, 14; for *neut.* of other languages, 14 R 2, 1 R 2, 109 R 2.
- Final Sent., 148.
- Fractions, how expressed, 38 R 6.
- Future, expressed by impf., 43; fut. perf. by perf., 41.
- GENDER, 1 seq.; mas. pron. for fem., 1 R 3.
- Genitive, 23 seq., *see* Construct; gen. of subj. and obj., 23 R 1; of *respect* usual with adj. and ptcp., 24 R 5; gen. of proper names, 24 R 6; clause as gen., 25; circumscription of gen., 28 R 5.
- Government of Verb, 66 seq. *See* Acc.
- HE local, used in enfeebled sense, 69 R 2.
- Hypothetical Sent., 131.
- IMPERATIVE, 60; not used with neg., 60; lengthened imper., 60 R 1; as strong fut., 60 R 2; plur. imper. in poetry, 60 R 3; imper. with light vav, 64.
- Imperfect, 42 seq.; as fut., 43; in dependent actions, 43; as subjunct. after telic particles, 43; as frequentative, 44; use in attributive clauses, 44 R 3; impf. in single actions, 45; in interrogation, 45 R 1; in poetry, 45 R 2, 51 R 5; interchange of perf. and impf., 45 R 3; impf. as imper., 45 R 4.
- Imperf. with strong vav, vav impf., 47 seq.; continues perf. in its various uses, 48; pointing of vav impf. with light vav, 51 R 6. Imperf. with light vav, 59.
- Impersonal consn., 109.
- Indefinite Pron., 8.
- Indefinite subj., *one, they*, expressed by 3 sing. and 3 plur. of verb, 108; real subj. the ptcp., 108 R 1; by ptcp. in pl., rarely sing., 108; by 2nd pers. in phrase *as thou comest to*, 108 R 3; indef. consn. in later style for pass., 108 R 2.
- Infinitive, abstract noun of verb, 84; infin. abs., 84; as absolute obj., 67; uses of inf. abs., 85; with its own verb, 86, 86 R 2; adverbial use, 87; use instead of fin. verb, 88; continued by fin. vb., 88 R 3; subj. expressed with inf. abs., 88 R 5; infin. abs. in these uses in *acc.*, 88 R 6.
- Infinitive cons., 89; does not admit Art., 19; its consn., 90; governs as its own

- verb, 91; order of inf., subj. and obj., 91; omission of pron., subj. and obj., 91 R 1; subj. in gen., or nom., 91, 91 R 2; obj. when noun or pron. in acc., 91 R 3, 91 R 4; adverbial (gerundial) use, 93; use as gerundive and periphrastic fut., 94; with neg., 95; continued by finite tense, 96, 96 R 2; later use for finite form, 96 R 3, 96 R 4; act. inf. for pass., 96 R 5.
- Interjectional Sent., 117; elliptical, 117 R 3.
- Interrogative Pron., 7; particles, 125 R 6.
- Interrogative Sent., without particles, 121; particle at head of clause, 122; disjunctive question, 124; oblique question, 125; answer, 126; accumulation of interrog. particles, 126 R 2; co-ordination of clauses, 126 R 4; question used in remonstrance, &c., 126 R 5, R 6.
- JUSSIVE, used occasionally in 1st pers., 63 R 1; in 2nd pers. with neg., 63 R 2; use of juss., 63; anomalous use, 65 R 6; juss. with light vav, 65; with neg. often merely subjective fut., 128 R 2.
- Kaph* when repeated in comparisons, 151 R 2; cf. p. 143.
- Ki* recitativum, 146 R 2.
- MATERIAL, acc. of, 76.
- Moods, 60 seq.; moods with light vav, 64 seq.
- Multiplicatives, 38 R 5.
- NEGATIVE Sent., with fin. verb, 127; with imper., 60; with infin., 95; with ptc., 100; negative particles, 127; double neg., 128; neg. extends to following clause, 128 R 6; neg. as privative, 128 R 1; poetical forms of neg., 128 R 5.
- Neuter, supplied by fem., 14 R 2, 109 R 2.
- Nomen unitatis*, 14.
- Nominal Sent., 103.
- Nota acc.* See Acc.
- Noun as pred. in Nom. Sent., 29 *in fin.*, 102.
- Number. See Plur., 15 seq.
- Numerals, 35; Cardinals, 35 seq.; Ordinals, 38 seq.; Distributives, 38 R 4; Multiplicatives, 38 R 5; Fractions, 38 R 6; rules for prose composition, 38 *Obs.*
- OATH, 119; of denial and affirmation, 120.
- Object, acc. of, 72; verbs governing, 73; pronom. obj. omitted, 73 R 5; obj. regarded as means of realizing the action, 73 R 6; prep. *to* conveys action to obj., 73 R 7; double obj., 74 seq.
- Object Sent., 146.
- Optative Sent., 133; *wish* expressed by
- impf., imper., ptc., 133; by *who?* with verb, esp. *who will give?* 135; consn. of this phrase, 135 R 3.
- Oratio obliqua*, 146 R 1.
- Ordinal Numbers, 38 seq.
- PARTICIPLE, 97; act. ptc. as noun, and pass. as adj., 97 R 1, 99; consn. of ptc., 98, in poetry, 98 R 1; ptc. with Art. as rel. clause, 99; restrictions to this use, 99 R 1; place of ptc. in sent., 100; pron. subj. omitted, 100; neg. of ptc., 100, 100 R 3; continued by fin. vb., 100, 100 R 4; much used in description, 100, 138; time of ptc., 100, 100 R 1; joined with verb *to be* to express duration, 100 R 2; governs obj. by prep. *to*, 100 R 5; in later style used as fin. verb, 100 R 6.
- Passive, expresses an action the agent of which is not named, 79; hence governs acc., 79, 81 R 3; connected with agent by prep., 81; the nearer of two acc. becomes subj., 80, rarely the more remote, 81 R 1; impersonal use, 81 R 3, 109; act. inf. for pass., 96 R 5.
- Perfect, 39 seq.; in stative verbs, 40; in verbs of speaking, 40; perf. of experience, 40; of confidence, 41; prophetic perf., 41, 41 R 1; perf. in questions, 41 R 2; in attributive clause, 41 R 3; precative perf., 41 R 5.
- Perf. with strong vav, 52 seq.; in continuance of impf., 53 seq.; as frequentative, 54, 54 R 1; in continuance of imper., coh., juss., inf., ptc., 55; in apodosis of temporal, causal and conditional sent., 56, 57 R 1. Perf. with vav copulative in narration, later usage, 58.
- Pluperfect, expressed by Perf., 39; by vav impf., 48, 48 R 2.
- Plural, of compound expressions, 15; in things composed of parts, abstracts, 16; of Eminence, 16; expressed by collectives, 17; used to express the idea generally, 17 R 3; referred to as collect. unity by sing. pron., 116 R 1. See Agreement.
- Potential, expressed by Impf., 42, 43.
- Precative Perf., 41 R 5.
- Predicate, without Art., 19; stands after subj. in Nom. Sent., 103; before subj. when simple adj., and in dependent sentences, 104; precedes subj. in Verbal Sent., 105, unless subj. be emphatic, 105, as in Circ. Cl., 105, and where connexion of narrative is broken, 105, 105 R 1. Pred. coextensive with subj., 109 R 3, 99 R 3. See Agreement.
- Pregnant Construction, 101.
- Prepositions, 101; uses, 101 R 1; compound prepp. in later style, 101 R c.
- Present tense, expressed by impf., 42; by perf. in stative verbs, 40; of freq. actions by impf., 44; of single actions



- by ptc. in prose, 45, by impf. in poetry, 45 R 3.
- Privative use of prep., 101 R c; of negatives, 128 R 1.
- Product, acc. of, 76.
- Pronouns, 1 seq.; expression of pers. pron. gives emphasis to suff., 1, and to subj. in verbal sent., 107; demons. pron. used in appos. to noun, 6 R 1, always when noun has suff., 32, 32 R 3; demons. used to give vividness in questions, 6 R 2, 7, 125 R 6; used as Rel., 6 R 3. Reflexive pron., how expressed, 11; pronominal ideas expressed by nouns, 11 R 1; pron. as copula in Nom. Sent., 106 end; anticipative pron., 29 R 7.
- Prophetic Perf., 41, 41 R 1.
- Purpose Sent., 148.
- REFLEXIVE PRON., how expressed, 11.
- Relative Pron., 9; Art as Rel., 22 R 4.
- Relative Sent., 142; Eng. rel. sent. often descriptive sent. in Heb., 142; omission of so-called rel. pron. in rel. sent., 143, 144.
- Repetition of same word in various senses, 29 R 8.
- Restrictive Sent., 153.
- SECUTION of perf. by vav impf., 48 seq.; of impf. by vav perf., 52 seq.; of impf. after *then*, &c., 51 R 2; of fut. perf., proph. perf., and perf. of confidence, 51 R 2.
- Sentence, the, 102; nominal, 103; verbal, 105; compound, 106; order of words in sent., 111; kinds of sent., 117 seq.
- Singular, used for pl., in such words as *hand, head*, &c., 17 R 4; used distributively in ref. to a plur., 116 R 1.
- Style, point of, to vary order of words, 105 R 2, 111 R 3; later style, 9 R 2, 22 R 4, 29 R 1, 7, 8; 36, 36 R 2, 37 R 3, 4; 58, 65 R 6, 69 R 2, 73 R 7, 81 R 3, 88, 88 R 1, 96 R 3, 4; 100 R 2, 100 R 6, 101 R d, 108 R 2.
- Subject, place in Nom. Sent., 103; in Verb. Sent., 105; resumption of, in Compound Sent., 106; emphasis on, 107, 107 R 1; omission of subj. of ptc., 100; double subj., 109 R 3; indefinite subj., 108.
- Subjunctive expressed by Impf., 42.
- Subordination of words to verb by prepp., 101; of one verb to another, 82, 83; in impf., 83 R 1; in ptc., 83 R 2.
- Suffix to noun, in gen., 2; to verb, in acc. of obj., 2; occasionally indirect obj., 73 R 4; suff. to inf. often acc., 91 R 4.
- Superlative. *See* Comparison.
- TEMPORAL Sent., 145.
- Tenses, *see* Perf., Impf.; conversive tenses, 46.
- Times (once, twice, &c.), 38 R 5.
- VAV, *see* Conjunct. Sent., 136; vav explicative, 136 R 1; of informal inference, 136 R 1; of equation, 151; of concomitance, 114 *note*.
- Verb, government by. *See* Acc.
- Verbal Sent., 105.
- Vocative with Art., 21 end.













